This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

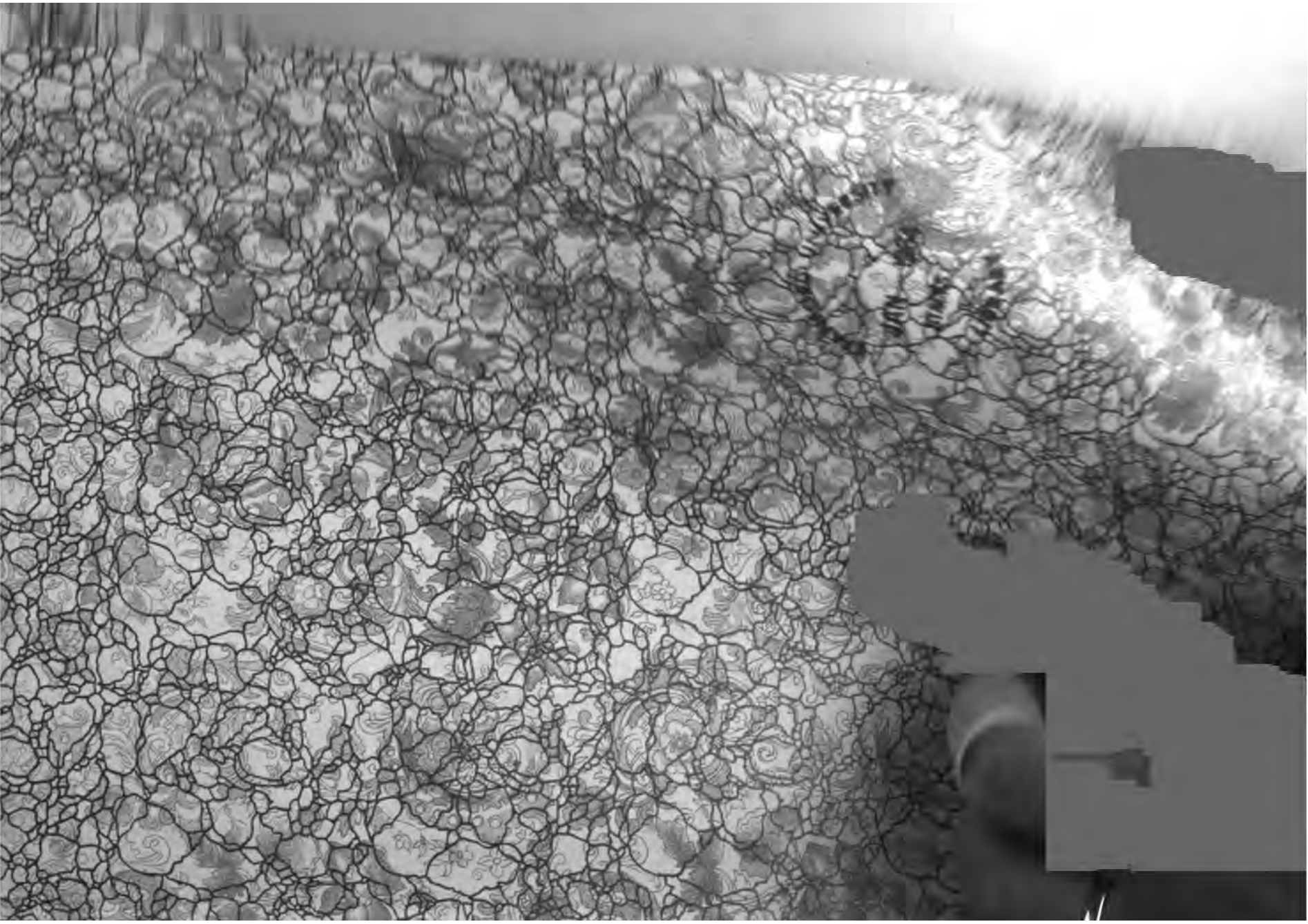
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



STANFORD UNIVERSITY
JAN 1964
STACKS
LIBRARY

HAL

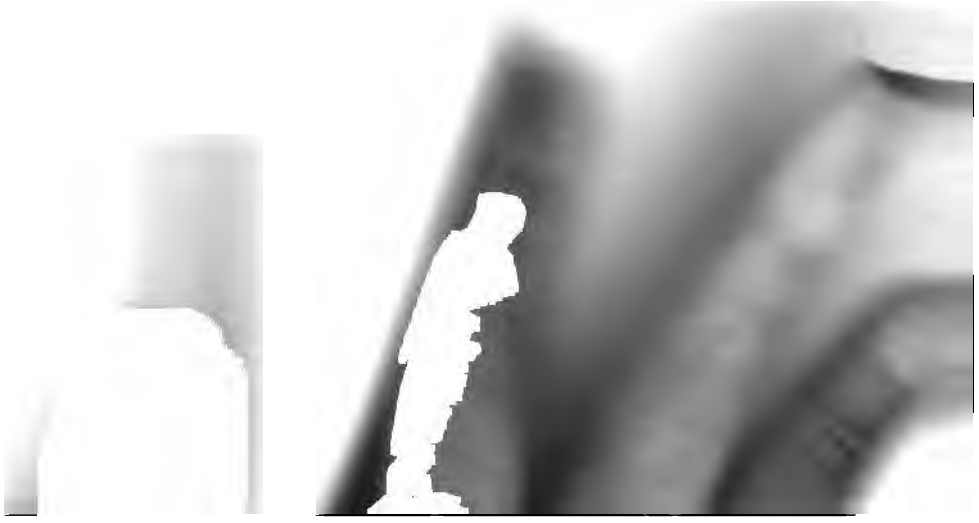


Photo by Jenks.

BONTOC MEN.

Frontispiece.

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR

ETHNOLOGICAL SURVEY PUBLICATIONS

VOLUME I

THE BONTOC IGOROT

BY

ALBERT ERNEST JENKS

MANILA
BUREAU OF PUBLIC PRINTING
1905

15228

LETTER OF TRANSMITTAL

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR,
THE ETHNOLOGICAL SURVEY,
Manila, February 3, 1904.

SIR: I have the honor to submit a study of the Bontoc Igorot made for this Survey during the year 1903. It is transmitted with the recommendation that it be published as Volume I of a series of scientific studies to be issued by The Ethnological Survey for the Philippine Islands.

Respectfully,

Albert Ernest Jenks,

Chief of The Ethnological Survey.

Hon. DEAN C. WORCESTER,
Secretary of the Interior, Manila, P. I.

CONTENTS

	Page
PREFACE	13
INTRODUCTION	17
CHAPTER I	
THE IGOROT CULTURE GROUP	23
Igorot land	23
Igorot peoples	27
CHAPTER II	
THE BONTOC CULTURE GROUP	30
Bontoc culture area	30
Marks of Bontoc culture	32
The Bontoc man	33
Introduction	33
Historical sketch	35
Somatology	39
Man	39
Woman	43
Child	45
Pathology	46
CHAPTER III	
GENERAL SOCIAL LIFE	48
The pueblo	48
Ato	49
Pabafunan and fawi	50
Olag	53
Afong	55
The family	59
Childbirth	59
Twins	60
Abortion	60
Child	61
Care of child in parents' dwelling	61
Naming	62
Circumcision	63
Amusements	64
Puberty	66
Life in olag	66
Marriage	68
Divorce	69
The widowed	70
Orphans	70
The aged	70
Sickness, disease, and remedies	71
Death and burial	74

CHAPTER IV

	Page
ECONOMIC LIFE	81
Production	81
Natural production	81
Hunting	81
Fishing	85
Vegetal production	87
Cultural production	88
Agriculture	88
Building the sementera	89
Irrigating	91
Turning the soil	93
Fertilizing	97
Seed planting	97
Transplanting	98
Cultivating	99
Protecting	100
Harvesting	103
Storing	105
Expense and profit	107
Zoöculture	107
Carabao	108
Hog	108
Chicken	109
Dog	110
Clothing production	111
Man's clothing	111
Woman's clothing	113
Implement and utensil production	114
Introduction	114
Wooden implements and utensils	115
Metal implements and utensils	116
Pottery	117
Basket work	121
Weapon production	123
Wooden weapons	124
Metal weapons	125
Pipe production and smoking	130
Fire making	133
Division of labor	134
Wages, and exchange of labor	136
Distribution	137
Theft	137
Conquest	138
Consumption	139
Foods	139
Beverages	143
Salt	145
Sugar	147
Meals and mealtime	148
Transportation	149

ECONOMIC LIFE—Continued. Page
Commerce 151
Barter 151
Sale 153
Medium of exchange 154
Measure of exchange value 155
Standard of value 156
Palay currency 156
Trade routes 156
Trade languages and traders 157
Stages of commerce 158
Property right 159
Personal property of individual 159
Personal property of group 160
Real property of individual 160
Real property of group 162
Public property 162
Sale of property 162
Rent, loan, and lease of property 163
Inheritance and bequest 164
Tribute, tax, and "rake off" 165

CHAPTER V

POLITICAL LIFE AND CONTROL 167
Crimes, detection and punishment 168

CHAPTER VI

WAR AND HEAD-HUNTING 172

CHAPTER VII

ÆSTHETIC LIFE 184
Dress 184
Decoration 187
Tattoo 187
Music 189
Instrumental music 189
Vocal music 192
Dancing 193
Games 194
Formalities 195

CHAPTER VIII

RELIGION 196
Spirit belief 196
Exorcist 198
Lumawig, the Supreme Being 200
"Changers" in religion 204
Priesthood 205
Sacred days 206
Ceremonials 207
Ceremonies connected with agriculture 207
Ceremonies connected with climate 213
Ceremonies connected with head taking 214
Ceremony connected with ato 215

Chapter IX

	Page
Mental Life	216
Actual knowledge	216
Mensuration	217
Numbers	217
Lineal measure	218
Measurement of animals	218
The calendar	218
Folk tales	221
The sun man and moon woman; or, the origin of head-hunting	221
Origin of coling, the serpent eagle	222
Origin of tilin, the rice bird	223
Origin of kaag, the monkey	223
Origin of gayyang, the crow, and fanias, the large lizard	224
Owug, the snake	225
Who took my father's head?	225

Chapter X

Language	227
Introduction	227
Alphabet	227
Linguistic inconsistencies	229
Nouns	229
Pronouns	230
Verbs	231
Comparative vocabularies	231
Bontoc vocabulary	233

ILLUSTRATIONS

		After page
Group of prominent men, Bontoc pueblo. (Frontispiece.)		
PLATE I.	Sketch map of the Philippine Archipelago	16
II.	Sketch map of northern Luzon	16
III.	Sketch map of Bontoc culture area	16
IV.	Section of Cervantes-Bontoc trail	16
V.	East side of Tilud pass	16
VI.	A glimpse of "Igorot land"	16
VII.	Balugan pueblo	16
VIII.	Pueblo of Sagada	16
IX.	Entrance to Bontoc pueblo	16
X.	Kulokulo, a man of Mayinit pueblo, bust view	16
XI.	Ogangga, a man of Samoki pueblo	16
XII.	Kulokulo, a man of Mayinit pueblo, full-length view	16
XIII.	Bongao, a man of Alap pueblo	32
XIV.	Bodada, a man of Samoki pueblo	32
XV.	Udao, a woman of Bontoc pueblo	32
XVI.	Young women of Bontoc pueblo	32
XVII.	Zagtagan, a woman of Bontoc pueblo	32
XVIII.	Kanayu, a woman of Bontoc pueblo	32
XIX.	Langsa, a woman of Bontoc pueblo	32
XX.	Sitlinin, a boy of Bontoc pueblo	32
XXI.	Pitapit, a boy of Bontoc pueblo	32
XXII.	Girls of Bontoc pueblo	32
XXIII.	Blind woman of Bontoc pueblo	32
XXIV.	Tauli, a blind man of Samoki pueblo	32
XXV.	Deformed feet of Bontoc men	48
XXVI.	Bontoc pueblo viewed from Samoki	48
XXVII.	Samoki pueblo viewed from Bontoc	48
XXVIII.	Sketch plat of Bontoc pueblo	48
XXIX.	Sketch plat of a section of ato Sipaat, Bontoc pueblo	48
XXX.	Pabafunan of ato Filig	48
XXXI.	Fawi of ato Sipaat	48
XXXII.	Fawi of ato Choko	48
XXXIII.	Olag in Bontoc pueblo	48
XXXIV.	Bontoc dwelling, the fayu	48
XXXV.	Timbers for a building seasoning in the mountains	64
XXXVI.	Fayu, showing open door	64
XXXVII.	Bontoc dwelling, the katyufong	64
XXXVIII.	"In the shade of the low projecting roof"	64
XXXIX.	A mother coming to the river for water	64
XL.	The baby tenders	64
XLI.	Somkad's death chair	64
XLII.	Pine coffins	64
XLIII.	The burial of Somkad	64
XLIV.	Bugti with his wild-cock snare	64

		After page
PLATE XLV.	Wild-cock snare set	64
XLVI.	Wild-cat caught in a snare	64
XLVII.	Bird snares	80
XLVIII.	Trap fishing	80
XLIX.	Emptying the fish trap	80
L.	Fisherman examining his obofu	80
LI.	Rice sementeras at transplanting season	80
LII.	Banawi rice sementeras	80
LIII.	A rice sementera wall	80
LIV.	Women weeding a sementera wall	80
LV.	Partial view of Bontoc irrigating works	80
LVI.	The main dam across the river at Bontoc	80
LVII.	Sketch of irrigating works	80
LVIII.	Irrigating ditch	80
LIX.	Turning the soil	80
LX.	Mud-spattered soil turners	96
LXI.	Soil turners tramping the bed soft and smooth	96
LXII.	Bontoc camote beds	96
LXIII.	Men crossing the river with fertilizer	96
LXIV.	Woman digging camotes	96
LXV.	Rice-seed beds	96
LXVI.	Women transplanting rice	96
LXVII.	Bird scarers flying over a bed of ripening rice	96
LXVIII.	An outlook to guard against wild hogs	96
LXIX.	General harvesting view	96
LXX.	Two harvesters	96
LXXI.	Camote harvest	96
LXXII.	Rice granaries	112
LXXIII.	Bunches of palay curing in the sun	112
LXXIV.	Near view of rice granaries	112
LXXV.	Carrying home the camotes	112
LXXVI.	Philippine carabao	112
LXXVII.	Bontoc pigpens	112
LXXVIII.	Chicken cage in which fowls are shut at night	112
LXXIX.	Men's hats and headband	112
LXXX.	Man's bag pocket and rain hat	112
LXXXI.	Igorot cotton blankets	112
LXXXII.	Kambulo blankets woven of bark fiber	112
LXXXIII.	Bontoc woman spinning bark thread	112
LXXXIV.	Lepanto Igorot woman weaving cotton	128
LXXXV.	Wooden pig pails	128
LXXXVI.	Wooden spoons	128
LXXXVII.	Samoki potters at the clay pit	128
LXXXVIII.	Transporting clay from the pit to the pueblo	128
LXXXIX.	The potter at her art	128
XC.	Shaping the rim of a pot	128
XCI.	Expanding the bowl of a pot	128
XCII.	Finishing a sun-dried pot	128
XCIII.	Woman's large transportation basket and winnowing tray	128
XCIV.	Household baskets	128
XCV.	The fangao, or "head basket"	128
XCVI.	Bontoc wooden war shields	144
XCVII.	Bontoc wooden war shields	144

		After page
PLATE XCVIII.	Kalinga wooden war shields	144
XCIX.	Banawi wooden war shield	144
C.	Bontoc war spears	144
CI.	Bontoc spears, fangkao and kayyan	144
CII.	Bontoc battle-axes	144
CIII.	Bontoc battle-axes	144
CIV.	Balbelasan battle-axes	144
CV.	Agawa clay-pipe maker	144
CVI.	Agawa clay pipes	144
CVII.	Agawa clay pipes with stems	144
CVIII.	Beeswax, and wax pipe models	160
CIX.	Metal-pipe makers	160
CX.	Finished metal pipes	160
CXI.	Women threshing rice	160
CXII.	Children paring camotes	160
CXIII.	Gourd for storing salt meats	160
CXIV.	Bamboo tube for carrying basi to the fields	160
CXV.	Mayinit salt houses	160
CXVI.	Mayinit salt manufacture	160
CXVII.	Preparing cakes of salt for baking	160
CXVIII.	A cane-sugar mill	160
CXIX.	Methods of transportation	160
CXX.	Man's transportation basket, the kimata	176
CXXI.	Woman's transportation baskets	176
CXXII.	Women burden bearers	176
CXXIII.	Igorot commerce—the pottery merchants, and "comercian-tes" of Tulubin	176
CXXIV.	Palay sellers	176
CXXV.	A basi vender	176
CXXVI.	Maklan, a Bontoc warrior	176
CXXVII.	Komis on the war trail	176
CXXVIII.	"Anito head" of a Komis	192
CXXIX.	The warrior's attack	192
CXXX.	Battle-axes	192
CXXXI.	A head dance	192
CXXXII.	Ceremonial rice threshing	192
CXXXIII.	The fawi, where skulls are kept	192
CXXXIV.	A basket of soot-blackened human skulls	192
CXXXV.	A beheaded human body	192
CXXXVI.	Burial of a beheaded human body	208
CXXXVII.	Man's headdress	208
CXXXVIII.	Woman's ear plug	208
CXXXIX.	Woman's bead headdress	208
CXL.	Woman's bustle-like girdle	208
CXLI.	Woman showing rolled hair	208
CXLII.	Rolled-hair headdress	208
CXLIII.	Tattooed Bontoc man	208
CXLIV.	Two well-done tattooes on men	224
CXLV.	An elaborate tattoo on a man	224
CXLVI.	A simple tattoo on a man	224
CXLVII.	Bontoc woman's tattoo	224
CXLVIII.	Banawi man's tattoo	224
CXLIX.	Banawi woman's tattoo	224

		After page
PLATE CL.	Gangsa, the bronze drum, with human-jaw handle	224
CLI.	A Bontoc dance	224
CLII.	A Bontoc dance	224
CLIII.	Foundation of Lumawig's house in Bontoc pueblo	224
CLIV.	A sacred grove in Bontoc pueblo	224

		Page
FIGURE 1.	Spring snare, Kokolang	84
2.	Parallel camote beds	96
3.	Spiral camote beds	96
4.	Bird scarer in rice field	101
5.	Stone hammer	126
6.	Bamboo spear-shaft dresser	129
7.	Ground plan of Mayinit salt house	146
8.	Metal earrings	185
9.	Recognized phases of the moon	219

PREFACE

After an expedition of two months in September, October, and November, 1902, among the people of northern Luzon it was decided that the Igorot of Bontoc pueblo, in the Province of Lepanto-Bontoc, are as typical of the primitive mountain agriculturist of Luzon as any group visited, and that ethnologic investigations directed from Bontoc pueblo would enable the investigator to show the culture of the primitive mountaineer of Luzon as well as or better than investigations centered elsewhere.

Accompanied by Mrs. Jenks, the writer took up residence in Bontoc pueblo the 1st of January, 1903, and remained five months. The following data were gathered during that Bontoc residence, the previous expedition of two months, and a residence of about six weeks among the Benguet Igorot.

The accompanying illustrations are mainly from photographs. Some of them were taken in April, 1903, by Hon. Dean C. Worcester, Secretary of the Interior; others are the work of Mr. Charles Martin, Government photographer, and were taken in January, 1903; the others were made by the writer to supplement those taken by Mr. Martin, whose time was limited in the area. Credit for each photograph is given with the halftone as it appears.

I wish to express my gratitude for the many favors of the only other Americans living in Bontoc Province during my stay there, namely, Lieutenant-Governor Truman K. Hunt, M. D.; Constabulary Lieutenant (now Captain) Elmer A. Eckman; and Mr. William F. Smith, American teacher.

In the following pages native words have their syllabic divisions shown by hyphens and their accented syllables and vowels marked in the various sections wherein the words are considered technically for the first time, and also in the vocabulary in the last chapter. In all other places they are unmarked. A later study of the language may show that errors have been made in writing sentences, since it was not always possible to get a consistent answer to the question as to what part of a sentence constitutes

a single word, and time was too limited for any extensive language study. The following alphabet has been used in writing native words:

a as in *far;* Spanish *ramo*
á as in *law;* as *o* in French *or*
ay as *ai* in *aisle;* Spanish *hay*
ao as *ou* in *out;* as *au* in Spanish *auto*
b as in *bad;* Spanish *bajar*
ch as in *check;* Spanish *chico*
d as in *dog;* Spanish *dar*
e as in *they;* Spanish *hallé*
ĕ as in *then;* Spanish *comen*
f as in *fight;* Spanish *firmar*
g as in *go;* Spanish *gozar*
h as in *he;* Tagalog *bahay*
i as in *pique;* Spanish *hijo*
ĭ as in *pick*
k as in *keen*
l as in *lamb;* Spanish *lente*
m as in *man;* Spanish *menos*
n as in *now;* Spanish *jabon*
ng as in *finger;* Spanish *lengua*
o as in *note;* Spanish *nosotros*
oi as in *boil*
p as in *poor;* Spanish *pero*
q as *ch* in German *ich*
s as in *sauce;* Spanish *sordo*
sh as in *shall;* as *ch* in French *charmer*
t as in *touch;* Spanish *tomar*
u as in *rule;* Spanish *uno*
ŭ as in *but*
ü as in German *kühl*
v as in *valve;* Spanish *volver*
w as in *will;* nearly as *ou* in French *oui*
y as in *you;* Spanish *ya*

It seems not improper to say a word here regarding some of my commonest impressions of the Bontoc Igorot.

Physically he is a clean-limbed, well-built, dark-brown man of medium stature, with no evidence of degeneracy. He belongs to that extensive stock of primitive people of which the Malay is the most commonly named. I do not believe he has received any of his characteristics, as a group, from either the Chinese or Japanese, though this theory has frequently been presented. The Bontoc man would be a savage if it were not that his geographic location compelled him to become an agriculturist; necessity drove him to this art of peace. In everyday life his actions are deliberate, but he is not lazy. He is remarkably industrious for a primitive man. In his agricultural labors he has strength, determination, and endurance. On the trail, as a cargador or burden bearer for Americans, he is patient and uncomplaining, and earns his wage in the sweat of his brow. His social life is lowly, and before marriage is most

primitive; but a man has only one wife, to whom he is usually faithful. The social group is decidedly democratic; there are no slaves. The people are neither drunkards, gamblers, nor "sportsmen." There is little "color" in the life of the Igorot; he is not very inventive and seems to have little imagination. His chief recreation—certainly his most-enjoyed and highly prized recreation—is head-hunting. But head-hunting is not the passion with him that it is with many Malay peoples.

His religion is at base the most primitive religion known—animism, or spirit belief—but he has somewhere grasped the idea of one god, and has made this belief in a crude way a part of his life.

He is a very likable man, and there is little about his primitiveness that is repulsive. He is of a kindly disposition, is not servile, and is generally trustworthy. He has a strong sense of humor. He is decidedly friendly to the American, whose superiority he recognizes and whose methods he desires to learn. The boys in school are quick and bright, and their teacher pronounces them superior to Indian and Mexican children he has taught in Mexico, Texas, and New Mexico.[1]

Briefly, I believe in the future development of the Bontoc Igorot for the following reasons: He has an exceptionally fine physique for his stature and has no vices to destroy his body. He has courage which no one who knows him seems ever to think of questioning; he is industrious, has a bright mind, and is willing to learn. His institutions—governmental, religious, and social—are not radically opposed to those of modern civilization—as, for instance, are many institutions of the Mohammedanized people of Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago—but are such, it seems to me, as will quite readily yield to or associate themselves with modern institutions.

I recall with great pleasure the months spent in Bontoc pueblo, and I have a most sincere interest in and respect for the Bontoc Igorot as a man.

[1] The proof sheets of this paper came to me at the Philippine Exposition, St. Louis, Mo., July, 1904. At that time Miss Maria del Pilar Zamora, a Filipino teacher in charge of the model school at the Exposition, told me the Igorot children are the brightest and most intelligent of all the Filipino children in the model school. In that school are children from several tribes or groups, including Christians, Mohammedans, and pagans.

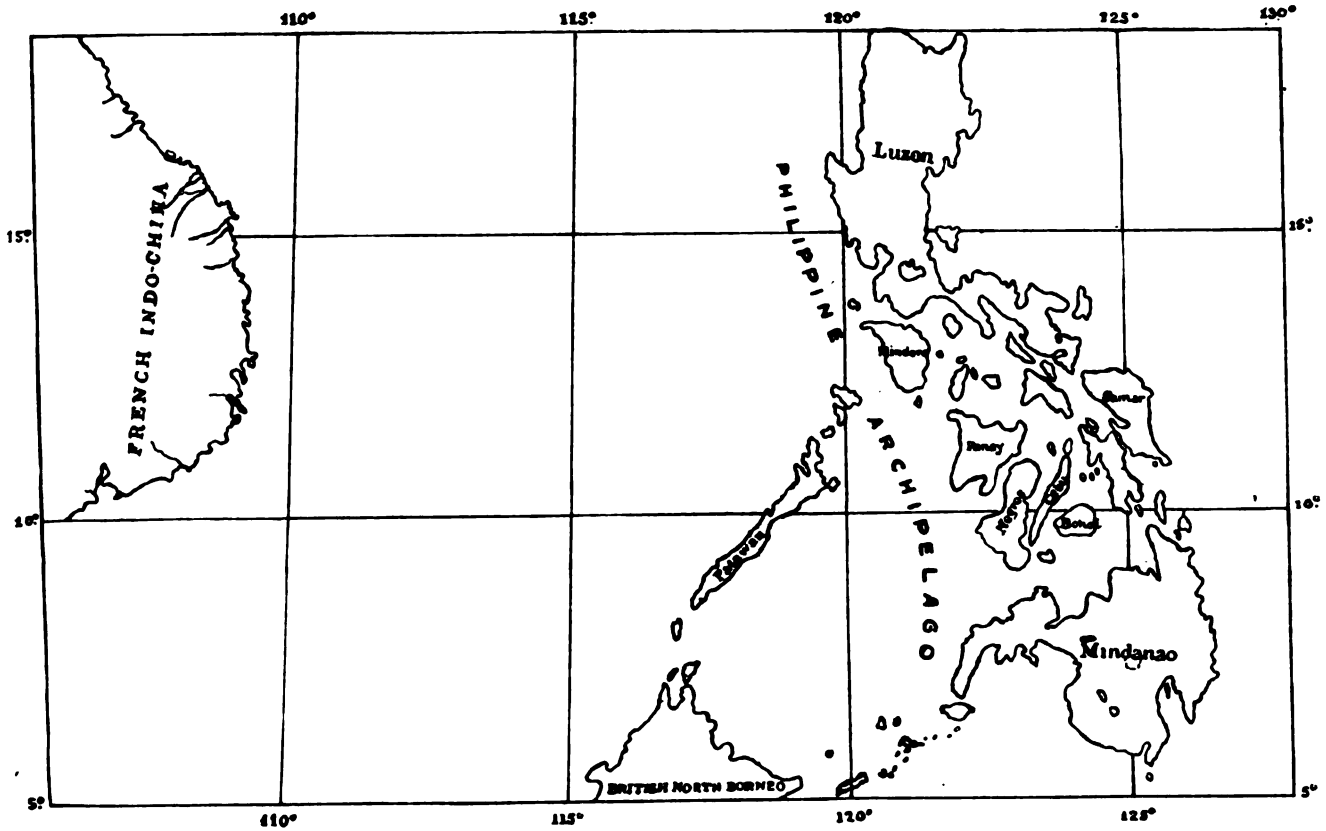


PLATE I. SKETCH MAP OF PHILIPPINE ARCHIPELAGO.

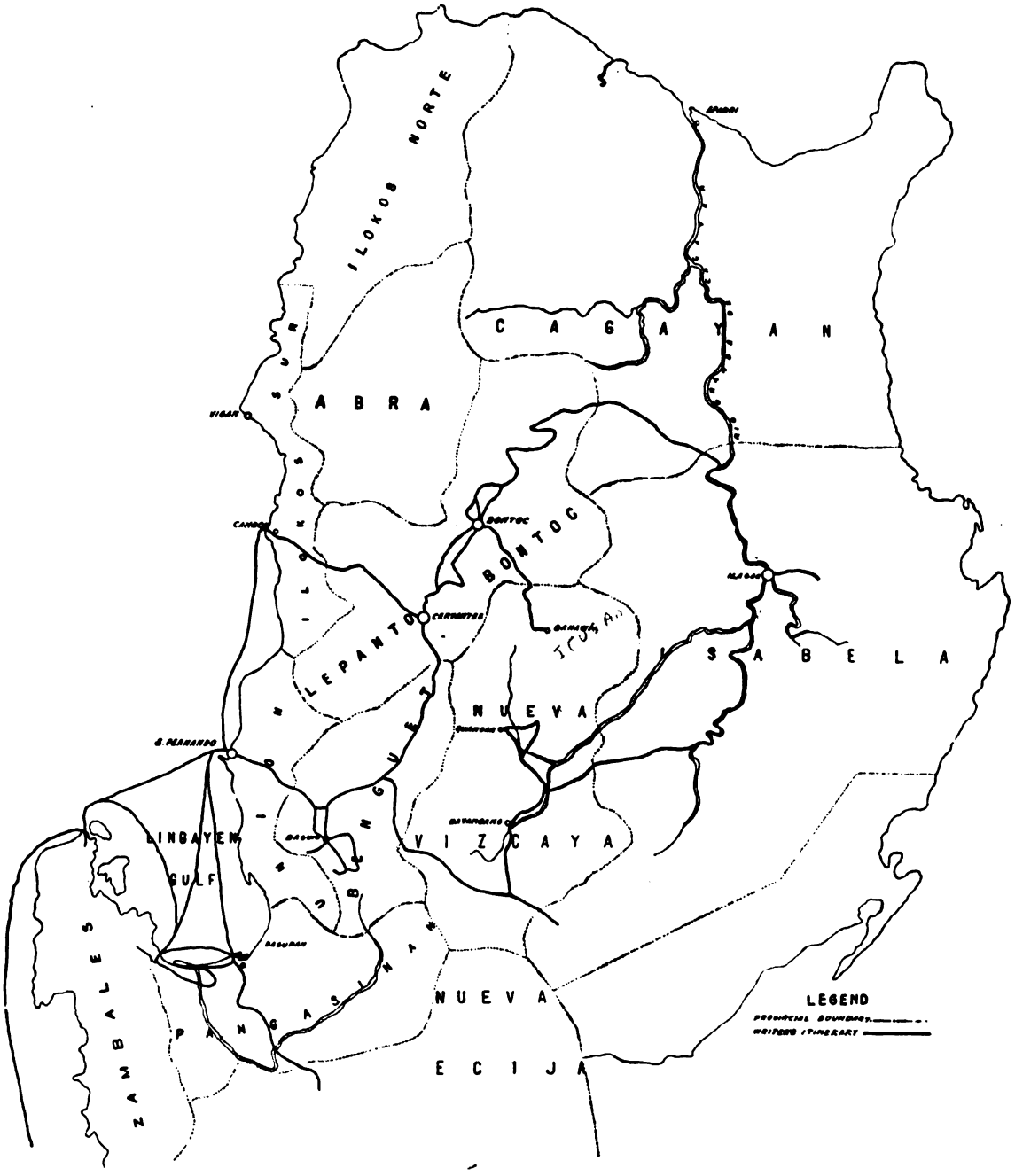
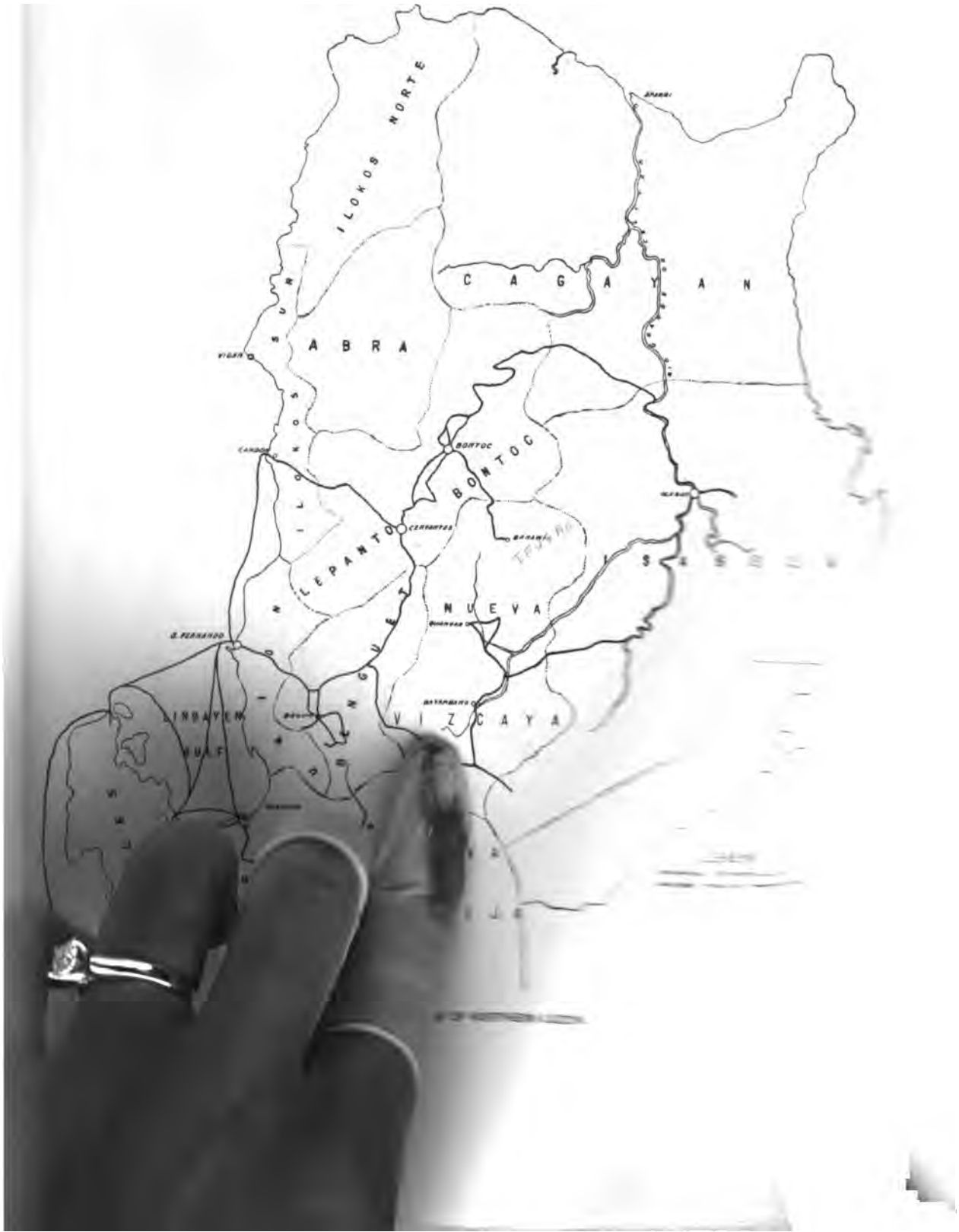


PLATE II. SKETCH MAP OF NORTHERN LUZON.


ILOKOS NORTE
ILOKOS SUR
CAGAYAN
ABRA
BONTOC
LEPANTO
NUEVA
VIZCAYA
LINDAYEN
GULF

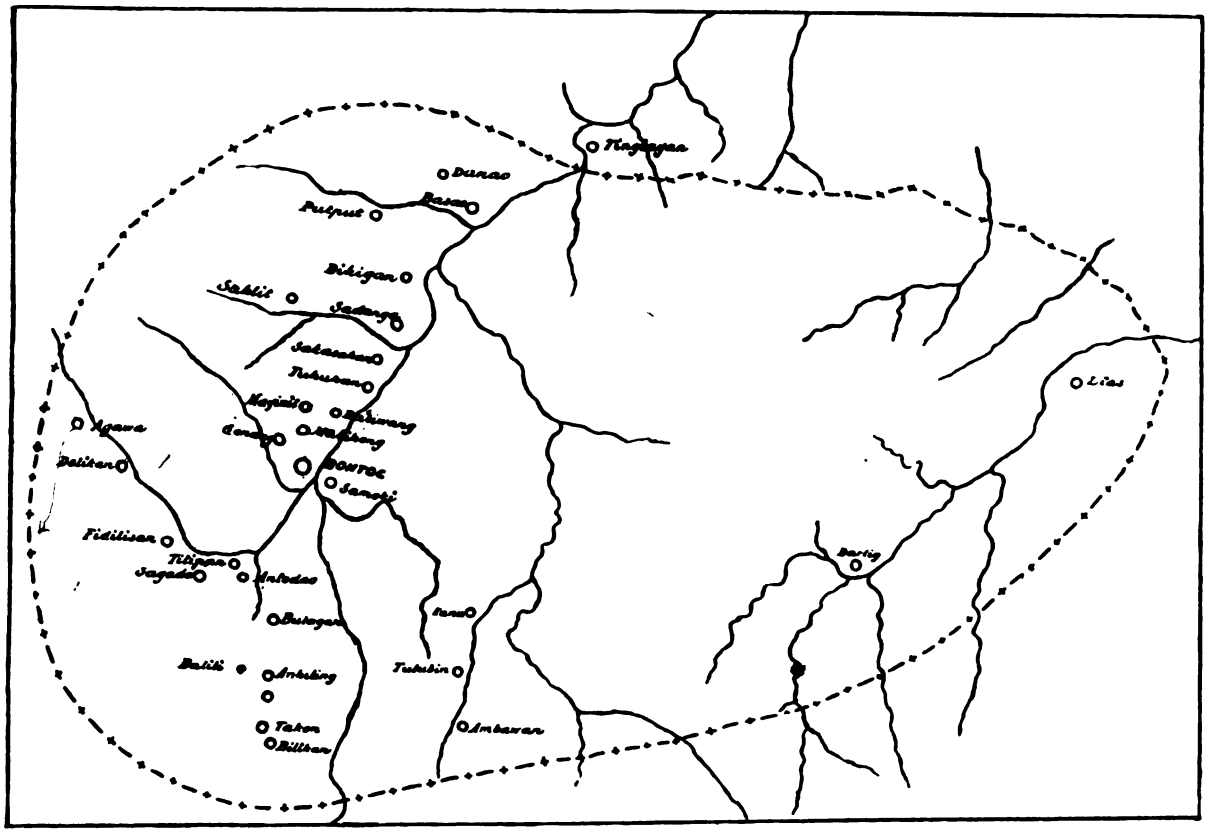


PLATE III. SKETCH MAP OF BONTOC CULTURE AREA.

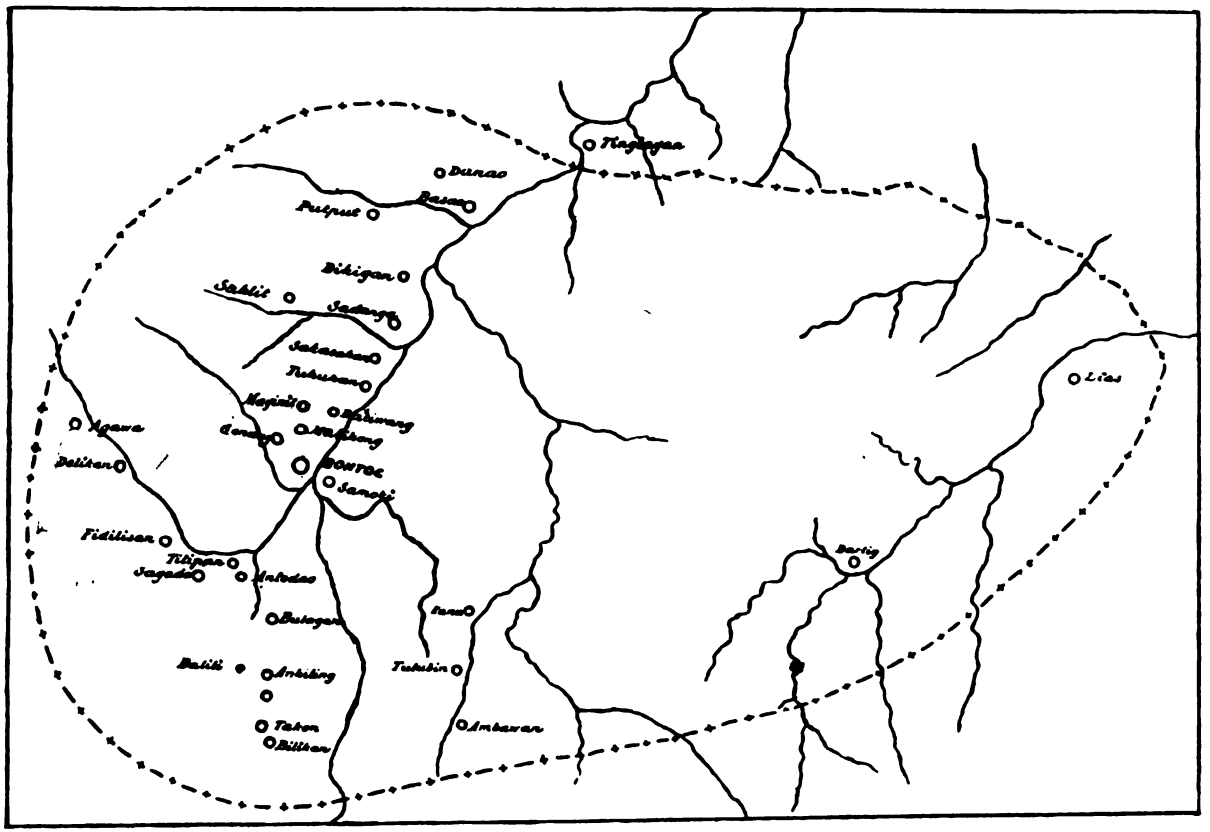


PLATE III. SKETCH MAP OF BONTOC CULTURE AREA.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE IV. SECTION OF THE LAST LONG CLIMB FROM CERVANTES TO BONTOC.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE V. TILUD PASS, EAST SIDE.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE VI. A GLIMPSE OF IGOROT LAND.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE VII. BA-LU'-GAN PUEBLO SURROUNDED BY RICE SEMENTERAS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE VIII. PUEBLO OF SAGADA.

Photo by

Photo by Martin.

PLATE X. KU-LO-KU'-LO OF MAYINIT PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XI. O-GANG'-GA OF SAMOKI PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XII. KU-LO-KU'-LO OF MAYINIT PUEBLO.

INTRODUCTION

The readers of this monograph are familiar with the geographic location of the Philippine Archipelago. However, to have the facts clearly in mind, it will be stated that the group lies entirely within the north torrid zone, extending from 4° 40′ northward to 21° 3′ and from 116° 40′ to 126° 34′ east longitude. It is thus about 1,000 miles from north to south and 550 miles from east to west. The Pacific Ocean washes its eastern shores, the Sea of Celebes its southern, and the China Sea its western and northern shores. It is about 630 kilometers, or 400 miles, from the China coast, and lies due east from French Indo-China. The Batan group of islands, stretching north of Luzon, has members nearer Formosa than Luzon. On the southwest Borneo is sighted from Philippine territory.

Briefly, it may be said the Archipelago belongs to Asia—geologically, zoölogically, and botanically—rather than to Oceania, and that, apparently, the entire Archipelago has shared a common origin and existence. There is evidence that it was connected with the mainland by solid earth in the early or Middle Tertiary. For a long geologic time the land was low and swampy. At the end of the Eocene a great upheaval occurred; there were foldings and crumplings, igneous rock was thrust into the distorted mass, and the islands were considerably elevated above the sea. During the latter part of the Tertiary period the lands seem to have subsided and to have been separated from the mainland.

About the close of the subsidence eruptions began which are continued to the present by such volcanoes as Taal and Mayon in Luzon and Apo in Mindanao. No further subsidence appears to have occurred after the close of the Tertiary, though the gradual elevation beginning then had many lapses, as is evidenced by the numerous sea beaches often seen one above the other in horizontal tiers. The elevation continues to-day in an almost invisible way. The Islands have been greatly enlarged during the elevation by the constant building of coral around the submerged shores.

It is believed that man had appeared in the great Malay Archipelago before this elevation began. It is thought by some that he was in the

Philippines in the later Tertiary, but there are no data as yet throwing light on this question.

To-day the Archipelago lies like a large net in the natural pathway of people freeing themselves from the supposed birthplace of the primitive Malayan stock, namely, from Java, Sumatra, and the adjacent Malay Peninsula, or, more likely, the larger mainland. It spreads over a large area, and is well fitted by its numerous islands—some 3,100—and its innumerable bays and coastal pockets to catch up and hold a primitive, seafaring people.

There are and long have been daring Malayan pirates, and there is to-day among the southern islands a numerous class—the Samal—living most of the time on the sea, yet they all keep close to land, except in time of calm, and when a storm is brewing they strike out straight for the nearest shore like scared children. The ocean currents and the monsoons have been greatly instrumental in driving different people through the seas into the Philippine net.[1] The Tagakola on the west coast of the Gulf of Davao, Mindanao, have a tradition that they are descendants of men cast on their present shores from a distant land and of the Manobo women of the territory. The Bagobo, also in the Gulf of Davao, claim they came to their present home in a few boats generations ago. They purposely left their former land to flee from head-hunting, a practice in

[1] There are many instances on record showing that people have been planted on Pacific shores many hundred miles from their native land. It seems that the primitive Pacific islanders have sent people adrift from their shores, thus adding a rational cause to those many fortuitous causes for the interisland migration of small groups of individuals.

"In 1696, two canoes were driven from Ancarso to one of the Philippine Islands, a distance of eight hundred miles. They had run before the wind for seventy days together, sailing from east to west. Thirty-five had embarked, but five had died from the effects of privation and fatigue during the voyage, and one shortly after their arrival. In 1720, two canoes were drifted from a remote distance to one of the Marian Islands. Captain Cook found, in the Island of Wateo Atiu inhabitants of Tahiti, who had been drifted by contrary wind in a canoe, from some islands to the eastward, unknown to the natives. Several parties have, within the last few years, (prior to 1834), reached the Tahitian shores from islands to the eastward, of which the Society Islands had never before heard. In 1820, a canoe arrived at Maurua, about thirty miles west of Borabora, which had come from Rurutu, one of the Austral islands. This vessel had been at sea between a fortnight and three weeks; and, considering its route, must have sailed seven or eight hundred miles. A more recent instance occurred in 1824: a boat belonging to Mr. Williams of Raiatea left that island with a westerly wind for Tahiti. The wind changed after the boat was out of sight of land. They were driven to the island of Atiu, a distance of nearly eight hundred miles in a south-westerly direction, where they were discovered several months afterwards. Another boat, belonging to Mr. Barff of Huahine, was passing between that island and Tahiti about the same time, and has never since been heard of; and subsequent instances of equally distant and perilous voyages in canoes or open boats might be cited."—(Ellis) Polynesian Researches, vol. I, p. 125.

"In the year 1799, when Finow, a Friendly Island chief, acquired the supreme power in that most interesting group of islands, after a bloody and calamitous civil war, in which his enemies were completely overpowered, the barbarian forced a number of the vanquished to embark in their canoes and put to sea; and during the revolution that issued in the subversion of paganism in Otaheite, the rebel chiefs threatened to treat the English missionaries and their families in a similar way. In short, the atrocious practice is, agreeably to the Scotch law phrase, "use and wont," in the South Sea Islands."—John Dunmore Lang, View of the Origin and Migrations of the Polynesian Nation, London, 1834, pp. 62, 63

their earlier home, but one they do not follow in Mindanao. What per
cent of the people coming originally to the Archipelago was castaway,
nadic, or immigrant it is impossible to judge, but there have doubtless
n many systematic and prolonged migrations from nearby lands,
rneo, Celebes, Sangir, etc.

an is represented in the Philippines to-day not alone by
west natural types of savage man the historic world has
a—the small, dark-brown, bearded, "crisp-woolly"-haired
-but by some thirty distinct primitive Malayan tribes or dialect
. among which are believed to be some of the lowest of the stock
istence.

In northern Luzon is the Igorot, a typical primitive Malayan. He is a muscular, smooth-faced, brown man of a type between the delicate and the coarse. In Mindoro the Mangiyan is found, an especially lowly Malayan, who may prove to be a true savage in culture. In Mindanao is the slender, delicate, smooth-faced brown man of which the Subano, in the western part, is typical. There are the Bagobo and the extensive Manobo of eastern Mindanao in the neighborhood of the Gulf of Davao, the latter people following the Agusan River practically to the north coast of Mindanao. In southeastern Mindanao, in the vicinity of Mount Apo and also north of the Gulf of Davao, are the Ata. They are a scattered people and evidently a Negrito and primitive Malayan mixture. In Nueva Vizcaya, Nueva Ecija, Isabela, and perhaps Principe, of Luzon, are the Ibilao. They are a slender, delicate, bearded people, with an artistic nature quite different from any other now known in the island, but somewhat like that of the Ata of Mindanao. Their artistic wood productions suggest the incised work of distant dwellers of the Pacific, as that of the people of New Guinea, Fiji Islands, or Hervey Islands. The seven so-called Christian tribes,[1] occupying considerable areas in the coastwise lands and low plains of most of the larger islands of the Archipelago, represent migrations to the Archipelago subsequent to those of the Igorot and comparable tribes.

The last migrations of brown men into the Archipelago are historic. The Spaniard discovered the inward flow of the large Samal Moro group—after his arrival in the sixteenth century. The movement of this nomadic "Sea Gipsy" Samal has not ceased to-day, but continues to flow in and out among the small southern islands.

Besides the peoples here cited there are a score of others scattered about the Archipelago, representing many grades of primitive culture,

[1] The Christianized dialect groups are: Bikol, of southern Luzon and adjacent islands; Cagayan, of the Cagayan Valley of Luzon; Ilokano, of the west coast of northern Luzon; Pampango and Pangasinan, of the central plain of Luzon; Tagalog, of the central area south of the two preceding; and the Visayan, of the central islands and northern Mindanao.

the later Tertiary, but there are no data a
uestion.

Archipelago lies like a large net in the nat
g themselves from the supposed birthplace
ek, namely, from Java, Sumatra, and the
r, more likely, the larger mainland. It sp
well fitted by its numerous islands——so
e bays and coastal pockets to catch up an
eople.

e and long have been daring Malayan l
ng the southern islands a numerous class
time on the sea, yet they all keep close t
nd when a storm is brewing they strik
re like scared children. The ocean curr
greatly instrumental in driving differ
he Philippine net.[1] The Tagakola on t
Mindanao, have a tradition that they
heir present shores from a distant l
the territory. The Bagobo, also in
e to their present home in a few bo
left their former land to flee from

---

e many instances on record showing that
y hundred miles from their native land.
ve sent people adrift from their shores, th
tous causes for the interisland migration
two canoes were driven from Ancarso to
ht hundred miles. They had run befor
east to west. Thirty-five had embarke
d fatigue during the voyage, and one
were drifted from a remote distance t
in the Island of Wateo Atiu inhabit
nd in a canoe, from some islands to
ies have, within the last few years.
islands to the eastward, of which th
canoe arrived at Maurua, about t
Turutu, one of the Austral islands
l three weeks; and, considering
es. A more recent instance occ
Raiatea left that island with a w
t was out of sight of land.
early eight hundred miles in
veral months afterwards. Ano
between that island and Tahi
; and subsequent instances
n boats might be cited."——
1799, when Finow, a Frien
resting group of islands, af
re completely overpowered
heir canoes and put to s
aganism in Otaheite, the
eir families in a similar
aw phrase, "use and w
the Origin and Migra

THE BONTOC IGOROT

CHAPTER I

ɔOROT CULTURE GROUP

IGOROT LAND

ɔr Igorot land, is by far the largest area in the Phil-
having any semblance of regularity. It is roughly
ı, extending two and one-half degrees north and south
st and west.

prominent geographic features in northern Luzon.
ıfully picturesque mountain system, the Caraballos, the
range of which is the Caraballos Occidentales, extending
h throughout the western part of the territory. This
mous "Cordillera Central" for about three-quarters of its
ard, beyond which it is known as "Cordillera del Norte."
ominent feature is the extensive drainage system of the
the Rio Grande de Cagayan draining northward into the
ıbout two-thirds of the territory of northern Luzon. It is
drainage system and the largest river in the Archipelago.

face of northern Luzon is made up of four distinct types.
ıe coastal plain—a consistently narrow strip of land, generally
3 or 4 miles wide. The soil is sandy silt with a considerable
ıre of vegetable matter. In some places it is loose, and shifts
before the winds; here and there are stretches of alluvial clay
The sandy areas are often covered with cocoanut trees, and the
ial deposits along the rivers frequently become beds of nipa palm
ar back as tide water. The plain areas are generally poorly watered
ept during the rainy season, having only the streams of the steep
ountains passing through them. These river beds are broad, "quicky,"
mpassable torrents in the rainy season, and are shallow or practically
dry during half the year, with only a narrow, lazy thread flowing among
the bowlders.

This plain area on the west coast is the undisputed dwelling place of the Christian Ilokano, occupying pueblos in Union, Ilokos Sur, and Ilokos Norte Provinces. Almost nothing is known of the eastern coastal plain area. It is believed to be extremely narrow, and has at least one

appreciated by the primitive man, who takes advantage of them as of bridges.

The mountains are well watered; the summits of most of the mountains have perpetual springs of pure, cool waters. On the very tops of some there are occasional perpetual water holes ranging from 10 to 100 feet across. These holes have neither surface outlet nor inlet; there are two such within two hours of Bontoc pueblo. They are the favorite wallowing places of the carabao, the so-called "water buffalo,"[1] both the wild and the half-domesticated animals.

The mountain streams are generally in deep gorges winding in and out between the sharp folds of the mountains. Their beds are strewn with bowlders, often of immense size, which have withstood the wearing of waters and storms. During the rainy season the streams racing between the bases of two mountain ridges are maddened torrents. Some streams, born and fed on the very peaks, tumble 100, 500, even 1,500 feet over precipices, landing white as snow in the merciless torrent at the mountain base. During the dry season the rivers are fordable at frequent intervals, but during the rainy season, beginning in the Cordillera Central in June and lasting well through October, even the natives hesitate often for a week at a time to cross them.

The absence of lakes is noteworthy in the mountain country of northern Luzon—in fact, in all of northern Luzon. The two large lakes frequently shown on maps of Cagayan Province, one east and one west of the Rio Grande de Cagayan near the eighteenth parallel, are not known to exist, though it is probable there is some foundation for the Spaniards' belief in the existence of at least the eastern one. In the bottom land of the Rio Grande de Cagayan, about six hours west of Cabagan Nuevo, near the provincial border of Cagayan and Isabela, there were a hundred acres of land covered with shallow water the last of October, 1902, just at the end of the dry season of the Cagayan Valley. The surface was well covered with rank, coarse grasses and filled with aquatic plants, especially with lilies. Apparently the waters were slowly receding, since the earth about the margins was supporting the short, coarse grasses that tell of the gradual drying out of soils once covered with water. In the mountains near Sagada, Bontoc Province, there is a very small lake, and one or two others have been reported at Bontoc; but the mountains must be said to be practically lakeless.

Another mountain range of northern Luzon, of which practically no details are known, is the Sierra Madre, extending nearly the full length of the country close to the eastern coast. It seems to be an unbroken, continuous range, and, as such, is the longest mountain range in the Archipelago.

The fourth type of surface is the level areas. These areas lie mainly along the river courses, and vary from a few rods in width to the valley

[1] *Bubalus kerabau ferus* (Nehring).

pueblo of Christianized Tagalog—the famous Aguinaldo's capture.

The second type of surface is the coastal hi
the coastal plain irregularly back to the mount
much narrower on the eastern coast than on th
be quite absent on the eastern. It is the rema
seaward from an altitude of about 1,000 feet
its hilly nature is due to erosion. These hill
with grasses; the sheltered moister places of
tall, coarse cogon grass.[1] The soil varies f
the sandy loams to quite extensive deposit
stretches in the hills on the west coast are
the Christian peoples, though here and t
large Igorot group. The Igorot in these
formation, and quite generally wear cl
Ilokano.

The third type of surface is the mo
zone of the Tropics"; it is the habitat
coastal hill area the mountains rise abr
general north and south direction, and
west of the great level bottom land bor
The Cordillera Central is as fair and
as the tropic sun shines on. It has
from tropic forest jungles into open
into the dense tropic forest, with its
orchids, and its graceful, lilting fe
to the upper rim on one side with
sturdy pine trees; at the crest line
intermingle with those of the tem
ing, bare backs whose only cover
green and brown. There are lon
and there pine forests graduall
There are solitary volcanoes,
posely let alone when nature hu
sculptured lime rocks, cities of
cathedrals.

The mountains present one
is repeatedly delighted to fin
peak or ascent to another ov
either side of this connectin
canyon; the ridge is only a f
a dozen to twenty feet wide
appearance of being compo

Bureau, 1901-1902;
Manila,

the hottest month of the year and February is
.e lowest temperature recorded is 42.10° Fahren-
8, 1902. Of course the temperature varies con-
largely to altitude and prevailing winds. The
ason is in August, during which it rains every day,
ıpitation of 37.03 inches. Baguio is known as much
)ther places in the Cordillera Central, yet it must be
ıess typical of the entire mountain area of northern
t which the rainy season is very uniform. Usually
ıiny season are beautiful and clear during the forenoon,
are not rare, and each season has two or three storms of
; rain which continues without a break for four or five

IGOROT PEOPLES

languages of northern Luzon the word "Ĭg-o-rot′" means people." Dr. Pardo de Tavera says the word "Igorrote" is of the root word "golot," meaning, in Tagalog, "mountain ıd the prefix "i," meaning "dweller in" or "people of." Morga used the word as "Igolot;" early Spaniards also used the word ıly as "Ygolotes"—and to-day some groups of the Igorot, as the group, do not pronounce the "r" sound, which common usage)uts in the word. The Spaniards applied the term to the wild es of present Benguet and Lepanto Provinces, now a short-haired, eful people. In after years its common application spread eastward he natives of the comandancia of Quiangan, in the present Province Nueva Vizcaya, and northward to those of Bontoc.

The word "Ĭg-o-rot′" is now adopted tentatively as the name of the xtensive primitive Malayan people of northern Luzon, because it is applied to a very large number of the mountain people by themselves and also has a recognized usage in ethnologic and other writings. Its form as "Ĭg-o-rot′" is adopted for both singular and plural, because it is both natural and phonetic, and, because, so far as it is possible to do so, it is thought wise to retain the simple native forms of such words as it seems necessary or best to incorporate in our language, especially in scientific language.

The sixteenth degree of north latitude cuts across Luzon probably as far south as any people of the Igorot group are now located. It is believed they occupy all the mountain country northward in the ısland except the territory of the Ibilao in the southeastern part of the area and some of the most inaccessible mountains in eastern Luzon, which are occupied by Negritos.

There are from 150,000 to 225,000 Igorot in Igorot land. The census of the Archipelago taken in 1903 will give the number as about 185,000. In the northern part of Pangasinan Province, the southwestern part of

of the Rio Grande de Cagayan, which is often 50 miles in v
probably more. There are, besides these river valleys, varyir
level plains which may most correctly be termed mountain
The limited mountain valleys and table-lands are the immed
the Igorot. The valleys are worn by the streams, and, in t
up, leveled, and enriched by the sand and alluvium depo
by the floods. They are generally open, grass-covered are
have become densely forested since being left above th
the streams.

The broad valley of the Rio Grande de Cagayan is n
Igorot. It is too poorly watered and forested to mee
It is mainly a vast pasture, supporting countless deer
and the forest-grown creek and river bottoms there
and in some areas herds of wild carabaos and hor
the main river is a numerous population of Chris
kano imported originally by the tobacco companie
tobacco plantations of the valley, and the others ar

The table-lands were once generally foreste
deforested, undulating, beautiful pastures. S
Igorot for agriculture, and doubtless others b
constantly sees during the dry season destr
of northern Luzon.

General observations have not been ma
humidity of much of the mountain count
ever, scientific observations have been mad
about ten years at Baguio, Benguet Pr
feet, and it is from the published data t
facts are gained.[1] The temperature an
deduced from many years' observations

Month	
January	
February	
March	
April	
May	
June	
July	
August	
September	
October	
November	
December	

[1] Pages 72-74 of the Report of
Part First, The Climate of Ba
Observatory Printing Office, 19

ideas and processes borrowed from different neighboring peoples. Very misleading statements have sometimes been made in regard to the Igorot—customs from different groups have been jumbled together in one description until a man has been pictured who can not be found anywhere. All except the most general statements are worse than wasted unless a particular group is designated.

An illustration of some of the differences between groups of typical Igorot will make this clearer. I select as examples the people of Bontoc and the adjoining Quiangan district in northern Nueva Vizcaya Province, both of whom are commonly known as Igorot. It must be noted that the people of both areas are practically unmodified by modern culture and both are constant head-hunters. With scarcely one exception Bontoc pueblos are single clusters of buildings; in Banawi pueblo of the Quiangan area there are eleven separate groups of dwellings, each group situated on a prominence which may be easily protected by the inhabitants against an enemy below them; and other Quiangan pueblos are similarly built. As will be brought out in succeeding chapters, the social and political institutions of the two peoples differ widely. In Bontoc the head weapon is a battle-ax, in Quiangan it is a long knife. Most of the head-hunting practices of the two peoples are different, especially as to the disposition of the skulls of the victims. Bontoc men wear their hair long, and have developed a small pocket-hat to confine the hair and contain small objects carried about; the men of Quiangan wear their hair short, have nothing whatever of the nature of the pocket-hat, but have developed a unique hand bag which is used as a pocket. In the Quiangan area a highly conventionalized wood-carving art has developed—beautiful eating spoons with figures of men and women carved on the handles and food bowls cut in animal figures are everywhere found; while in Bontoc only the most crude and artless wood carving is made. In language there is such a difference that Bontoc men who accompanied me into the northern part of the large Quiangan area, only a long day from Bontoc pueblo, could not converse with Quiangan men, even about such common things as travelers in a strange territory need to learn.

It is because of the many differences in cultural expressions between even small and neighboring communities of the primitive people of the Philippine Archipelago that I wish to be understood in this paper as speaking of the one group—the Bontoc Igorot culture group; a group however, in every essential typical of the numerous Igorot peoples of the mountains of northern Luzon.

the territory, there are reported about
local names, as "Igorrotes," "Infiele
tianos." In Benguet Province there
"Benguet Igorrotes." In Union P
people, generally called "Igorrote
of whom are known to history a
The Province of Ilokos Norte h
quite evenly between "Igorro
Province has in round numb
are historically known as "
ethnically belong to the
Province, where they ar
guishable from the Igor
the Tinguian asunder
ethnologic writings
Bontoc has, accordi
and "Caylingas,"
nearer 100,000.
guianes." Th
locally and hi
Spanish com
of people
group in
group of
dancia
people
and
prin
"I

CULTURE GROUP

CULTURE AREA

early equals the old Spanish Distrito
incorporated to the American public in a
estimated about 4,500 square kilometers.
estimate, and it is undoubtedly an over-
area, the northern border of which is
the Spanish Bontoc area.
of the northern Luzon and is cut off by
except on the northeast. The most
is Polis Mountain, extending along the
the area; it is supposed to reach a height
western watershed is an undifferentiated range
To the north stretches a large area of the
though until 1903 most of that north-
in the Province of Abra. The Province of
Nueva Vizcaya and Lepanto border the area on
Abra border it on the west.
lies entirely in the mountains, and, with the
it is all drained northeastward into the Rio
river, the Rio Chico de Cagayan; but the
directly eastward, is a considerable stream.
enters Bontoc Province. It was originally built
enters Bontoc pueblo from the southwest, leading
Lepanto Province. From Cervantes there are two
passes southward through Baguio in Benguet
reaches westward, terminating on the coast at San
Province. The other, the one most commonly trav-
goes to the northwest, terminating on the coast at
line of Ilokos Sur. The main trail, entering Bontoc

...as of the Philippine Islands. (Washington, Government Printing

from Cervantes, passes through the pueblo and extends to the northeast, quite closely following the trend of the Chico River. In Spanish times was seldom traveled farther than Basao, but several parties of Americans have been over it as far as the Rio Grande de Cagayan since November, 1902. A second trail, also of Spanish origin, but now practically unused, enters the area from the south and connects Bontoc pueblo, its northern terminus, with the valley of the Magat River far south. It passes through the pueblos of Bayambang, Quiangan, and Banawi, in the Province of Nueva Vizcaya.

The main trail is to-day passable for a horseman from the coast terminus to Tinglayan, three days beyond Bontoc pueblo. Practically all other trails in the area are simply wild footpaths of the Igorot. Candon, the coast terminus of the main trail, lies in the coastal plain area about 1¼ miles from the sea. From the coast to the small pueblo of Concepcion at the western base of the Cordillera Central is a half-day's journey. The first half of the trail passes over flat land, with here and there small pueblos surrounded by rice sementeras. There are almost no forests. The latter half is through the coastal hill area, and the trail frequently passes through small forests; it crosses several rivers, dangerous to ford in the rainy season, and winds in and out among attractive hills bearing clumps of graceful, plume-like bamboo.

From Concepcion the trail leads up the mountain to Tilud Pass, historic since the insurrection because of the brave stand made there by the young, ill-fated General del Pilar. The climb to Tilud Pass, from either side of the mountain, is one of the longest and most tedious in northern Luzon. The trail frequently turns short on itself, so that the front and rear parts of a pack train are traveling face to face, and one end is not more than eight or ten rods above the other on the side of the mountain. The last view of the sea from the Candon-Bontoc trail is obtained at Tilud Pass. From Concepcion to Angaki, at the base of the mountain on the eastern side of the pass, the trail is about half a day long. From the pass it is a ceaseless drop down the steep mountain, but affords the most charming views of mountain scenery in northern Luzon. The shifting direction of the turning trail and the various altitudes of the traveler present constantly changing scenes—mountains and mountains ramble on before one. From Angaki to Cervantes the trail passes over deforested rolling mountain land, with safe drinking water in only one small spring. Many travelers who pass that part of the journey in the middle of the day complain loudly of the heat and thirst experienced there.

Cervantes, said to be 70 miles from Candon, is the capital of the dual Province of Lepanto-Bontoc. Bontoc pueblo lies inland only about 35 miles farther, but the greater part of two days is usually required to reach it. Twenty minutes will carry a horseman down the bluff from Cervantes, across the swift Abra—if the stream is fordable—and start him on the eastward mountain climb.

MARKS OF BONTOC CULTURE

However, two fundamental institutions of the people of Bontoc seem to differ from those of most adjoining peoples. One of these institutions has to do with the control of the pueblo. Bontoc has not developed the headman—the "principal" of the Spaniard, the "Bak-nan" of the Benguet Igorot—the one rich man who becomes the pueblo leader. In Benguet Province the headman is found in every pueblo, and he is so powerful that he often dominates half a dozen outlying barrios to the extent that he receives a large share, often one-half, of the output of all the productive labors of the barrio. Immediately north of the Bontoc area, in Tinglayan, the headman is again found. He has no place whatever in Bontoc. The control of the pueblos of the Bontoc area is in the hands of groups of old men: however, each group, called "intugtukan,"

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XIII. BON-GAO' OF ALAP PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XIV. BO-DA'-DA OF SAMOKI PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XV. U-DAO' OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XVI. YOUNG WOMEN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XVII. ZAG-TAG'-AN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

PLATE XVII. SAN FAUSTAN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XVIII. KA-NAY'-U OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XIX. LANG'-SA OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XX. SĬT-LI'-NĬN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXI. PĬT-TA'-PĬT OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXII. GIRLS OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXIII. BLIND WOMAN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

PLATE XXIII. BLIND WOMAN OF BONTOC PUEBLO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXIV. BLIND TA-U'-LI OF SAMOKI PUEBLO.

operates only within a single political and geographic portion of the pueblo, so that no one group has in charge the control of the pueblo. The pueblo is a loose federation of smaller political groups.

The other institution is a social development. It is the olag, an institution of trial marriage. It is not known to exist among adjoining people, but is found throughout the area in which the intugtukan exists; they are apparently coextensive. I was repeatedly informed that the olag is not found in the Banawi area south of Bontoc, or in the Tinglayan area east, or among the Tinguian to the north, or in Benguet far southwest, or in Lepanto immediately southwest—though I have some reason to believe that both the intugtukan and olag exist in a crumbling way among certain Lepanto Igorot.

Besides these two institutions there are other differing marks of culture between the Bontoc area and adjoining people. Some of these were suggested a few pages back, others will appear in following pages.

Without doubt the limits of the spread of the common culture have been determined mainly by the physiography of the country. One of the two pueblos in the area not on the common drainage system is Lias, but Lias was largely built by a migration from Bontoc pueblo—the hotbed of Bontoc culture. Barlig, the other pueblo not on the common drainage system (both Barlig and Lias are on the Sibbu River), lies between Lias and the other pueblos of the Bontoc culture area, and so naturally has been drawn in line and held in line with the culture of the geographic area in which it is located—its institutions are those of its environment.

THE BONTOC MAN

INTRODUCTION

The Bontoc Igorot has been in Bontoc longer than the endurance of tradition, for he says he never lived elsewhere, that he never drove any people out before him, and that he was never driven; and has always called himself the "Ĭ-pu-kao′" or "Ĭ-fu-gao′"—the "people."

This word for people survives not only throughout the Province of Bontoc but far toward the northern end of Luzon, where it appears as "Apayao" or "Yaos." Bontoc designates the people of the Quiangan region as "Ĭ-fu-gao′," though a part of them at least have a different name for themselves.

The Bontoc Igorot have their center in the pueblo of Bontoc, pronounced "Ban-tâk′," a Spanish corruption of the Igorot name "Fun-tâk′," a common native word for mountain, the original name of the pueblo. To the northwest their culture extends to that of the historic Tinguian, a long-haired folk physiographically cut off by a watershed. To the east of the Cordillera Central the Tinguian call themselves "Ĭt-nĕg′." To the

northeast the Bontoc culture area embraces the pueblo of Basao, stopping short of Tinglayan. The eastern limit of Bontoc culture is fixed by the pueblos of Lias and Barlig, and is thus about coextensive with the province. Southward the area includes all to the top of the watershed of Polis Mountain, which turns southward the numerous streams feeding the Rio Magat. The pueblos south of this watershed—Lubong, Gisang, Banawi, etc.—belong to the short-haired people of Quiangan culture. To the west Bontoc culture extends to the watershed of the Cordillera Central, which turns westward the various affluents of the Rio del Abra. On the southwest this cuts off the short-haired Lepanto Igorot, whose culture seems to be more allied to that of Benguet than Bontoc.

The men of the Bontoc area know none of the peoples by whom they are surrounded by the names history gives or the peoples designate themselves, with the exception of the Lepanto Igorot, the Ĭt-nĕg′, and the Ilokano of the west coast. They do not know the "Tinguian" of Abra on their north and northwest by that name; they call them "Ĭt-nĕg′." Farther north are the people called by the Spaniards "Nabayuganes," "Aripas," and "Ipugaos;" to the northeast and east are the "Caylingas," "Comunanges," "Bayabonanes," "Dayags," and "Gaddannes"—but Bontoc knows none of these names. Bontoc culture and Kalinga culture lie close together on the east, and the people of Bontoc pueblo name all their eastern neighbors Ĭt-nĕg′—the same term they apply to the Tinguian to the west and northwest, because, they say, they all wear great quantities of brass on the arms and legs. To the south of Bontoc are the Quiangan Igorot, the Banawi division of which, at least, names itself May′-yo-yĕt, but whom Bontoc calls "Ĭ-fu-gao′." They designate the people of Benguet the "Igorot of Benguet," but these peoples designate themselves "Ĭb-a-loi′" in the northern part, and "Kan-ka-nay′" in the southern part, neither of which names Bontoc knows.

She has still another set of names for the people surrounding her—people whom she vaguely knows are there but of whom or of whose lands she has no first-hand knowledge. The people to the north are "Am-yan′-an," and the northern country is "La′-god." The "Day′-ya" are the eastern people, while "Bar′-lĭg" is the name of the eastern and southeastern land. "Ab-a-ga′-tan" are the people of the south, and "Fi′-lĭg ab-a-ga′-tan" is the south land. The people of the west are "Loa′-od," and "Fi′-lĭg lao′-od," or "Lo′-ko" (the Provinces of Ilokos Norte and Ilokos Sur) is the country lying to the west and southwest.

Some of the old men of Bontoc say that in the past the Igorot people once extended to the seacoast in the Provinces of Ilokos Norte and Ilokos Sur. This, of course, is a tradition of the prehistoric time before the Ilokano invaded northern Luzon; but, as has been stated, the Bontoc people claim never to have been driven by that invasion, neither have they any knowledge of such a movement. It is not improbable, how-

ever, that traditions of the invasion may linger with the people nearer the coast and farther north.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

It is regretted that the once voluminous historical records and data which the Spaniards prepared and kept at Bontoc were burned—tons of paper, they say—probably late in 1898 or early in 1899 by Captain Angels, an insurrecto. However, from scanty printed historical data, but mostly from information gathered in Bontoc from Igorot and resident Ilokano, the following brief sketch is presented, with the hope that it will show the nature of the outside influences which have been about Bontoc for the past half century prior to American occupation. It is believed that the data are sufficiently truthful for this purpose, but no claim is made for historical accuracy.

It seems that in 1665 the Spanish governor of the Philippines, Governor-General D. Diego de Salcedo, sent an expedition from Manila into northern Luzon. Some time during the three years the expedition was out its influence was felt in Fidelisan and Tanolang, two pueblos in the western part of the Bontoc culture area, for history says they paid tribute.[1] It is not probable that any considerable party from the expedition penetrated the Igorot mountain country as far as the above pueblos.

After the year 1700 expeditions occasionally reached Cayan, which, until about twenty-five years ago, as has been stated, was a Spanish capital. In 1852 the entire territory of present Lepanto-Bontoc and a large part of northern Nueva Vizcaya were organized as an independent "distrito," under the name of "Valle de Cayan;"[2] and a few years later, though the author does not give the date, Bontoc was established as an independent "distrito."

The Spaniards and Ilokano in and about Bontoc Province say that it was about fifty years ago that the Spaniards first came to Bontoc. The time agrees very accurately with the time of the establishment of the district. From then until 1899 there was a Spanish garrison of 200 or 300 men stationed in Bontoc pueblo. Christian Ilokano from the west coast of northern Luzon and the Christian Tagalog from Manila and vicinity were the soldiers.

The Spanish comandante of the "distrito," the head of the political-military government, resided there, and there were also a few Spanish army officers and an army chaplain. A large garrison was quartered in Cervantes; there was a church in both Bontoc and Cervantes. In the district of Bontoc there was a Spanish post at Sagada, between the

[1] R. P. Fr. Angel Perez, Igorrotes, Estudio Geográfico y Etnográfico, etc. (Manila, 1902), p. 7.

[2] Op. cit., p. 29.

ast the Bontoc culture area
nort of Tinglayan. The east
eblos of Lias and Barlig, an
ce. Southward the area incl
is Mountain, which turns sou
o Magat. The pueblos south
vi, etc.—belong to the short-ha
est Bontoc culture extends to
hich turns westward the vario
uthwest this cuts off the sho
eems to be more allied to that
e men of the Bontoc area kno
rrounded by the names history
with the exception of the I
o of the west coast. They d
eir north and northwest by t
er north are the people calle
as," and "Ipugaos;" to the no
nnanges," "Bayabonanes," "D
ows none of these names. Bo
ogether on the east, and the pe
n neighbors Ĭt-nĕg′—the same
st and northwest, because, they
on the arms and legs. To the
, the Banawi division of which
nom Bontoc calls "Ĭ-fu-gao′."
he "Igorot of Benguet," but
loi′" in the northern part, and
r of which names Bontoc know
has still another set of name
whom she vaguely knows a
she has no first-hand knowle
yan′-an," and the northern co
e eastern people, while "Bar′-
astern land. "Ab-a-ga′-tan"
ĭg ab-a-ga′-tan" is the south
-od," and "Fi′-lĭg lao′-od," or
and Ilokos Sur) is the countr
ne of the old men of Bontoc sa
xtended to the seacoast in the
This, of course, is a tradition
no invaded northern Luzon; b
e claim never to have been dr
any knowledge of such a move

st was a post at
re was a post, a

Igorot say that
. There is yet
the Igorot were
of both officers
always paid for.
n annual tax of
as only 5 cents,
nty days' labor
to bring in so
If it was not
ccompanied by
nes burned the
as confined six
peatedly failed
sed them.
e outskirts of
re not allowed
r guard.
seem to have
t one. Early
nte took his
lown because
exterminated
Mandicota, a
00 soldiers to
n Bontoc by
to the moun-
cut off and

nty soldiers
Tukukan for
heads.
and 1,000
ds adorned

00 warriors

agada with
rs returned

onths after

Saldero's bloody work in Sagada. The Spanish garrison fled before the insurrectos; the Spanish civilians went with them, taking their flocks and herds to Bontoc. A thousand pesos was the price offered by the Igorot of Sagada to the insurrectos for Saldero's head when the Philippine soldiers passed through the pueblo; but Saldero made good his escape from Bontoc, and left the country by boat from Vigan.

The Bontoc Igorot assisted the insurrectos in many ways when they first came. About 2 miles west of Bontoc is a Spanish rifle pit, and there the Spanish soldiers, now swelled to about 600 men, lay in wait for the insurrectos. There on two hilltops an historic sham battle occurred. The two forces were nearly a mile apart, and at that distance they exchanged rifle bullets three days. The Spaniards finally surrendered, on condition of safe escort to the coast. For fifty years they had conquered their enemy who were armed only with spear and ax; but the insurrectos were armed with guns. However, the really hard pressing came from the rear—there were still the ax and spear—and few soldiers from cuartel or trench who tried to bring food or water for the fighting men ever reported why they were delayed.

The feeling of friendship between the Igorot and insurrectos was so strong that when the insurrectos asked the Igorot to go to Manila to fight the new enemy (the Americans), 400 warriors, armed only with spear, battle-ax, and shield, went a three weeks' journey to get American heads. At Caloocan, just outside Manila, they met the American Army early in February, 1899. They threw their spears, the Americans fired their guns—"which must be brothers to the thunder," the Igorot said—and they let fall their remaining weapons, and, panic stricken, started home. All but thirteen arrived in safety. They are not ashamed of their defeat and retreat; they made a mistake when they went to fight the Americans, and they were quick to see it. They are largely blessed with the saving sense of humor, and some of the warriors who were at Caloocan have been known to say that they never stopped running until they arrived home.

When these men told their people in Bontoc what part they and the insurrectos played in the fight against the Americans, the tension between the Igorot and insurrectos was at its greatest. The insurrectos were evidently worse than the Spaniards. They did all the things the Spaniards had done, and more—they robbed through falsehood. Consequently, insurrectos frequently lost their heads.

Major Marsh went through Bontoc close after Aguinaldo in December, 1899. The Igorot befriended the Americans; they brought them food and guided them faithfully along the bewildering mountain trails when the insurrectos split and scattered—anywhere, everywhere, fleeing eastward, northward, southward, in the mountains.

When Major Marsh returned through Bontoc, after following

Aguinaldo into the heart of the Quiangan area, he left in the pueblo some sixty shoeless men under a volunteer lieutenant. The lieutenant promptly appointed an Ilokano presidente, vice-presidente, secretary, and police force in Bontoc and also in Sagada, and when the soldiers left in a few weeks he gave seven guns to the "officials" in Bontoc and two to those in Sagada. A short time proved that those "officials" were untrustworthy men; many were insurrectos who had dropped behind Aguinaldo. They persecuted the Igorot even worse than had the insurrectos. They seemed to have the American Army behind them—and the Igorot stood in awe of American arms.

The crisis came. An Igorot obtained possession of one of the guns, and the Ilokano chief of police was killed and his corporal wounded.

This shooting, at the time apparently unpremeditated, but, in reality, carefully planned and successfully executed, was the cause of the arrival in Bontoc pueblo of the first American civilians. At that time a party of twenty Americans was at Fidelisan, a long day northwest of Bontoc; they were prospecting and sightseeing. The Ilokano sent these men a letter, and the Igorot sent a messenger, begging them to come to the help of the pueblo. Three men went on August 27, 1900; they were Truman K. Hunt, M. D., Mr. Frank Finley, and Mr. Riley. The disagreement was settled, and several Ilokano families left Bontoc under the protection of Mr. Riley.

August 9, 1901, when the Board of Health for the Philippine Islands was organized, Dr. Hunt, who had remained in Bontoc most of the preceding year, was appointed "superintendent of public vaccination and inspection of infectious diseases for the Provinces of Bontoc and Lepanto." He was stationed at Bontoc. About that time another American civilian came to the province—Mr. Reuben H. Morley, now secretary-treasurer of the Province of Nueva Vizcaya, who lived nearly a year in Tulubin, two hours from Bontoc. December 14 Mr. William F. Smith, an American teacher, was sent to Bontoc to open a school.

Early in 1902 Constabulary inspectors, Lieutenants Louis A. Powless and Ernest A. Eckman, also came. May 28, 1902, the Philippine Commission organized the Province of Lepanto-Bontoc; on June 9 Dr. Hunt was appointed lieutenant-governor of the province. May 1, 1903, Dr. Hunt resigned and E. A. Wagar, M. D., became his successor.

The Spaniard was in Bontoc about fifty years. To summarize the Spanish influence on the Igorot—and this includes any influence which the Ilokano or Tagalog may have had since they came among the people under Spanish protection—it is believed that no essential institution of the Igorot has been weakened or vitiated to any appreciable degree. No Igorot attended the school which the Spaniards had in Bontoc; to-day not ten Igorot of the pueblo can make themselves understood in Spanish about the commonest things around them. I fail to detect

any occupation, method, or device of the Igorot which the Spaniards' influence improved; and Igorot flatly deny any such influence.

The Spaniard put the institution of pueblo presidente pretty well throughout the area now in province, but the presidente in no way interferes with the routine life of the people—he is the mouthpiece of the Government asking for labor and the daily necessities of a nonproductive, resident foreign population.

The "tax" levied was scarcely in the nature of a modern tax; it was more the means taken by the Spaniard to secure his necessary food. In no other way was the political life and organization of the pueblo affected. In the realm of religion and spirit belief the surface has scarcely been scratched. The only Igorot who became Christians were the wives of some of the Christian natives who came in with the Spaniard, mainly as soldiers. There are now eight or ten such women, wives of the resident Ilokanos of Bontoc pueblo, but those whose husbands left the pueblo have reverted to Igorot faith.

In the matter of war and head-hunting the effect of the Spaniard was to intensify the natural instinct of the Igorot in and about Bontoc pueblo. Nineteen men in twenty of Bontoc and Samoki have taken a human head, and it has been seen under what conditions and influences some of those heads were taken. An Igorot, whose confidence I believe I have, an old man who represents the knowledge and wisdom of the people, told me recently that if the Americans wanted the people of Bontoc to go out against a pueblo they would gladly go; and he added, suggestively, that when the Spaniards were there the old men had much better food than now, for many hogs were killed in the celebration of war expeditions—and the old men got the greater part of the meat. The Igorot is a natural head-hunter, and his training for the last sixty years seems to have done little more for him than whet this appetite.

SOMATOLOGY

MAN

The Bontoc men average about 5 feet 4⅛ inches in height, and have the appearance of being taller than they are. Again and again one is deceived by their height, and he repeatedly backs a 5-foot-7-inch Igorot up against a 6-foot American, vainly expecting the stature of the brown man to equal that of the white. Almost never does the Bontoc man appear heavy or thickset, as does his brother, the Benguet Igorot—the human pack horse seen so constantly on the San Fernando-Baguio trail—muscularly one of the most highly developed primitive people in the world to-day

Of thirty-two men measured from Bontoc and vicinity the shortest was 4 feet 9⅛ inches and the tallest was slightly more than 5 feet 9

inches. The following table presents the average measurements of the thirty-two men:

Average measurements of Bontoc men

	Measurements
	Cm.
Stature	160.287
Spread of arms	165.684
Head length	19.212
Head breadth	15.208
Cephalic index (per cent)	79.1328
Nasal length	5.25625
Nasal breadth	4.1625
Nasal index (per cent)	79.191

From these measurements it appears that the composite man—the average of the combined measurements of thirty-two men—is mesaticephalic. Among the thirty-two men the extremes of cephalic index are 91.48 and 67.48. This first measurement is of a young man between 20 and 25 years of age. It stands far removed from other measurements, the one nearest it being 86.78, that of a man about 60 years old. The other extreme is 67.48, the measure of a young man between 25 and 30 years of age. Among the thirty-two men, nine are brachycephalic—that is, their cephalic index is greater than 80; twenty of the thirty-two are mesaticephalic, with cephalic index between 75 and 80; and only three are dolichocephalic—that is, the cephalic index is below 75.

The nasal indexes of the thirty-two men show that the Bontoc man has the "medium" or mesorhine nose. They also show that one is very extremely platyrhine, the index being 104.54, and one is very leptorhine, being 58.18. Of the total, five are leptorhine—that is, have the "narrow" nose with nasal index below 70. Seventeen men are mesorhine, with the "medium" nose with nasal index between 70 and 85; and ten are platyrhine—that is, the noses are "broad," with an index greater than 85.

The Bontoc men are never corpulent, and, with the exception of the very old, they are seldom poor. During the period of a man's prime he is usually muscled to an excellent symmetry. His neck, never long, is well formed and strong and supports the head in erect position. His shoulders are broad, even, and full muscled, and with seeming ease carry transportation baskets laden with 75 to 100 pounds. His arms are smoothly developed and are about the same relative length as the American's. The hands are strong and short. The waist line is firm and smaller than the shoulders or hips. The buttocks usually appear heavy. His legs are generally straight; the thighs and calves are those of a prime pedestrian accustomed to long and frequent walks. The ankles are seldom thick; and the feet are broad and relatively short,

and, almost without exception, are placed on the ground straight ahead. He has the feet of a pedestrian—not the inturned feet of the constant bearer of heavy burdens on the back or the outturned feet of the man who sits or stands. The perfection of muscular development of two-thirds of the men of Bontoc between the ages of 25 and 30 would be the envy of the average college athlete in the States.

In color the men are brown, though there is a wide range of tone from a light brown with a strong saffron undertone to a very dark brown—as near a bronze as can well be imagined. The sun has more to do with the different color tones than has anything else, after which habits of personal cleanliness play a very large rôle. There are men in the Bontoc Igorot Constabulary of an extremely light-brown color, more saffron than brown, who have been wearing clothing for only one year. During the year the diet of the men in the Constabulary has been practically the same as that of their darker brothers among whom they were enlisted only twelve months ago. All the members of the Constabulary differ much more in color from the unclothed men than the unclothed differ among themselves. Man after man of these latter may pass under the eye without revealing a tint of saffron, yet there are many who show it faintly. The natural Igorot never washes himself clean. He washes frequently, but lacks the means of cleansing the skin, and the dirtier he is the more bronze-like he appears. At all times his face looks lighter and more saffron-tinted than the remainder of his body. There are two reasons for this—because the face is more often washed and because of its contrast with the black hair of the head.

The hair of the head is black, straight, coarse, and relatively abundant. It is worn long, frequently more than half way to the hips from the shoulders. The front is "banged" low and square across the forehead, cut with the battle-ax; this line of cut runs to above and somewhat back of the ear, the hair of the scalp below it being cut close to the head. When the men age, a few gray hairs appear, and some old men have heads of uniform iron-gray color. I have never seen a white-haired Igorot. A few of the old men have their hair thinning on the crown, but a tendency to baldness is by no means the rule.

Bontoc pueblo is no exception to the rule that every pueblo in the Philippines has a few people with curly or wavy hair. I doubt whether to-day an entire tribe of perfectly straight-haired primitive Malayan people exists in the Archipelago. Fu-nĭt is a curly-haired Bontoc man of about 45 years of age. Many people told me that his father and also his grandfather were members of the pueblo and had curly hair. I have never been able to find any hint at foreign or Negrito blood in any of the several curly haired people in the Bontoc culture area whose ancestors I have tried to discover.

The scanty growth of hair on the face of the Bontoc man is pulled

out. A small pebble and the thumb nail or the blade of the battle-ax and the bulb of the thumb are frequently used as forceps; they never cut the hair of the face. It is common to see men of all ages with a very sparse growth of hair on the upper lip or chin, and one of 50 years in Bontoc has a fairly heavy 4-inch growth of gray hair on his chin and throat; he is shown in Pl. XIII. Their bodies are quite free from hair. There is none on the breast, and seldom any on the legs. The pelvic growth is always pulled out by the unmarried. The growth in the armpits is scant, but is not removed.

The iris of the eye is brown—often rimmed with a lighter or darker ring. The brown of the iris ranges from nearly black to a soft hazel brown. The cornea is frequently blotched with red or yellow. The Malayan fold of the upper eyelid is seen in a large majority of the men, the fold being so low that it hangs over and hides the roots of the lashes. The lashes appear to grow from behind the lid rather than from its rim.

The teeth are large and strong, and, whereas in old age they frequently become few and discolored, during prime they are often white and clean. The people never artificially stain the teeth, and, though surrounded by betel-nut chewers with dark teeth or red-stained lips, they do not use the betel.

Since the Igorot keeps no record of years, it is impossible to know his age, but it is believed that sufficient comparative data have been collected in Bontoc to make the following estimates reliable:

At the age of 20 a man seems hardly to have reached his physical best; this he attains, however, before he is 25. By 35 he begins to show the marks of age. By 45 most of the men are fast getting "old"; their faces are seamed, their muscles losing form, their carriage less erect, and the step slower. By 55 all are old—most are bent and thin. Probably not over one or two in a hundred mature men live to be 70 years old.

The following census taken from a Spanish manuscript found in Quiangan, and written in 1894, may be taken as representative of an average Igorot pueblo:

Census of Magulang, district of Quiangan

Years	Females	Males
0 to 1	191	200
1 to 5	209	210
5 to 10	144	123
10 to 15	132	159
15 to 20	129	114
20 to 30	121	134
30 to 40	212	239
40 to 50	118	126
50 and over	79	62
Total	1,335	1,367

From this census it seems that the Magulang Igorot man is at his prime between the ages of 30 and 40 years, and that the death rate for men between the ages of 40 and 50 is nearly as great as the death rate among children between 5 to 10 years of age, being 52.7 per cent. Beyond the age of 50 collapse is sudden, since all the men more than 50 years old are less than half the number of those between the ages of 40 and 50 years.

WOMAN

The women average 4 feet 9⅜ inches in height. In appearance they are short and stocky. Twenty-nine women from Bontoc and vicinity were measured; the tallest was 5 feet 4¾ inches, and the shortest 4 feet 4¾ inches. The following table presents the average measurements of twenty-nine women:

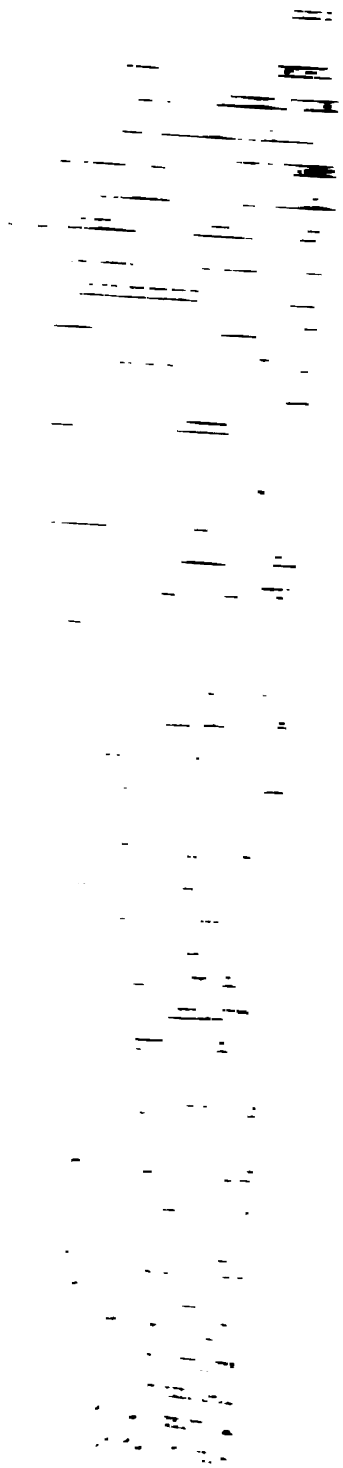
Average measurements of Bontoc women

	Measurements
	Cm.
Stature	145.800
Spread of arms	149.603
Head length	18.593
Head breadth	14.706
Cephalic index (per cent)	79.094
Nasal length	4.582
Nasal breadth	3.606
Nasal index (per cent)	78.744

These measurements show that the composite woman—the average of the measurements of twenty-nine women—is mesaticephalic. The extremes of cephalic index are 87.64 and 64.89; both are measurements of women about 35 years of age. Of the twenty-nine women twelve are brachycephalic; twelve are mesaticephalic; and five are dolichocephalic.

The Bontoc woman has a "medium," or mesorhine, nose, as is shown by the above figures. Four of the twenty-nine women have the "narrow" leptorhine nose with nasal index below 70; seven have platyrhine or the "broad" nose with index greater than 85; while seventeen have the "medium" or mesorhine nose with nasal index between 70 and 85. The broadest nose has an index of 97.56, and the narrowest an index of 58.53.

The women reach the age of maturity well prepared for its responsibilities. They have more adipose tissue than the men, yet are never fat. The head is carried erect, but with a certain stiffness—often due, in part, no doubt, to shyness, and in part to the fact that they carry all their burdens on their heads. I believe the neck more often appears short than does the neck of the man. The shoulders are broad, and



body. An old woman, say, at 50, is a mass of wrinkles from foot to forehead; the arms and legs lose their plumpness, the skin is "bagged" at the knees into half a dozen large folds; and the disappearance of adipose tissue from the trunk—front, sides, and back—has left the skin not only wrinkled but loose and flabby, folding over the girdle at the waist.

The census of Magulang, page 42, should be again referred to, from which it appears that the death rate among women is greater between the ages of 40 and 50 years than it is with men, being 55.66 per cent. The census shows also that there are relatively a larger number of old women—that is, over 50 years old—than there are old men.

CHILD

The death rate among children is large. Of fifteen families in Bontoc, each having had three or more children, the death rate up to the age of puberty was over 60 per cent. According to the Magulang census the death rate of children from 5 to 10 years of age is 63.73 per cent.

The new-born babe is as light in color as the average American babe, and is much less red, instead of which color there is the slightest tint of saffron. As the babe lies naked on its mother's naked breast the light color is most strikingly apparent by contrast. The darker color, the brown, gradually comes, however, as the babe is exposed to the sun and wind, until the child of a year or two carried on its mother's back is practically one with the mother in color.

Some of the babes, perhaps all, are born with an abundance of dark hair on the head. A child's hair is never cut, except that from about the age of 3 years the boy's hair is "banged" across the forehead. Fully 30 per cent of children up to 5 or 6 years of age have brown hair—due largely to fading, as the outer is much lighter than the under hair. In rare cases the lighter brown hair assumes a distinctly red cast, though a faded lifeless red. Before puberty is reached, however, all children have glossy black hair.

The iris of a new-born babe is sometimes a blue brown; it is decidedly a different brown from that of the adult or of the child of five years. Most children have the Malayan fold of the eyelid; the lower lid is often much straighter than it is on the average American. When, in addition to these conditions, the outer corner of the eye is higher than the inner, the eye is somewhat Mongolian in appearance. About one-fifth of the children in Bontoc have this Mongolian-like eye, though it is rarer among adults—a fact due, in part, apparently, to the down curving and sagging of the lower lid as one's prime is reached and passed.

Children's teeth are clean and white, and very generally remain so until maturity.

The child from 1 to 3 years of age is plump and chubby; his front

is full and rounded, but lacks the extra abdominal development so common with the children of the lowlands, and which has received from the American the popular name of "banana belly." By the age of 7 the child has lost its plump, rounded form, which is never again had by the boys but is attained by the girls again early in puberty. During these last half dozen years of childhood all children are slender and agile and wonderfully attractive in their naturalness. Both girls and boys reach puberty at a later time than would be expected, though data can not be gathered to determine accurately the age at puberty. All the Ilokano in Bontoc pueblo consistently maintain that girls do not reach puberty until at least 16 and 17 years of age. Perhaps it is arrived at by 14 or 15, but I feel certain it is not as early as 12 or 13—a condition one might expect to find among people in the tropics.

PATHOLOGY

The most serious permanent physical affliction the Bontoc Igorot suffers is blindness. Fully 2 per cent of the people both of Bontoc and her sister pueblo, Samoki, are blind; probably 2 per cent more are partially so. Bontoc has one blind boy only 3 years old, but I know of no other blind children; and it is claimed that no babes are born blind. There is one woman in Bontoc approaching 20 years of age who is nearly blind, and whose mother and older sister are blind. Blindness is very common among the old people, and seems to come on with the general breaking down of the body.

A few of the people say their blindness is due to the smoke in their dwellings. This doubtless has much to do with the infirmity, as their private and public buildings are very smoky much of the time, and when the nights are at all chilly a fire is built in their closed, low, and chimneyless sleeping rooms. There are many persons with inflamed and granulated eyelids whose vision is little or not at all impaired—a forerunner of blindness probably often caused by smoke.

Twenty per cent of the adults have abnormal feet. The most common and most striking abnormality is that known as "fa′-wĭng"; it is an inturning of the great toe. Fa′-wĭng occurs in all stages from the slightest spreading to that approximating forty-five degress. It is found widely scattered among the barefoot mountain tribes of northern Luzon. The people say it is due to mountain climbing, and their explanation is probably correct, as the great toe is used much as is a claw in securing a footing on the slippery, steep trails during the rainy reason. Fa′-wĭng occurs quite as commonly with women as with men, and in Ambuklao, Benguet Province, I saw a boy of 8 or 9 years whose great toes were spread half as much as those shown in Pl. XXV. This deformity occurs on one or both feet, but generally on both if at all.

[redacted]rg[redacted]ent of the basal joint of the great toe, probably a bunion, [redacted]ively common. It is not improbable that it is often

caused by stone bruises, as such are of frequent occurrence; they are sometimes very serious, laying a person up ten days at a time.

The feet of adults who work in the water-filled rice paddies are dry, seamed, and cracked on the bottoms. These "rice-paddy feet," called "fung-as'," are often so sore that the person can not go on the trails for any considerable distance.

I believe not 5 per cent of the people are without eruptions of the skin. It is practically impossible to find an adult whose body is not marked with shiny patches showing where large eruptions have been. Babes of one or two months do not appear to have skin diseases, but those of three and four are sometimes half covered with itching, discharging eruptions. Babes under a year old, such as are most carried on their mother's backs, are especially subject to a mass of sores about the ankles; the skin disease is itch, called ku'-lĭd. I have seen babes of this age with sores an inch across and nearly an inch deep in their backs.

Relatively there are few large sores on the people such as boils and ulcers, but a person may have a dozen or half a hundred itching eruptions the size of a half pea scattered over his arms, legs, and trunk. From these he habitually squeezes the pus onto his thumb nail, and at once ignorantly cleans the nail on some other part of the body. The general prevalence of this itch is largely due to the gregarious life of the people—to the fact that the males lounge in public quarters, and all, except married men and women, sleep in these same quarters where the naked skin readily takes up virus left on the stone seats and sleeping boards by an infected companion. In Banawi, in the Quiangan culture area, a district having no public buildings, one can scarcely find a trace of skin eruption.

There are two adult people in Samoki pueblo who are insane; one of them at least is supposed to be affected by Lumawig, the Igorot god, and is said, when he hallooes, as he does at times, to be calling to Lumawig. Bontoc pueblo has a young woman and a girl of five or six years of age who are imbecile. These four people are practically incapacitated from earning a living, and are cared for by their immediate relatives. There are two adult deaf and dumb men in Bontoc pueblo, but both are industrious and self-supporting.

Igorot badly injured in war or elsewhere are usually killed at their own request. In May, 1903, a man from Maligkong was thrown to the earth and rendered unconscious by a heavy timber he and several companions brought to Bontoc for the school building. His companions immediately told Captain Eckman to shoot him as he was "no good." I can not say whether it is customary for the Igorot to weed out those who faint temporarily—as the fact just cited suggests; however, they do not kill the feeble aged, and the presence of the insane and the imbecile shows that weak members of the group are not always destroyed voluntarily.

is full and rounded, but la
common with the children of
the American the popular na
the child has lost its plump, r
the boys but is attained by t
these last half dozen years o
agile and wonderfully attra
and boys reach puberty at a l
data can not be gathered to
All the Ilokano in Bontoc p
not reach puberty until at lea
arrived at by 14 or 15, but I f
a condition one might expect

The most serious permanc
suffers is blindness. Fully 2
her sister pueblo, Samoki, a
partially so. Bontoc has one
of no other blind children; and
There is one woman in Bontoc
blind, and whose mother and
common among the old peopl
breaking down of the body.

A few of the people say th
dwellings. This doubtless ha
private and public buildings
when the nights are at all chil
chimneyless sleeping rooms.
and granulated eyelids whose
a forerunner of blindness pro

Twenty per cent of the adul
and most striking abnormalit
inturning of the great toe.
slightest spreading to that app
widely scattered among the ba
The people say it is due to n
is probably correct, as the grea
a footing on the slippery, steep
occurs quite as commonly witl
Benguet Province, I saw a bo
spread half as much as thos
occurs on one or both feet, but

An enlargement of the basal
is also comparatively common

III

L LIFE

tials typical of pueblos in
a roughly circular pocket
mile in diameter might be
rly accurately by the Chico
rtheast. Its altitude ranges
the upper edge of Bontoc
ntain ridge at the west,
te ridge to the southeast.
siderably closer to Samoki

at the northeast, where
gap are two ranges of
is another cut, through
am. At the southwest
ws in the horizon, as
of mountains folds

of ground, roughly
wo water-cut ravines,
in the rainy season,
ar, sufficient water

two small groves
Granaries for
s, and in places
ueblo. The old,
outh and east,
by the river.
houses built
men with
Government

TRIPLICATE.

PHILIPPINE JOURNAL OF SCIENCE 4695

PUBLISHED BY THE

BUREAU OF SCIENCE,

MANILA, P. I.

August 15, 1910

ng Department:

Please forward the publications indicated below to

Mr. J.R. Wilson,
Assistant Director of Lands,
Manila, P.I.

ORDER NUMBERS.

No. 401 (paper)

PHILIPPINE JOURNAL OF SCIENCE.

I.
II.
III.
IV.
V.

In case of error return this slip.

BUSINESS MANAGER, *Philippine Journal of Science.*

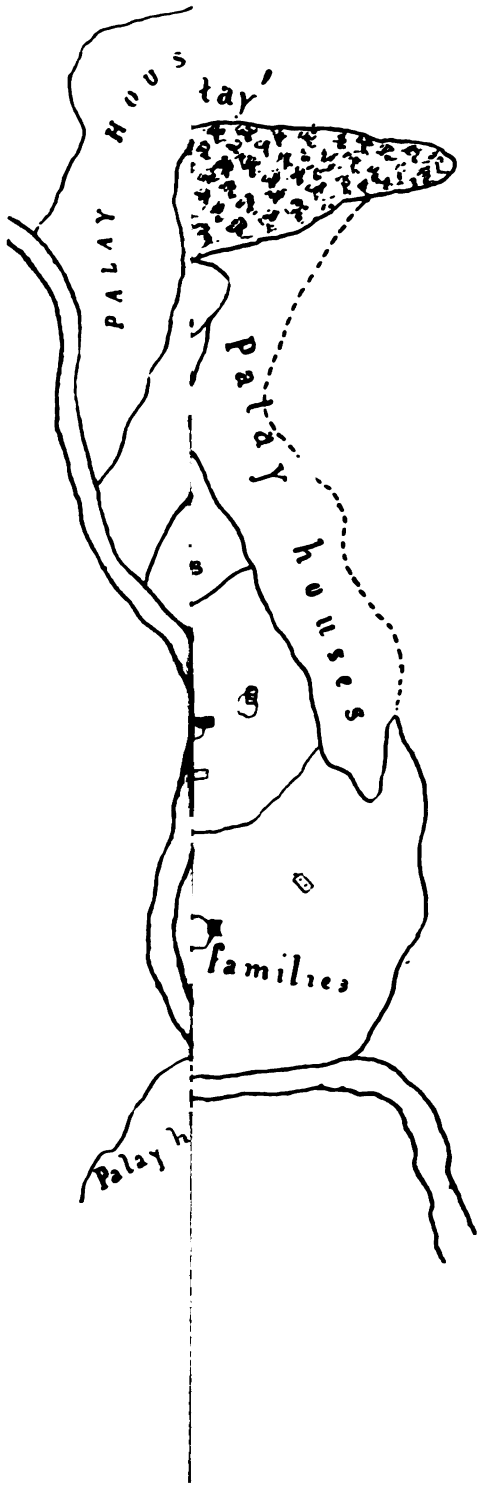
7m-2

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXVI. BONTOC PUEBLO VIEWED FROM SAMOKI.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXVII. SAMOKI PUEBLO VIEWED FROM BONTOC.


PALAY HOUS
tay'
Palay houses
families
Palay h

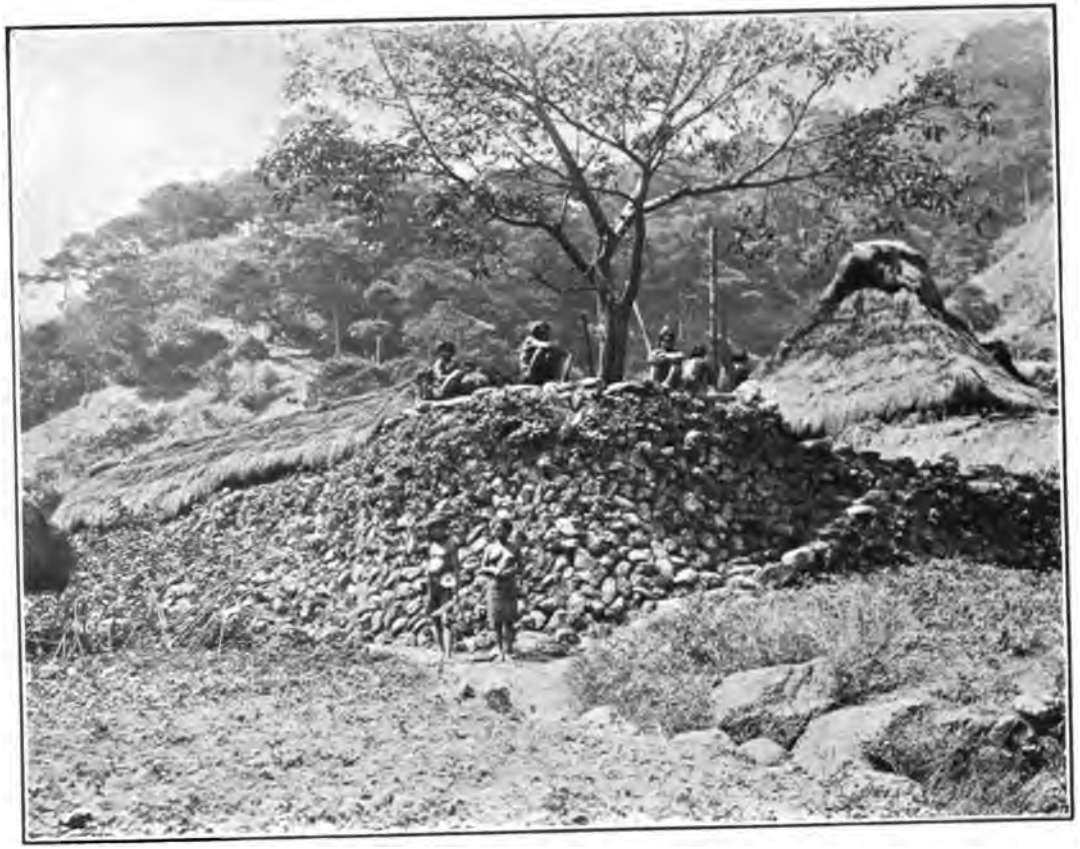


Photo by Worcester.

PLATE XXX. PA-BA-FU'-NAN OF A'-TO FI'-LIG̃.

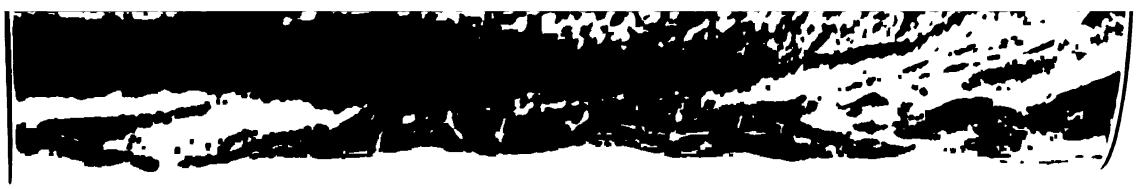


Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXII. FA'-WI OF A'-TO CHO'-KO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXIII. O'-LÂQ.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXIV. BONTOC DWELLING, THE FAY'-Ü.

buildings, reduced to a church, a convent, and another building used now as headquarters for the Government Constabulary.

The pueblo, now 2,000 or 2,500 people, was probably at one time larger. There is a tradition common in both Bontoc and Samoki that in former years the ancestors of this latter pueblo lived northeast of Bontoc toward the northern corner of the pocket. They say they moved to the opposite side of the river because there they would have more room. There they have grown to 1,200 or 1,500 souls. Still later, but yet before the Spanish came, a large section of people from northeastern Bontoc moved bodily to Lias, about two days to the east. They tell that a Bontoc woman named Fank'-a was the wife of a Lias man, and when a drought and famine visited Bontoc the section of the pueblo from which she came moved as a whole to Lias, then a small collection of people. Still later, La'-nao, a detached section of Bontoc on the lowland near the river, was suddenly wiped out by a disease.

The Igorot is given to naming even small areas of the earth within his well-known habitat, and there are four areas in Bontoc pueblo having distinct names. These names in no way refer to political or social divisions—they are not the "barrio" of the coast pueblos of the Islands, neither are they in any way like a "ward" in an American city, nor are they "additions" to an original part of the pueblo—they are names of geographic areas over which the pueblo was built or has spread. From south to north these areas are A-fu', Mag-e'-o, Dao'-wi, and Um-fĕg'.

ATO

Bontoc is composed of seventeen political divisions, called "a'-to." The geographic area of A-fu' contains four a'-to, namely, Fa-tay'-yan, Po-lup-o', Am-ka'-wa, and Bu-yay'-yĕng; Mag-e'-o contains three, namely, Fi'-lĭg, Mag-e'-o, and Cha-kong'; Dao'-wi has six, namely, Lo-wĭng'-an, Pud-pud-chog', Si-pa'-at, Si-gi-chan', So-mo-wan', and Long-foy'; Um-fĕg' has four, Po-ki'-san, Lu-wa'-kan, Ung-kan', and Cho'-ko. Each a'-to is a separate political division. It has its public buildings; has a separate governing council which makes peace, challenges to war, and accepts or rejects war challenges, and it formally releases and adopts men who change residence from one a'-to to another.

Border a'-to Fa-tay'-yan seems to be developing an offspring—a new a'-to; a part of it, the southwestern border part, is now known as "Tang-e-ao'." It is disclaimed as a separate a'-to, yet it has a distinctive name, and possesses some of the marks of an independent a'-to. In due time it will doubtless become such.

In Sagada, Agawa, Takong, and near-by pueblos the a'-to is said to be known as dap'-ay; and in Balili and Alap both names are known.

The pueblo must be studied entirely through the a'-to. It is only

an aggregate of which the various a′-to are the units, and all the pueblo life there is is due to the similarity of interests of the several a′-to.

Bontoc does not know when her pueblo was built—she was always where she now is—but they say that some of the a′-to are newer than others. In fact, they divide them into the old and new. The newer ones are Bu-yay′-yĕng, Am-ka′-wa, Po-lup-o′, Cha-kong′, and Po-ki′-san; all these are border a′-to of the pueblo.

The generations of descendants of men who did distinct things are kept carefully in memory; and from the list of descendants of the builders of some of the newer a′-to it seems probable that Cha-kong′ was the last one built. One of the builders was Sal-lu-yud′; he had a son named Tam-bul′, and Tam-bul′ was the father of a man in Bontoc now some twenty-five years old. It is probable that Cha-kong′ was built about 1830—in the neighborhood of seventy-five years ago. The plat of the pueblo seems to strengthen the impression that Cha-kong′ is the newest a′-to, since it appears to have been built in territory previously used for rice granaries; it is all but surrounded by such ground now.

One of the builders of Bu-yay′-yĕng, an a′-to adjoining Cha-kong′, and also one of the newer ones, was Ba-la-ge′. Ba-la-ge′ was the great-great-great-grandfather of Mud-do′, who is a middle-aged man now in Bontoc. The generations of fathers descending from Ba-la-ge′ to Mud-do′ are the following: Bang-ĕg′, Cag-i′-yu, Bĭt-e′, and Ag-kus′. It seems from this evidence that the a′-to Bu-yay′-yĕng was built about one hundred and fifty years ago. These facts suggest a much greater age for the older a′-to of the pueblo.

An a′-to has three classes of buildings occupied by the people—the fawi and pabafunan, public structures for boys and men, and the olag for girls and young women before their permanent marriage; and the dwellings occupied by families and by widows, which are called afong. Each of these three classes of buildings plays a distinct rôle in the life of the people.

PABAFUNAN AND FAWI

The pa-ba-fu′-nan is the home of the various a′-to ceremonials. It is sacred to the men of the a′-to, and on no occasion do the women or girls enter it.

All boys from 3 or 4 years of age and all men who have no wives sleep nightly in the pa-ba-fu′-nan or in the fa′-wi.

The pa-ba-fu′-nan building consists of a low, squat, stone-sided structure partly covered with a grass roof laid on a crude frame of poles; the stone walls extend beyond the roof at one end and form an open court. The roofed part is about 8 by 10 feet, and usually is not over 5 feet high in any part, inside measure; the size of the court is approximately the same as that of the roofed section. In some pa-ba-fu′-nan a part of the court is roofed over for shelter in case of rain, but is

not walled in. Under this roof skulls of dogs and hogs are generally found tucked away. Carabao horns and chicken feathers are also commonly seen in such places.

In many cases the open court is shaded by a tree. Posts are found reared above most of the courts. Some are old and blackened; others are all but gone—a short stump being all that projects above the earth. The tops of some posts are rudely carved to represent a human head; on the tops of others, as in a'-to Lowingan and Sipaat, there are stones which strikingly resemble human skulls. It is to the tops of these posts that the enemy's head is attached when a victorious warrior returns to his a'-to. Both the roofed and court sections are paved with stone, and large stones are also arranged around the sides of the court, some more or less elevated as seats; they are worn smooth and shiny by generations of use. In the center of the court is the smouldering remains of a fire. The only opening into the covered part is a small doorway connecting it with the court. This door is barely large enough to permit a man to squeeze in sidewise; it is often not over 2½ feet high and 10 inches wide. The occupants of the pa-ba-fu'-nan usually sleep curled up naked on the smooth, flat stones. A few people have runo slat mats, some of which roll up, while others are inflexible, and they lie on these over the stone pavement. Fires are built in all sleeping rooms when it is cold, and the rooms all close tightly with a door.

In the court of the building the men lounge when not at work in the fields; they sleep, or smoke and chat, tend babies, or make utensils and weapons. The pa-ba-fu'-nan is the man's club by day, and the unmarried man's dormitory by night, and, as such, it is the social center for all men of the a'-to, and it harbors at night all men visiting from other pueblos.

Each a'-to, except Chakong, has a pa-ba-fu'-nan. When the men of Chakong were building theirs they met the pueblo of Sadanga in combat, and one of the builders lost his head to Sadanga. Then the old men of Chakong counciled together; they came to the conclusion that it was bad for the a'-to to have a pa-ba-fu'-nan, and none has ever been built. This absence of the pa-ba-fu'-nan in some way detracts from the importance of the a'-to in the minds of the people. For instance, in the early stages of this study I was told several times that there are sixteen (and not seventeen) a'-to in Bontoc. The first list of a'-to written did not include Chakong; it was discovered only when the pueblo was platted, and at that time my informants sought to pass it over by saying "It is Chakong, but it has no pa-ba-fu'-nan." The explanation of the obscurity of Chakong in the minds of the Igorot seems to be that the a'-to ceremonial is more important than the a'-to council—that the emotional and not the mental is held uppermost, that the people of Bontoc flow together through feeling better than they drive together through cold force or control.

an aggregate of which the various a′-to are the units, and all life there is is due to the similarity of interests of the sev

Bontoc does not know when her pueblo was built—sh where she now is—but they say that some of the a′-to a others. In fact, they divide them into the old and ne ones are Bu-yay′-yĕng, Am-ka′-wa, Po-lup-o′, Cha-kong′, all these are border a′-to of the pueblo.

The generations of descendants of men who did d kept carefully in memory; and from the list of descend ers of some of the newer a′-to it seems probable th the last one built. One of the builders was Sal-lu- named Tam-bul′, and Tam-bul′ was the father of a some twenty-five years old. It is probable that about 1830—in the neighborhood of seventy-five of the pueblo seems to strengthen the impress the newest a′-to, since it appears to have been buil used for rice granaries; it is all but surrounde

One of the builders of Bu-yay′-yĕng, an a′- and also one of the newer ones, was Ba-la-ge′. great-great-grandfather of Mud-do′, who is a Bontoc. The generations of fathers descendi do′ are the following: Bang-ĕg′, Cag-i′-yu, Bi from this evidence that the a′-to Bu-yay′-yĕ dred and fifty years ago. These facts sugge older a′-to of the pueblo.

An a′-to has three classes of building fawi and pabafunan, public structure olag for girls and young women before the dwellings occupied by families a afong. Each of these three classes in the life of the people.

PABAFUNAN

The pa-ba-fu′-nan is the home of is sacred to the men of the a′-to, girls enter it.

All boys from 3 or 4 years o sleep nightly in the pa-ba-fu′-n

The pa-ba-fu′-nan building c ture partly covered with a gr the stone walls extend beyon court. The roofed part is a 5 feet high in any part, insid mately the same as that of a part of the court is roof

OLAG

The o′-lâg is the dormitory of the girls in an a′-to from the age of about 2 years until they marry. It is a small stone and mud-walled structure, roofed with grass, in which a grown person can seldom

"The young men's hall is variously described and named. An article in the Journal of the Indian Archipelago, 1848, says that among the Nágás the bachelors' hall of the Dayak village is found under the name of 'Mooring.' In this all the boys of the age of 9 or 10 upward reside apart. In a report of 1854 the 'morungs' are described as large buildings generally situated at the principal entrances and varying in number according to the size of the village; they are in fact the main guardhouse, and here all the young unmarried men sleep. In front of the morung is a raised platform as a lookout, commanding an extensive view of all approaches, where a Nágá is always kept on duty as a sentry. * * * In the Morungs are kept skulls carried off in battle; these are suspended by a string along the wall in one or more rows over each other. In one of the Morungs of the Changuae village, Captain Brodie counted one hundred and thirty skulls. * * * Besides these there was a large basket full of broken pieces of skulls. Captain Holroyd, from whose memorandum the above is quoted, speaks later of the Morung as the 'hall of justice' in which the consultations of the clan council * * * are held. * * *

"The *'Morangs'* of another tribe, the 'Naked' Nágá, have recently been described as situated close to the village gate, and consist of a central hall, and back and front verandas. In the large front veranda are collected all the trophies of war and the chase, from a man's skull down to a monkey's. Along both sides of the central hall are the sleeping berths of the young men. * * *

"Speaking of the Mao and Muran tribes [continues Miss Godden], Dr. Brown says, 'the young men never sleep at home, but at their clubs, where they keep their arms always in a state of readiness.' * * *

"With the Aos at the present day the custom seems to be becoming obsolete; sleeping houses are provided for bachelors, but are seldom used except by small boys. Unmarried girls sleep by twos and threes in houses otherwise empty, or else tenanted by one old woman.

"The analogy between the *Dakha Chang*, or *Morang*, of the Nágás and the men's hall of the Melanesians is too close to be overlooked, and in view of the significance of all evidence concerning the corporate life of early communities a description of the latter is here quoted. I am aware of no recorded instance of the women's house, other than these Nágá examples. 'In all the Melanesian groups it is the rule that there is in every village a building of public character where the men eat and spend their time, the young men sleep, strangers are entertained; where as in the Solomon Islands the canoes are kept; where images are seen, and from which women are generally excluded; * * * and all these no doubt correspond to the *balai* and other public halls of the Malay Archipelago.' "—Op. cit., vol. XXVI, pp. 179-182.

Similar institutions appear to exist also in Sumatra.

In Borneo among the Land Dyaks "head houses," called "pangah," are found in each village. Low says of them: "The Pangah is built by the united efforts of the boys and unmarried men of the tribe, who, after having attained the age of puberty, are obliged to leave the houses of the village; and do not generally frequent them after they have attained the age of 8 or 9 years."—Sir Hugh Low, Sarawak, Its Inhabitants and Productions (London, 1848), p. 280.

Lieutenant F. Elton writes of the natives of Solomon Islands: "In every village they have at least one so-called tamboo house of *tohe*, generally the largest building in the settlement. This is only for the men, it being death for a female to enter there. It is used as a public place and belongs to the community. Any stranger coming to the village goes to the tamboo house and remains there until the person he is in quest of meets him there."—The Journal of the Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, vol. XVII, p. 97.

Mr. H. O. Forbes writes of the tribes of Timor (islands between New Guinea and Australia) that they have a building called "Uma-lulik." He says: "The *lulik* can be at once recognized, were it by nothing else than by the buffalo crania with which it is decorated on the outside. An officer who holds one of the highest and certainly the most influential positions in the kingdom has charge of the building, and presides over the sacred rites which are conducted in them. * * * The building is cared for by some old person, sometimes by a man and his wife, but they must not both—being of opposite sex—stay all night."—Op. cit., XIII, pp. 411, 412.

stand erect. It has but a single opening—a door some 30 inches high and 10 inches wide. Occupying nearly all the floor space are boards about 4 feet long and from 8 to 14 inches wide; each board is a girl's bed. They are placed close together, side by side, laid on a frame about a foot above the earth. One end, where the head rests, is slightly higher that the other, while in most o'-lâg a pole for a foot rest runs along the foot of the beds a few inches from them. The building as shown in Pl. XXXIII is typical of the nineteen found in Bontoc pueblo—though it does not show, what is almost invariably true, that it is built over one or more pigsties. This condition is illustrated in Pl. XXIX, where a widow's house is shown literally resting above the stone walls of several sties. Unlike the fawi and pabafunan, the o'-lâg has no adjoining court, and no shady surroundings. It is built to house the occupants only at night.

The o'-lâg is not so distinctly an ato institution as the pabafunan and fawi. Ato Ungkan never had an o'-lâg. The demand is not so urgent as that of some ato, since there are only thirteen families in Ungkan. The girls occupy o'-lâg of neighboring ato.

The o'-lâg of Luwakan, of Lowingan, and of Sipaat (the last situated in Lowingan) are broken down and unused at present. There are no marriageable girls in any of these three ato now, and the small girls occupy near-by o'-lâg. These three o'-lâg will be rebuilt when the girls are large enough to cook food for the men who build. The o'-lâg of Amkawa is in Buyayyeng near the o'-lâg of the latter; it is there by choice of the occupants.

Mageo, with her twenty families, also has two o'-lâg, but both are situated in Pudpudchog.

The o'-lâg is the only Igorot building which has received a specific name, all others bear simply the class name.[1]

In Sagada and some nearby pueblos, as Takong and Agawa, the o'-lâg is said to be called Ĭf-gan'.

Mr. S. H. Damant is quoted from the Calcutta Review (vol. 61, p. 93) as saying that among the Năgăs, frontier tribes of northeast India—

> Only very young children live entirely with their parents; * * * the women have also a house of their own called the "dekhi chang," where the unmarried girls are supposed to live.

[1] The o'-lâg of Buyayyeng is known as La-ma'-kan; that of Amkawa, in Buyayyeng, is Ma-fa'-lat; that of Polupo is Ma-lu-fan'. The two of Fatayyan are Ka-lang'-kang and A-la'-ti. Ta-ting' is the o'-lâg in the Tang-e-ao' section of Fatayyan. Chung-ma' is the one in Filig. Lang-i-a' and Ab-lo' are the two of Mageo, both in Pudpudchog. The o'-lâg of Chakong is called Kat'-sa, and that of Lowingan is Si-mang'-an. The one of Pudpudchog is Yûd-ka'. Sung-ub' is the o'-lâg of Sipaat, situated in Lowingan. Kay-pa', Tek-a-ling, and Sak-a-ya' are, respectively, the o'-lâg of Sigichan, Somowan, and Pokisan. Ag-lay'-in is the o'-lâg of Luwakan, and Tal-pug and Say-ki'-pit are o'-lâg of Choko and Longfoy, respectively.

Again Mr. Damant wrote:

"saw Dekhi chang here for the first time. All the unmarried girls sleep there ht, but it is deserted in the day. It is not much different from any ordinary

sleeping houses for girls similar to the o'-lâg, I judge, are casionally in Assam.[2]

far as known, the o'-lâg occurs with the Igorot only ntoc culture group, yet the above quotations and references milar institution among distant people—among some of the who have an institution very similar to the pabafunan

AFONG

g is the general name for Bontoc dwellings, of which there kinds. The first is the fay'-ü (Pls. XXXIV and XXXVI), ge, open, board dwelling, some 12 by 15 feet square, with alls only 3½ feet high, and having a tall, top-heavy grass roof. the home of the prosperous. The other is the kat-yu'-fong XXXVII), the smaller, closed, frequently mud-walled dwelling oor families, and commonly of the widows.

The family dwelling primarily serves two purposes—it is the place ere the man, his wife, and small child sleep, and where the entire mily takes its food.

The fay'-ü is built at considerable expense. Three or four men are required for a period of about two months to get out the pine boards and timbers in the forest. Each piece of timber for any permanent building is completed at the time it is cut from the tree, and is left to season in the mountains; sometimes it remains several years. (See Pl. XXXV.) When all is ready to construct the dwelling the owner announces his intention. Some 200 men of the pueblo gather to erect the building, and two or three dozen women come to prepare and cook the necessary food, for, whereas no wage is paid the laborers, all are feasted at the cost of much rice and several hogs and a carabao or two. The toiling and feasting continue about ten days.

The following description of a fay'-ü is of an ordinary dwelling in Bontoc pueblo: The fay'-ü are all constructed on the same plan, though a few are larger than the one here described, and some few are smaller. The front and back walls of the house are 3 feet 6 inches high and 12 feet 6 inches long. The two side walls are the same height as the ends, but are 15 feet 6 inches long. The rear wall is built of stones carefully chinked with mud. The side walls consist each of two boards extending the full length of the structure. The front wall is cut near the middle

[1] The Journal of The Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, vol. XXVI, pp. 179, 180.

[2] Op. cit., vol. XXII, p. 248.

from top to bottom with a doorway 1 foot 4 inches wide; otherwise the front wall is like the two side walls, except that it has a roughly triangular timber grooved along the lower side and fitted over the top board as a cap. The doorposts are two timbers sunk in the ground; their tops fit into the two "caps," and each has a groove from top to bottom into which the ends of the boards of the front wall are inserted. A few dwellings have a door consisting of a single board set on end and swinging on a projection sunk in a hole in a doorsill buried in the earth; the upper part of the door swings on a string secured to the doorpost and passing through a hole in the door.

At each of the four corners of the building, immediately inside the walls, is a post set in the ground and standing 6 feet 9 inches high. The boards of the walls are tied to these corner posts, and the greater part of the weight of the roof rests on their tops. Four other posts, also planted in the ground and about as high as the corner posts, stand about 4 feet inside the walls of the house equidistant from the corner post and marking the corners of a rectangle about 5½ feet square. They directly support the second story of the building.

There is no floor except the earth in the first story of the Bontoc dwelling, and from the door at the front of the building to the two rear posts of the four central ones there is an unobstructed passage or aisle called "cha-la'-nan." At one's left, as he enters the door, is a small room called "chap-an'" 5½ feet square separated from the aisle by a row of low stones partially sunk in the earth. The earth in this room is excavated so that the floor is about 1 foot lower than that of the remainder of the building, and in its center the peculiar double wooden rice mortar is imbedded in the earth. It is in the chap-an' that the family rice and millet is threshed. At the left of the aisle and immediately beyond the chap-an', separated from it by a board partition the same height as the outside walls of the house, is the cooking room, called "cha-le-ka-nan' si mo-o'-to." It is approximately the same size as the threshing room. There are neither boards nor stones to cut this cooking room off from the open aisle of the house, but its width is determined by a low pile of stones built along its farther side from the outer house wall toward the aisle and ending at the rear left post of the four central ones. In the face of this stone wall are three concavities—fireplaces over which cooking pots are placed. Arranged along the outer wall, and about 2 feet high, is a board shelf on which the water jars are kept.

At the right of the aisle, as one enters the building, is a broad shelf about 12 feet long; in width it extends from the side wall to the two right central posts. On this shelf, called "chûk'-so," are placed the various baskets and other utensils and implements of everyday use. Beneath it are stored the small cages or coops in which the chickens

sleep at night. There are a few fay'-ü in Bontoc in which the threshing room and cooking room are on the right of the aisle and the long bench is on the left, but they are very rare exceptions.

In the rear of the building is a board partition apparently extending from one side wall to the other. The bench at the right of the aisle ends against this partition, and on the left the stone fireplaces are built against it. This rear section is covered over with boards at the height of the outside wall, so that a low box is formed, 3½ feet high and 4¼ feet wide. At the rear of the aisle a door 3 feet high and 1 foot 4 inches wide swings into this rear apartment, which, when the door is again closed, is as black as night. An examination of the inside of this section shows it to be entirely walled with stones except where the narrow door cuts it. By inside measure it is only 3 feet 6 inches wide and 6 feet 6 inches long. This is the sleeping apartment, and is called ang-an'. As one crawls into this kennel he is likely to place his hands among ashes and charred sticks which mark the place for a fire on cold nights. The left end of the ang-an' contains two boards or beds for the man and his wife. Each board is about 18 inches wide and 4 feet long; they are raised 2 or 3 inches from the earth, and the head of the bed is slightly higher than the foot. A pole is laid across the apartment at the lower end of the sleeping boards, and on this the occupants rest their feet and toast them before the small fire. At both ends of the ang-an', outside the store walls, is a small hidden secret space called "kûb-kûb," in which the family hides many of its choice possessions. During abundant camote gathering, however, I have seen the kûb-kûb filled with camotes. I should probably not have discovered these spaces had there not been so great a discrepancy between the inside measure of the sleeping room and width of the building.

I know of no other primitive dwellings in the Philippines than the ones in the Bontoc culture area which are built directly on the ground. Most of them are raised on posts several feet from the earth. Some few have side walls extending to the ground, but even those have a floor raised 2, 3, or more feet from the ground and which is reached by means of a short ladder.

The second story of the Bontoc dwelling is supported on the four central posts. On all sides it projects beyond them, so that it is about 7 feet square; it is about 5 feet high. A door enters the second story directly from the aisle, and is reached by an 8-foot ladder. This second story is constructed, floor and side walls, of boards. The side walls cease at about the height of 2 feet where a horizontal shelf is built on them extending outside of them to the roof. It is about 2 feet wide and is usually stored with unthreshed rice and millet or with jars of preserved meats. Just at the left on the floor, as one enters the second story, is an earth-filled square corner walled in by two poles. On this

earth are three stones—the fireplace, where each year a chicken is cooked in a household ceremony at the close of rice harvests.

Rising above the second story is a third. In the smaller dwellings this third story is only an attic of the second, but in the larger buildings it is an independent story. To be sure, it is entered through the floor, but a ladder is used, and its floor is of strong heavy boards. It is at all times a storeroom, usually only for cereals. In the smaller houses it amounts simply to a broad shelf about the height of one's waist as he stands on the floor of the second story and his head and upper body rise through the hole in the floor. In the larger houses a person may climb into the third story and work there with practically as much freedom as in the second.

The 5-foot ridgepole of the steep, heavy, grass roof is supported by two posts rising from the basal timbers of the third story. The roof falls away sharply from the ridgepole not only at the sides but at the ends, so that, except at the ridge, the roof appears square. Immediately beneath both ends of the ridgepole there is a small opening in the grass through which the smoke of the cooking fires is supposed to escape. However, I have scarcely ever seen smoke issue from them, and, since the entire inner part of the building from the floor of the second story to the ridgepole is thickly covered with soot, it seems that little unconsumed carbon escapes through the smoke holes. The lower part of the roof, for 3½ feet, descends at a less steep angle, thus forming practically an awning against sun and rain. Its lower edge is about 4 feet from the ground and projects some 4 feet beyond the side walls of the lower story.

The kat-yu'-fong, the dwelling of the poor, consists of a one-story structure built on the ground with the earth for the floor. Some such buildings have a partition or partial partition running across them, beyond which are the sleeping boards, and there are shelves here and there; but the kat-yu'-fong is a makeshift, and consequently is not so fixed a type of dwelling as the fay'-ü.

Piled close around the dwellings is a supply of firewood in the shape of pine blocks 3 or 4 feet long, usually cut from large trees. These blocks furnish favorite lounging places for the women. The people live most of the time outside their dwellings, and it is there that the social life of the married women is. Any time of day they may be seen close to the a'-fong in the shade of the low, projecting roof sitting spinning or paring camotes; often three or four neighbors sit thus together and gossip. The men are seldom with them, being about the ato buildings in the daytime when not working. A few small children may be about the dwelling, as the little girls frequently help in preparing food for cooking.

During the day the dwelling is much alone. When it is so left one and

THE CHILD

CARE OF CHILD IN PARENTS' DWELLING

All male babes are called "kil-lang'" and all girl babes "gna-an'." All live practically the same life day after day. Their sole nourishment is their mother's milk, varied now and then by that of some other woman, if the mother is obliged to leave the babe for a half day or so. When the babe's first teeth appear it has a slight change of diet; its attendant now and then feeds it cooked rice, thoroughly masticated and mixed with saliva. This food is passed to the child's mouth directly from that of the attendant by contact of lips—quite as the domestic canary feeds its young. The babes are always unclothed, and for several months are washed daily in cold water, usually both morning and night. It is a common sight at the river to see the mother, who has come down with her babe on her back for an olla of water, bathe the babe, who never seems at all frightened in the process, but to enjoy it—this, too, at times when the water would seem to be uncomfortably cold. One often sees the father or grandmother washing the older babes at the river.

But in spite of these baths the Igorot babe, at least after it has reached the age of six or eight months, when seen in the pueblo is almost without exception very dirty; a child of a year or a year and a half is usually repulsively so. Its head has received no attention since birth, and is scaly and dirty if not actually full of sores. Its baths are now relatively infrequent, and its need of them as it plays on the dirt floor of the dwelling or pabafunan even more urgent than when it spent most of its time in the carrying blanket.

Babes have no cradles or stationary places for rest or sleep. A babe, slumbering or awake, is never laid down alone because of the fear that an anito will injure it. At night the babe sleeps between its parents, on its mother's arm. It spends its days almost without exception sitting in a blanket which is tied over the shoulder of one of its parents, its brother, or its sister. There it hangs, awake or asleep, sitting or sprawling, often a pitiable little object with the sun in its eyes and the flies hovering over its dirty face. Frequently a child of only 5 or 6 years old may be seen with a babe on its back, and older children are constant baby tenders. Babes may be found in the fawi and pabafunan where the men are lounging (Pl. XXXII), and the old men and women also care for their grandchildren. Grown people quite as commonly carry the babe astride one hip if they have an empty hand which they can put around it, and often a mother along the trail carries it at her breast where it seemingly nurses as contentedly as when in the shade of the dwelling.

Children are generally weaned long before they are 2 years old, but

Igorot stage of culture have little occasion to prize one se
other. The Igorot neither, even in marriage. One is pr
capable as the other at earning a living, and both are n
group.

Six or seven days after birth a chicken is killed and eate
in honor of the child, but there is no other ceremon
even a special name for the feast.

If a woman gives birth to a stillborn child it i
wrapped in a bit of cloth, and buried in a camote
the dwelling.

TWINS

The Igorot do not understand twins—na-a-pĭk'
have only one babe at a birth, so why should
they ask. They believe that one of the twins
they call "a-tĭn-fu-yang'," is an anito child:
anito.[1] The anito father is said to have be
twins in her unconscious slumber, and sh
reproached.

The most quiet babe, or, if they are
is said to be "a-tĭn-fu-yang'," and is at on
alive in a sementera near the dwelling.

On the 13th of April, 1903, the wi
birth to twin babies. Contrary to th
old men and the universal custom
children, because, as he pointed o
children, now 7 years old, and th
down of this peculiar form of inf

Both married and unmarri
reason the prospective child
the mother of a pregnant
soon she would become
rather than the faithful

Abortion is accomplis
only during the first eig
bathed for several da
stroked downward wit
Only the woman he
present at the abo
practice is no di

[1] An anito, as is d
person. The anito
they cause most all

...n,
...ther
...of her
...nged his
...r this last
...nt Tukukan,
...to of Fa-li-kao'

The selection of the names of ancestors is shown by the following generations:

1. Mang-i-lot′
2. Cho-kas′
3. Kom-lĭng′
4. Mang-i-lot′
5 *a*. Kom-lĭng′
5 *b*. Ta-kay′-yĕng
5 *c*. Tĕng-ab′
5 *d*. Ka-wĕng′

the baby name of an old man now about 60 years
f his great-grandfather (1). Numbers 5 *a*, 5 *b*,
of Mang-i-lot′ (4), all of whom died before
. The child Kom-lĭng′ (5 *a*) was given the
grandfather (3). Ta-kay′-yĕng (5 *b*) bears the
great-grandfather. Tĕng-ab′ (5 *c*) and Ka-wĕng′
names of uncles, brothers of the boy's mother. The
Mang-i-lot′ (4) is O-lu-wan′; this is the name of a
whose head was the first one taken by Mang-i-lot′. A
ange his name each time he takes a head, though it is
ary to do so more than once or twice.

s well as boys may receive during childhood two or three names,
y may receive the protection of an anito. In Igorot names there
vestige of a kinship group tracing relation through either the
rnal or maternal line.

The people are generally reticent about telling their names; and
hen they do tell, the name given is usually the one borne in childhood; an old man will generally answer "am-a′-ma," meaning simply "old man."

CIRCUMCISION

Most boys are circumcised at from 4 to 7 years of age. The act of circumcision, called "sĭg-i-at′," occurs privately without feasting or rite. The only formality is the payment of a few leaves of tobacco to the man who performs the operation. There are one or two old men in each ato who understand circumcision, but there is no cult for its performance or perpetuation.

The foreskin is cut lengthwise on the upper side for half an inch. Either a sharp, blade-like piece of bamboo is inserted in the foreskin which is cut from the inside, or the back point of a battle-ax is stuck firmly in the earth, and the foreskin is cut by being drawn over the sharp point of the blade.

The Igorot say that if the foreskin is not cut it will grow long, as does the unclipped camote vine. What the origin or purpose of circumcision was is not now known by the people of Bontoc. The practice is

twice I have seen a young pillager of 5
his mother's hips and body as she tr
baby instinct and suckle from her

After the child is about 2 years
sleep longer at the home of the
olag, and the boy to the pabafu
a hard-and-fast rule, and the a
or fawi depends much on circ
with the parents doubtless d
another child. If a little gi
may sleep for a few years
or two children may sleep
the open part of the pa
ages of 6 or 7 all childr
fawi. I have seen a
immediately after su
sitting around a smal
The Igorot child as
eat. There is alm
called home life.

The Igorot ha
change the nam
maturity. Th
is no system

A child
and 5. T
only tw
that th
when
ancest
child
seek
oth

playthings
with the puppies
of the year—both
It is not improb-
no matter what their
full expression in the
the girls, often themselves
their brothers. Girls also
more than do the boys.
in the same group. Time and
a romping group of chattering, naked
usually run noiselessly into the nearest
building, and there stand unmoving, as
head into the grass and seems to think itself
be afraid of one, seeing him every day, yet
in them—they do exactly what their mothers
the trail—they run away, or start to.
found little girls building tiny sementeras with
they play at planting and harvesting the crops
pueblo. They have one game called "I catch your
the best expression of unfettered childplay and mirth

had dropped behind the mountain close to the pueblo,
girls ranging from 5 to 10 or 11 years of age
to the smooth grass plat in front of our house to
(I catch your ankle). They laid aside their blankets
in two opposing lines twelve or fifteen feet apart.
"Sis-sis'-ki ad wa'-ni wa'-ni!" (which is, "I catch your
now!"). Immediately the two lines crouched on their
and, in half-sitting posture, with feet side by side, each girl
toward her opponent endeavoring to catch her ankle. After
attacking parties met they intermingled, running and tumbling,
and chased, and the successful girl rapidly dragged her victim by
along the grass until caught and thrown by a relief party or
away by the approach of superior numbers. They lined up anew
five or ten minutes.

During the entire game, lasting a full half hour or until night settled
them or a mother came to take home one of the little, romping, wild
—just as the American child is called from her games to an early
peal after peal of the heartiest, sweetest laughter rang a constant

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXV. TIMBERS FOR A BUILDING SEASONING IN THE MOUNTAINS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXVI. THE FAY'-Ü, SHOWING OPEN DOOR.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXVII. BONTOC DWELLING, THE KAT-YU'-FONG, A WIDOW'S HOUSE, SHOWING PIGPENS WHICH EXTEND BENEATH IT.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XXXVIII. "IN THE SHADE OF THE LOW, PROJECTING ROOF."

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XXXIX. "THE MOTHER WHO HAS COME DOWN WITH HER BABE ON HER BACK FOR AN OLLA OF WATER."

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XL. THE BABY TENDERS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLI. SOM-KAD'S' DEATH CHAIR.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLII. PINE COFFINS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLIII. THE BURIAL OF SOM-KAD'.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLIV. BÛG-TI′ WITH HIS WILD-COCK SNARE.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLV. WIRE COCK SNARE SET, WITH LURE COCK IN CENTER.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLVI. WILD-CAT CAUGHT IN THE SNARE KOK-O'-LÂNG.

The boys have at least two systematic games. One is fûg-fûg-to′, in imitation of a ceremonial of the men after each annual rice harvest. The game is a combat with rocks, and is played sometimes by thirty or forty boys, sometimes by a much smaller number. The game is a contest—usually between Bontoc and Samoki—with the broad, gravelly river bed as the battle ground. There they charge and retreat as one side gains or loses ground; the rocks fly fast and straight, and are sometimes warded off by small basket-work shields shaped like the wooden ones of war. They sometimes play for an hour and a half at a time, and I have not yet seen them play when one side was not routed and driven home on the run amid the shouts of the victors.

The other game is kag-kag-tin′. It is also a game of combat and of opposing sides, but it is not so dangerous as the other and there are no bruises resulting. Some half-dozen or a dozen boys play kag-kag-tin′ charging and retreating, fighting with the bare feet. The naked foot necessitates a different kick than the one shod with a rigid leather shoe; the stroke from an unshod foot is more like a blow from the fist shot out from the shoulder. The foot lands flat and at the side of or behind the kicker, and the blow is aimed at the trunk or head—it usually lands higher than the hips. This game in a combat between individuals of the opposing sides, though two often attack a single opponent until he is rescued by a companion. The game is over when the retreating side no longer advances to the combat.

The boys are constantly throwing reed spears, and they are fairly expert spearmen several years before they have a steel-bladed spear of their own. Frequently they roll the spherical grape fruit and throw their reeds at the fruit as it passes.

Here, there, and everywhere, singly or in groups, boys perform the Igorot dance step. A tin can in a boy's hands is irresistibly beaten in rhythmic time, and the dance as surely follows the peculiar rhythmic beating as the beating follows the possession of the can. As the boys come stringing home at night from watching the palay fields, they come dancing, rhythmically beating a can, or two sticks, or their dinner basket, or beating time in the air—as though they held a gangsa. The dance is in them, and they amuse themselves with it constantly.

Both boys and girls are much in the river, where they swim and dive with great frolic.

During the months of January and February, 1903, when there was much wind, the boys were daily flying kites, but it is a pastime borrowed of the Ilokano in the pueblo. Now and then a little fellow may be seen with a small, very rude bow and arrow, which also is borrowed from the Ilokano since the arrival of the Spaniard.

of his intentions for two or three months. If at last he tells her he will not marry her she receives the news with many tears, it is said, but is spared the gossip and reproach of others, and she will later become the wife of some other man, since her first child has proved her power to bear children.

When the girl's mother notices her condition she asks who the father of the child is, and on being told that the man will not marry her the mother often tries to exert a rather tardy influence for better morals. She says, "That is bad. Why have you done this?" (when the chances are that the unfortunate girl was born into a family of but one head); "it will be well for him to give the child a sementera to work." About the same time the young man informs his mother of his relations with the girl, and of her condition, and again the maker of a people's morals seems to attempt to mold the already hardened clay. She says, "My son, that is bad. Why have you done it? Why do you not marry her?" And the son answers simply and truthfully, "I have another girl." Without attempt at remonstrance the father gives a rice sementera to the child when it is 6 or 7 years old, for that is the price fixed by the group conscience for deserting a girl with a child.

It is not usual for a married man to go to the o'-lâg, though a young man may go if one of his late mates is still alone. He is usually welcomed by the girl, for there may yet be possibilities of her becoming his permanent wife. A man whose wife is pregnant, however, seldom visits the o'-lâg, because he fears that, if he does, his wife's child will be prematurely born and die.

The o'-lâg is built where the girls desire it and is said to be commonly located in places accessible to the men; this appears true to one going over the pueblo with this statement in mind.

The life in the o'-lâg does not seem to weaken the boys or girls or cause them to degenerate, neither does it appear to make them vicious. Whereas there is practically no sense of modesty among the people, I have never seen anything lewd. Though there is no such thing as virtue, in the modern sense of the word, among the young people after puberty, children before puberty are said to be virtuous, and the married woman is said always to be true to her husband.

According to a recent translator of Blumentritt[1] that author is made to say (evidently speaking of the o'-lâg):

> Amongst most of the tribes [Igorot] the chastity of maidens is carefully guarded, and in some all the young girls are kept together till marriage in a large house where, guarded by old women, they are taught the industries of their sex, such as weaving, pleating, making cloth from the bark of trees, etc.

[1] David J. Doherty, M. D., translator of The Philippines, A Summary Account of their Ethnological, Historical, and Political Conditions, by Ferdinand Blumentritt, etc. (Chicago, 1900), p. 16.

There is no such institution in Bontoc Igorot society. The purpose of the o'-lâg is as far from enforcing chastity as it well can be. The old women never frequent the o'-lâg, and the lesson the girls learn there is the necessity for maternity, not the "industries of their sex"—which children of very primitive people acquire quite as a young fowl learns to scratch and get its food.

MARRIAGE

The ethics of the group forbid certain unions in marriage. A man may not marry his mother, his stepmother, or a sister of either. He may not marry his daughter, stepdaughter, or adopted daughter. He may not marry his sister, or his brother's widow, or a first cousin by blood or adoption. Sexual intercourse between persons in the above relations is considered incest, and does not often occur. The line of kin does not appear to be traced as far as second cousin, and between such there are no restrictions.

Rich people often pledge their small children in marriage, though, as elsewhere in the world, love, instead of the plans of parents, is generally the foundation of the family. In February, 1903, the rich people of Bontoc were quite stirred up over the sequel to a marriage plan projected some fifteen years before. Two families then pledged their children. The boy grew to be a man of large stature, while the girl was much smaller. The man wished to marry another young woman, who fought the first girl when visited by her to talk over the matter. Then the blind mother of the pledged girl went to the dwelling, accompanied by her brother, one of the richest men in the pueblo, whereupon the father and mother of the successful girl knocked them down and beat them. To all appearances the young lovers will marry in spite of the early pledges of parents. They say such quarrels are common.

If a man wishes to marry a woman and she shares his desire, or if on her becoming pregnant he desires to marry her, he speaks with her parents and with his. If either of her parents objects, no marriage occurs; but he does not usually falter, even though his parents do object. They say the advent of a babe seldom fails to win the good will of the young man's parents. In the case of the girl's pregnancy, marriage is more assured, and her father builds or gives her a house. The olag is no longer for her. In her case it has served its ultimate purpose—it has announced her puberty and proved her powers of womanhood. In the case of a desire of marriage before the girl is pregnant she usually sleeps in the olag, as in the past, and the young man spends most of his nights with her. It is customary for the couple to take their meals with the parents of the girl, in which case the young man gives his labors to the family. The period of his labors is usually less than a year, since it is customary for him to give his affec-

tions to another girl within a year if the first one does not become pregnant.

In other words their union is a true trial union. If the trial is successful the girl's father builds her a dwelling, and the marriage ceremony occurs immediately upon occupation of the dwelling. The ceremony is in two parts. The first is called "in-pa-ke'," and at that time a hog or carabao is killed, and the two young people start housekeeping. The kap'-i-ya ceremony follows—among the rich this marriage ceremony occupies two days, but with the poor only one day. The kap'-i-ya is performed by an old man of the ato in which the couple is to live. He suggestively places a hen's egg, some rice, and some tapui[1] in a dish before him while he addresses Lumawig, the one god, as follows:

Thou, Lumawig! now these children desire to unite in marriage. They wish to be blessed with many children. When they possess pigs, may they grow large. When they cultivate their palay, may it have large fruitheads. May their chickens also grow large. When they plant their beans may they spread over the ground. May they dwell quietly together in harmony. May the man's vitality quicken the seed of the woman.

The two-day marriage ceremony of the rich is very festive. The parents kill a wild carabao, as well as chickens and pigs, and the entire pueblo comes to feast and dance. It is customary for the pueblo to have a rest day, called "fo-sog'," following the marriage of the rich, so the entire period given to the marriage is three days. Each party to the marriage receives some property at the time from the parents. There are no women in Bontoc pueblo who have not entered into the trial union, though all have not succeeded in reaching the ceremony of permanent marriage. However, notwithstanding all their standards and trials, there are several happy permanent marriages which have never been blessed with children. There are only two men in Bontoc who have never been married and who never entered the trial stage, and both are deaf and dumb.

DIVORCE

The people of Bontoc say they never knew a man and woman to separate if a child was born to the pair and it lived and they had recognized themselves married. But, as the marriage is generally prompted because a child is to be born, so an unfruitful union is generally broken in the hope that another will be more successful.

If either party desires to break the contract the other seldom objects. If they agree to separate, the woman usually remains in their dwelling and the man builds himself another. However, if either person objects, it is the other who relinquishes the dwelling—the man because he can build another and the woman because she seldom seeks separation unless she knows of a home in which she will be welcome.

[1] A fermented drink.

August—the two harvest months of rice and the one following—considerable rice of the new crop is annually eaten. If rice has been stored in the palay houses until it is sweated it is in every way a healthful, nutritious food, but when eaten before it sweats it often produces diarrhea, usually leading to an acute bloody dysentery which is often followed by vomiting and a sudden collapse—as in Asiatic cholera.

In 1893 smallpox, ful-tâng′, came to Bontoc with a Spanish soldier who was in the hospital from Quiangan. Some five or six adults and sixty or seventy children died. The ravage took half a dozen in a day, but the Igorot stamped out the plague by self-isolation. They talked the situation over, agreed on a plan, and were faithful to it. All the families not afflicted moved to the mountains; the others remained to minister or be ministered to, as the case might be. About thirty-five years ago smallpox wiped out a considerable settlement of Bontoc, called La′-nao, situated nearer the river than are any dwellings at present.

About thirty years ago cholera, pĭsh-ti′, visited the people, and fifty or more deaths resulted.

Some twelve years ago ka-lag′-nas, an unidentified disease, destroyed a great number of people, probably half a hundred. Those afflicted were covered with small, itching festers, had attacks of nausea, and death resulted in about three days.

Two women died in Bontoc in 1901 of beri-beri, called fu-tut. These are the only cases known to have been there.

About ten years ago a man died from passing blood—an ailment which the Igorot named literally "ĭn-ĭs′-fo cha′-la or ĭn-tay′-es cha′-la." It was not dysentery, as the person at no time had a diarrhea. He gradually weakened from the loss of small amounts of blood until, in about a year, he died.

The above are the only fatal diseases now in the common memory of the pueblo of Bontoc.

It is believed 95 per cent of the people suffer at some time, probably much of the time, with some skin disease. They say no one has been known to die of any of these skin diseases, but they are weakening and annoying. Itch, ku′-lĭd, is the most common, and it takes an especially strong hold on the babes in arms. This ku′-lĭd is not the ko′-lud or gos-gos, the white scaly itch found among the people surrounding those of the Bontoc culture area but not known to exist within it.

Two or three people suffer with rheumatism, fĭg-fĭg, but are seldom confined to their homes.

One man has consumption, o′-kat. He has been coughing five or six years, and is very thin and weak.

Diarrhea, or o-gi′-âk, frequently makes itself felt, but for only one or two days at a time. It is most common when the locusts swarm

over the country, and the people eat them abundantly for several days. They say no one, not even a babe, ever died of diarrhea.

Two of the three prostitutes of Bontoc, the cast-off mistresses of Spanish soldiers, have syphilis, or na-na. Formerly one civilian was afflicted, and at present four or five of the Constabulary soldiers have contracted the disease.

Lang-ĭng′-i, a disease of sores and ulcers on the lips, nostrils, and rectum, afflicted a few people three or four years ago. This disease is very common in the pueblo of Ta-kong′, but is reported as never causing death.

Goiter, fi-kĕk′ or fĭn-to′-kĕl, is quite common with adults, and is more common with women than men.

Varicose veins, o′-pat, are not uncommon on the calves of both men and women.

Many old people suffer greatly with toothache, called "pa-tug′ nan fob-a′." They say it is caused by a small worm, fi′-kĭs, which wriggles and twists in the tooth. When one has an aching tooth extracted he looks at it and inquires where "fi′-kĭs" is.

They suffer little from colds, mo-tug′, and one rarely hears an Igorot cough.

Headache, called both sa-kĭt′ si o′-lo and pa-tug′ si o′-lo, rarely occurs except with fever.

Sore eyes, a condition known as ĭn-o′-ki, are very frequently seen; they doubtless precede most cases of blindness.

The Igorot bears pain well, but his various fatalistic superstitions make him often an easy victim to a malady that would yield readily to the science of modern medicine and from which, in the majority of cases, he would probably recover if his mind could only assist his body in withstanding the disease.

One is surprised to find that sores from bruises do not generally heal quickly.

The Igorot attempts no therapeutic remedies for fevers, cholera, beri-beri, rheumatism, consumption, diarrhea, syphilis, goiter, colds, or sore eyes.

Some effort, therapeutic in its intent, is made to assist nature in overcoming a few of the simplest ailments of the body.

For a cut, called "na-fa′-kag," the fruit of a grass-like herb named la-lay′-ya is pounded to a paste, and then bound on the wound.

Burns, ma-la-fûb-chong′, are covered over with a piece of bark from a tree called ta-kum′-fao.

Kay-yub′, a vegetable root, is rubbed over the forehead in cases of headache.

Boils, fu-yu-i′, and swellings, nay-am-an′ or kĭn-may-yon′, are treated with a poultice of a pounded herb called ok-ok-ong′-an.

... fermented, and mixed with pig fat is ...

... and used as a poultice on ulcers ...

... a pounded herb named ot-o′-tĕk and ... aching tooth.

... are steeped, and the decoction employed ...

... AND BURIAL

... Bontoc Igorot does not take death very ... take it at all passionately. A mother ... her husband, but death is said not to ... Death causes no long or loud lamentation, ... the body; it effects no somber colors ... earth or ashes for the body—all widespread ... primitive peoples. However, when a child ... the women assemble and sing and wail ... ask the departed why he went so early. ... neither tears nor wailings—there is only ... were old," they say, "and old people die. You ... shall place you in the earth. We too are old, ... you."

... instance of an anito. There have been, however, ... Many years ago an old man and woman ... their dwellings because they were old and infirm, ... man hung himself in the Spanish jail at Bontoc ...

... person who dies a so-called natural death is called ... The anito of those who die in battle receive ... pĭn-tĕng′"; such spirits are not called away, but the ... told by some pĭn-tĕng′, "You must take a head." ... that no death occurs among the Igorot (except the ...) which is not due directly to an anito.

... warriors, the men who die in battle are the most ... killed in battle all Igorot prefer to die in their ... they die elsewhere, they are at once taken home.

... 1903, wise, rich Som-kad′, of ato Luwakan, and the ... Bontoc, heard an anito saying, "Come, Som-kad′; it is ... the mountains; come." The sick old man laboriously ... the pabafunan to the house of his oldest son, where he ... twenty years taken his food, and there among his ... friends he died on the night of March 21. Just before ... was killed, and the old people gathered at the house,

cooked the chicken, and ate, inviting the ancestral anitos and the departing spirit of Som-kad to the feast. Shortly after this the spirit of the live man passed from the body searching the mountain spirit land for kin and friend. They closed the old man's eyes, washed his body and on it put the blue burial robe with the white "anito" figures woven in it as a stripe. They fashioned a rude, high-back chair with a low seat, a sung-a'-chil (Pl. XLI), and bound the dead man in it, fastening him by bands about the waist, the arms, and head—the vegetal band entirely covering the open mouth. His hands were laid in his lap. The chair was set close up before the door of the house, with the corpse facing out. Four nights and days it remained there in full sight of those who passed.

One-half the front wall of the dwelling and the interior partitions except the sleeping compartment were removed to make room for those who sat in the dwelling. Most of these came and went without function, but day and night two young women sat or stood beside the corpse always brushing away the flies which sought to gather at its nostrils.

During the first two days few men were about the house, but they gathered in small groups in the vicinity of the fawi and pabafunan, which were only three or four rods distant. Much of the time a blind son of the dead man, the owner of the house where the old man died, sat on his haunches in the shade under the low roof, and at frequent intervals sang to a melancholy tune that his father was dead, that his father could no longer care for him, and that he would be lonely without him. On succeeding days other of the dead man's children, three sons and five daughters, all rich and with families of their own, were heard to sing the same words. Small numbers of women sat about the front of the house or close in the shade of its roof and under its cover. Now and then some one or more of them sang a low-voiced, wordless song—rather a soothing strain than a depressing dirge. During the first days the old women, and again the old men, sang at different times alone the following song, called "a-na'-ko" when sung by the women, and "e-ya'-e" when by the men:

Now you are dead; we are all here to see you. We have given you all things necessary, and have made good preparation for the burial. Do not come to call away [to kill] any of your relatives or friends.

Nowhere was there visible any sign of fear or awe or wonder. The women sitting about spun threads on their thighs for making skirts; they talked and laughed and sang at will. Mothers nursed their babes in the dwelling and under its projecting roof. Budding girls patted and loved and dimpled the cheeks of the squirming babes of more fortunate young women, and there was scarcely a child that passed in or out of the house that did not have to steady itself by laying a hand

Millet burned to a charcoal
used as a salve for the itch.
An herb called a-kûm′ is
and sores.
For toothache salt is mixe
the mass put in or around
Leaves of the tree kay′-y
as a bath for persons with

D

It must be said that
sorrowfully, and he do
weeps a day for a dead
bring tears from any
no tearing of the hair
to deaden the emotion
mourning customs a
or mature man or w
a melancholy dirge.
But for the aged t
grim philosophy.
are dead, and now
and soon we shall

All people die a
three suicides in
hung themselves
and a man from
a few years ago.
The spirit of
away by an
the special na
person's slaye
So it may be
rare death b

Since the
favored, but
houses. S

On Ma
oldest ma
much be
walked f
had for
children
he die

derstand death. One, they
then one always goes into a
fall about.
modern enterprise the death of
break. This is equally true in
of perfected organization—there
and the latter is true because
almost no machinery to be left
son.
increased. There were twenty-five
the house, on the south side of which
from which men and boys drank at
dozen became intoxicated. Late in the
, the sons and sons-in-law of the deceased,
facing one another, and for half an hour
on their fingers and gesticulated, diag-
questioned, pointed with their lips and nodded,
property of the dead man. There was no
or apparent dissent; all seemed to know exactly
ght. In about half an hour the property was
ble future dispute.
men present the third day than on the second,
t one-third more women than men; and there
children about as there were grown persons. In
say, 140 people, nowhere could one detect a sign of
the unusual. The apparent everydayness of it
that struck the observer most. The young women
fire touched and turned the fast-blackening hands
ote the rapid changes. Almost always there were
ding in the doorway looking into that blackened,
they turned away only to play or to loll about their
Always there were women bending over other women's
arting the hair and scanning it. Women lay asleep
side; they talked, and droned, and laughed, and spun.
d day men had succeeded in catching in the mountains
wild carabaos—property of the deceased—and this was
was placed in the house tied up by the horns above
-kad′, so the faces of the dead seemed looking at each
the third day the flesh, bones, intestines, and hide were
crowd. During the third and fourth days one carabao,
gs, and twenty chickens were killed, cooked, and eaten.
h day the crowd increased. Custom lays idle all field
on the burial day of an adult of that ato; but the day
buried the field work of the entire pueblo stood still

[1] A fermented drink.

because of common respect for this man, so old and wise, so rich and influential, and probably 200 people were about the house all the day. By noon two well-defined groups of chanting old women had formed—one sitting in the house and the other in front of it. Wordless, melancholy chants were sung in response between the groups. The spaces surrounding the house became almost packed—so much so that a dog succeeded in getting into the doorway, and the threatenings and maledictions that drove it away were the loudest, most disturbed expressions noted during the four days.

Before the house, which faced the west, lay the large pine coffin lid, while to the south of it, turned bottom up, was the coffin with fresh chips beside it hewn out that morning in further excavation. Children played around the coffin and people lounged on its upturned bottom. Near the front of the house a pot of water was always hot over a smouldering, smoking fire. Now and then a chicken was brought, light wood was tossed under the pot, the chicken was beaten to death—first the wings, then the neck, and then the head. The fowl was quickly sprawled over the blaze, its feathers burned to a crisp, and rubbed off with sticks. Its legs were severed from the body with the battle-ax and put in the pot. From its front it was then cut through its ribs with one gash. The back and breast parts were torn apart, the gall examined and nodded over; the intestines were placed beneath a large rock, and the gizzard, breast of the chicken, and back with head attached dropped in the pot. During the killing and dressing neither of the two men who prepared the feast hurried, yet scarcely five minutes passed from the time the first blow was struck on the wing of the squawking fowl until the work was over and the meat in the boiling pot. The cooking of a fowl always brought a crowd of boys who hung over the fragrant vessel, and they usually got their share when, in about twenty minutes, the meat came forth. Three times in the afternoon a fowl was thus distributed. Cooked pork was passed among the people, and rice was always being brought. Twice a man went through the crowd with a large winnowing tray of cooked carabao hide cut in little blocks. This food was handed out on every side, people tending children receiving double share. The people gathered and ate in the congested spaces about the dwelling. The heat was intense—there was scarcely a breath of air stirring. The odor from the body was heavy and most sickening to an American, and yet there was no trace of the unusual on the various faces.

New arrivals came to take their last look at Som-kad′, now a black, bloated, inhuman-looking thing, and they turned away apparently unaffected by the sight.

The sun slid down behind the mountain ridge lying close to the pueblo, and a dozen men armed with digging sticks and dirt baskets

the grave in the shortest possible time, probably not over one minute and a half. And away they hurried, most of them at a dogtrot, to wash themselves in the river.

From the instant the corpse was in the coffin until the grave was filled all things were done in the greatest haste, because cawing crows must not fly over, dogs must not bark, snakes or rats must not cross the trail—if they should, some dire evil would follow.

Shortly after the burial a ceremony, called "kap-i-yan si na-tü′," is performed by the relatives in the dwelling wherein the corpse sat. It is said to be the last ceremony given for the head. Food is eaten and the one in charge addresses the anito of the dead man as follows:

> We have fixed all things right and well for you. When there was no rice or chicken for food, we got them for you—as was the custom of our fathers—so you will not come to make us sick. If another anito seeks to harm us, you will protect us. When we make a feast and ask you to come to it, we want you to do so; but if another anito kills all your relatives, there will be no more houses for you to enter for feasts.

This last argument is considered to be a very important one, as all Igorot are fond of feasting, and it is assumed that the anito has the same desire.

The night following the burial all relatives stay at the house lately occupied by the corpse.

On the day after the burial all the men relatives go to the river and catch fish, the small kacho. The relatives have a fish feast, called "ab-a-fon′," at the hour of the evening meal. To this feast all ancestral anito are invited.

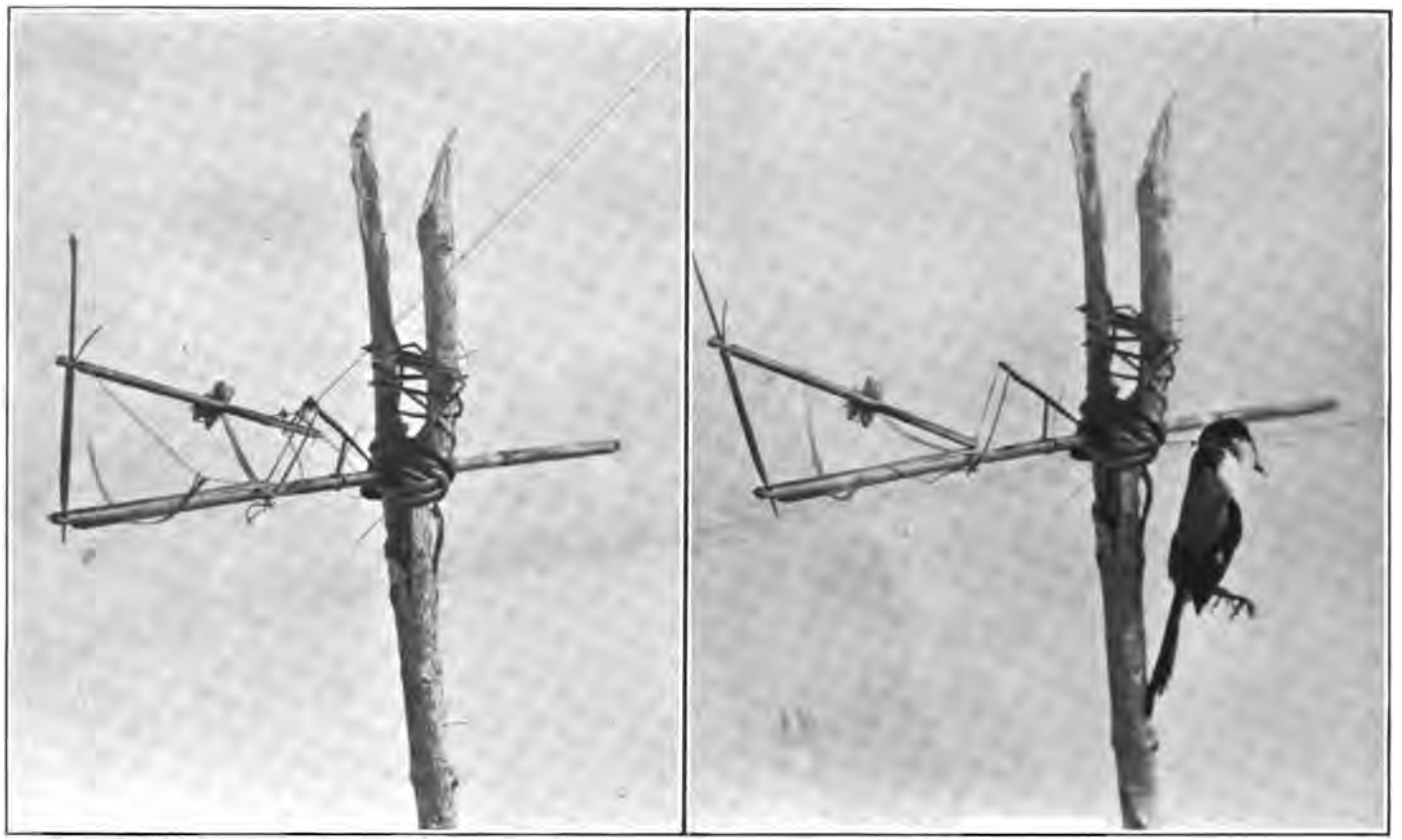
All relatives again spend the night at the house, from which they return to their own dwellings after breakfast of the second day, and each goes laden with a plate of cooked rice.

In this way from two to eight days are given to the funeral rite, the duration being greater with the wealthier people.

Only heads of families are buried in the large pine coffins, which are kept ready stored beside the granaries everywhere about the pueblo. As in the case of Som-kad′, all old, rich men are buried in a plat of ground close to the last fringe of dwellings on the west of the pueblo, but all other persons except those who lose their heads are buried close to their dwellings in the camote sementeras.

The burial clothes of a married man are the los-a′-dan, or blue anito-figured burial robe, and a breechcloth of beaten bark, called "chi-nang-ta′." In the coffin are placed a fa′-a, or blue cotton breechcloth made in Titipan, the fan-cha′-la, a striped blue-and-white cotton blanket, and the to-chong′, a foot-square piece of beaten bark or white cloth which is laid on the head.

A married woman is buried in a kay-ĭn′, a particular skirt made for



Photos by Jenks. (Snare set.) (Snare sprung.)

PLATE XLVII. THE BIRD SNARE LĬNG-ANG'.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLVIII. TRAP FISHING.

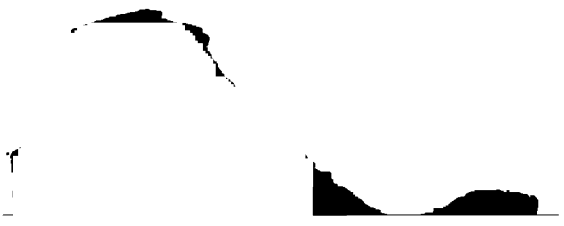


Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XLIX. EMPTYING THE FISH TRAP.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE L. FISHERMAN EXAMINING HIS OB-O'-FU.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LI. RICE SEMENTERAS AT TRANSPLANTING SEASON.

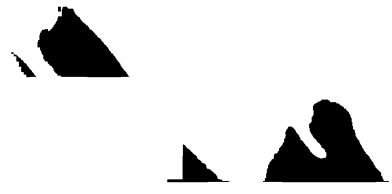


Photo by Worcester.

PLATE LII. BANAWI RICE SEMENTERAS.

Photo by Martin.

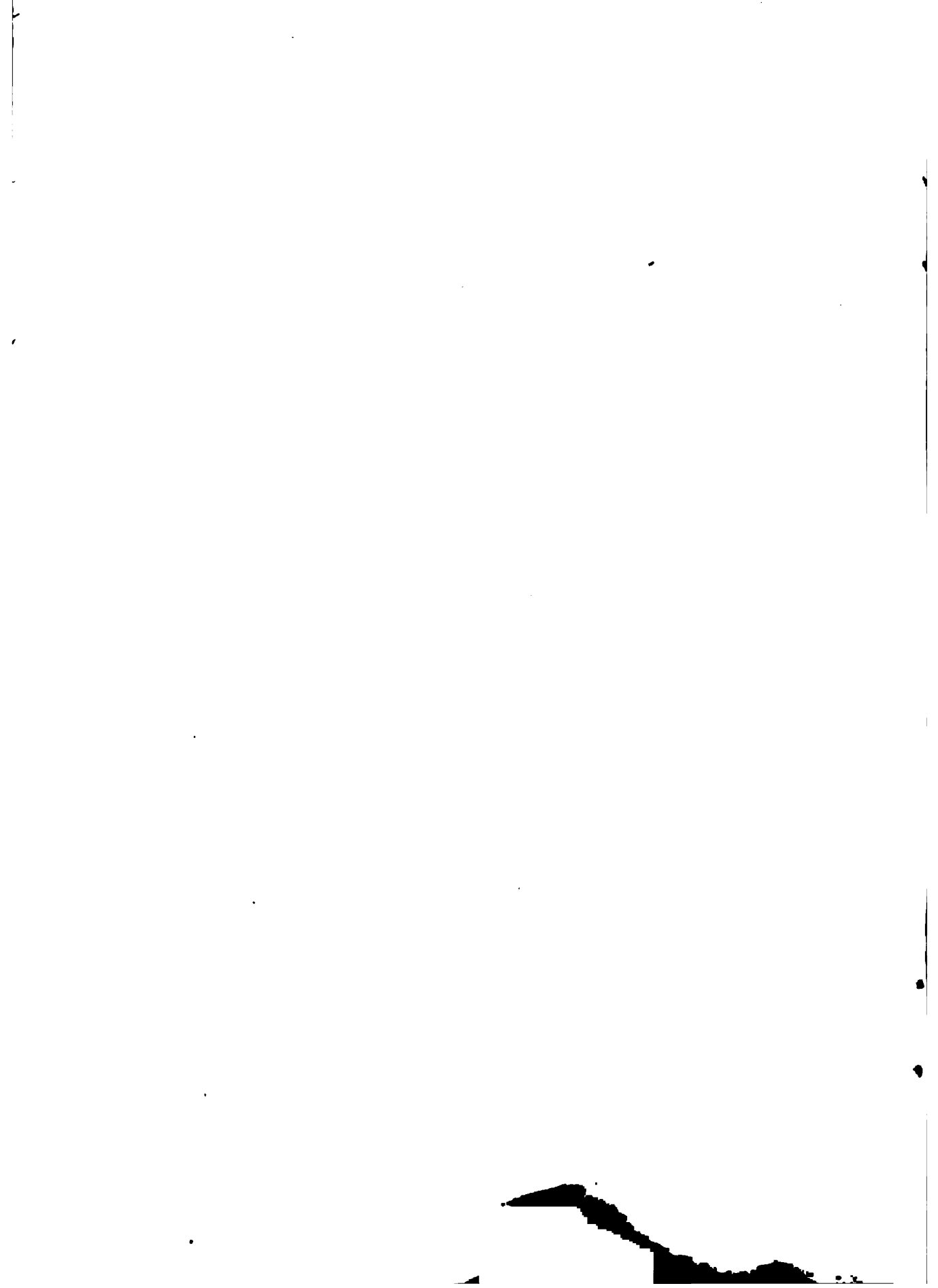
PLATE LIII. A TERRACE WALL.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LIV. WOMEN WEEDING A TERRACE WALL AT SOIL-TURNING SEASON.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LV. PARTIAL VIEW OF BONTOC IRRIGATING WORKS.



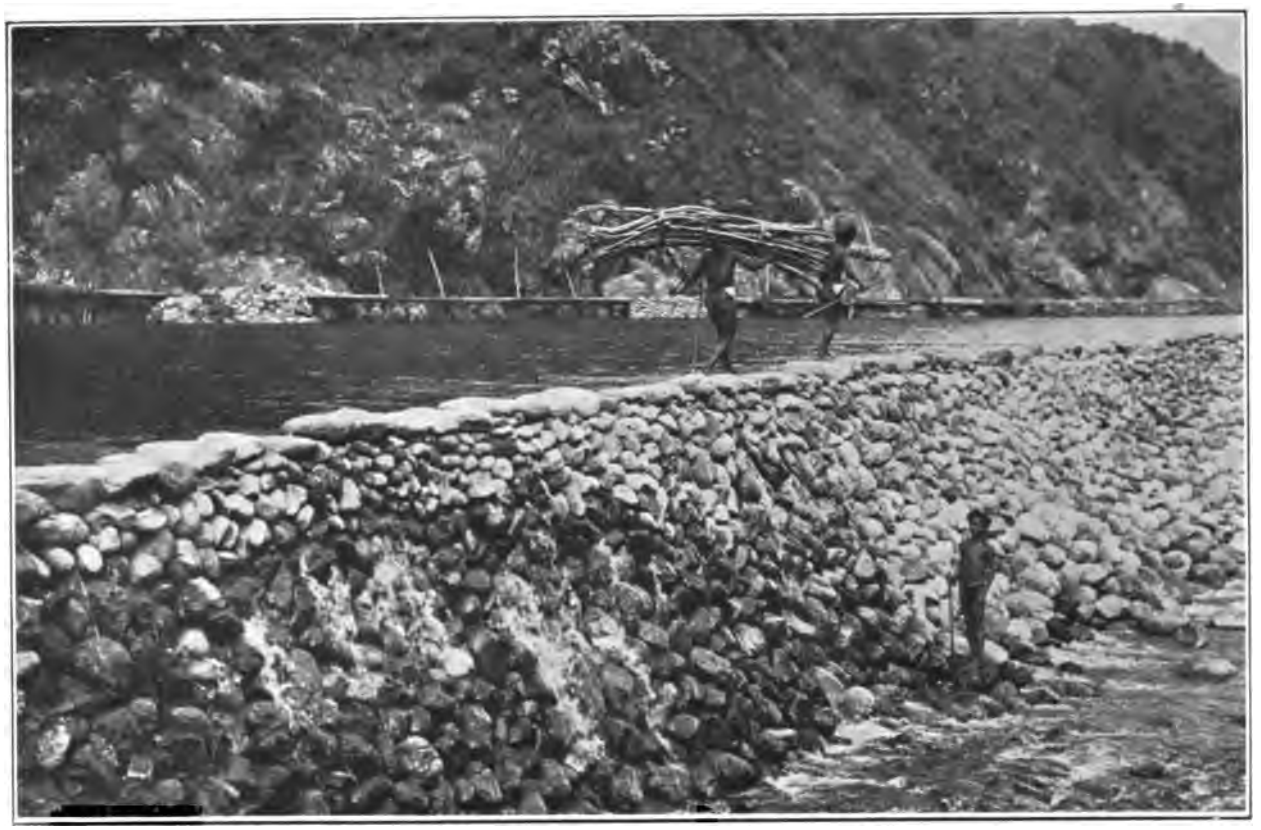


Photo by Martin.

PLATE LVI. THE MAIN DAM, SHOWING IRRIGATING TROUGHS BEYOND.

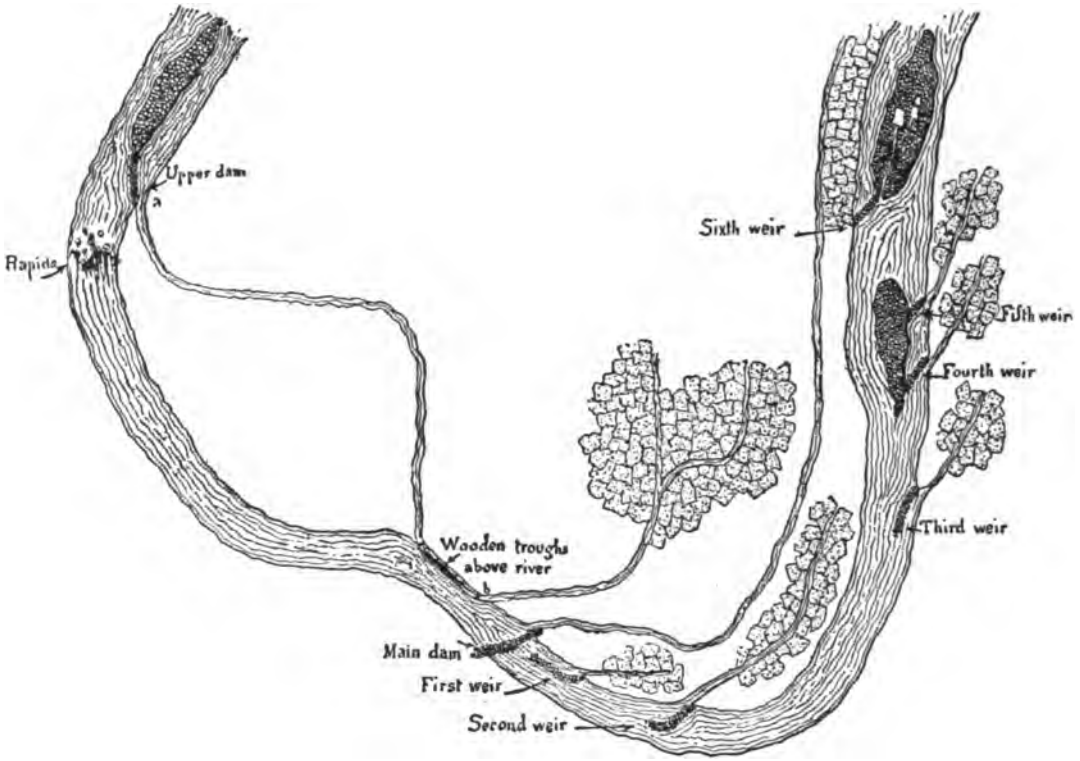


PLATE LVII. RIVER IRRIGATION SCHEME.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LVIII. IRRIGATING DITCH WHICH FEEDS THE TROUGHS SECURED TO THE MOUNTAIN SIDE SHOWN AT THE LEFT.

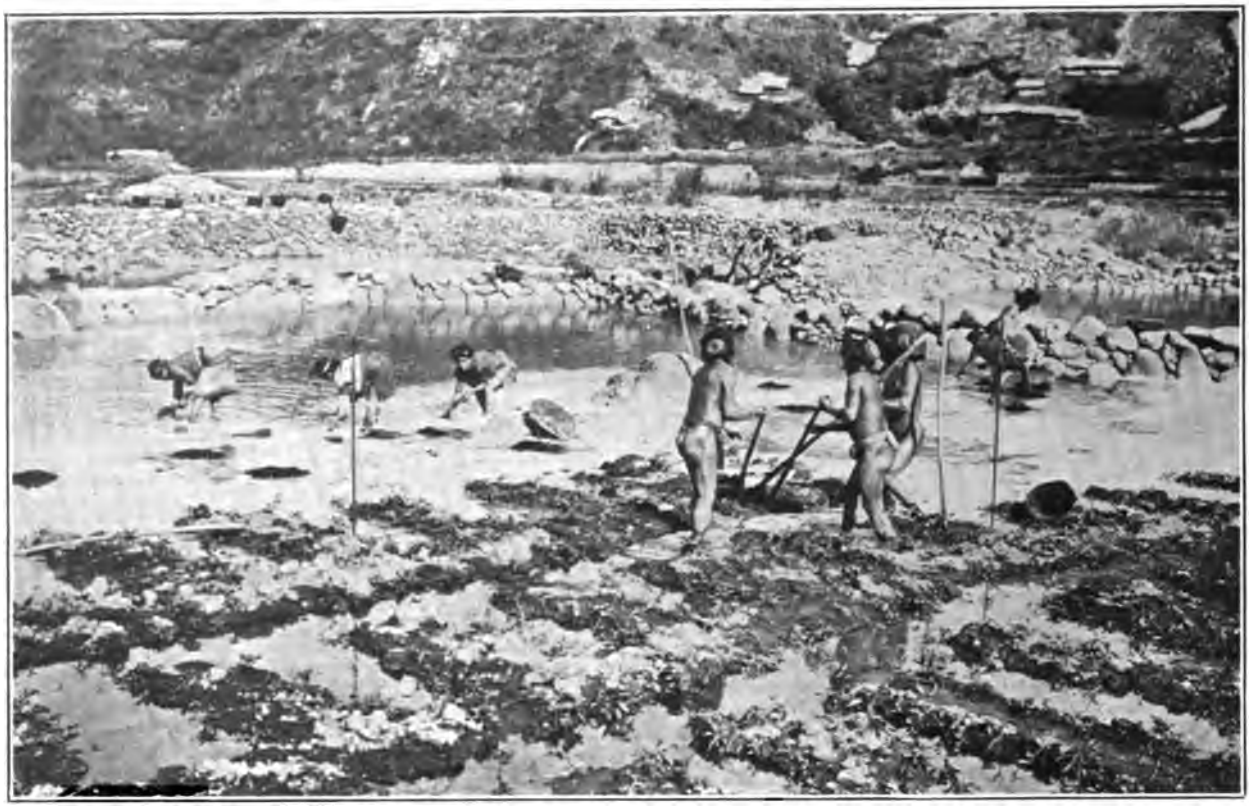


Photo by Martin.

PLATE LIX. TURNING THE SOIL IN A WATER-FILLED SEMENTERA, SHOWING WOMEN TRANSPLANTING RICE.

CHAPTER IV

ECONOMIC LIFE

PRODUCTION

Under the title "Economic life" are considered the various activities which a political economist would consider if he studied a modern community—in so far as they occur in Bontoc. This method was chosen not to make the Bontoc Igorot appear a modern man but that the student may see as plainly as method will allow on what economic plane the Bontoc man lives. The desire for this clear view is prompted by the belief that grades of culture of primitive peoples may be determined by the economic standard better than by any other single standard.

NATURAL PRODUCTION

It would be impossible for the Bontoc Igorot at present to subsist themselves two weeks by natural production. It is doubtful whether at any time they could have depended for even as much as a day in a week on the natural foods of the Bontoc culture area. The country has wild carabaos, deer, hogs, chickens, and three animals which the Igorot calls "cats," but all of these, when considered as a food supply for the people, are relatively scarce, and it is thought they were never much more abundant than now. Fish are not plentiful, and judging from the available waters there are probably as many now as formerly. It is believed that no nut foods are eaten in Bontoc, although an acorn is found in the mountains to the south of Bontoc pueblo. The banana and pineapple now grow wild within the area, but they are not abundant. Of small berries, such as are so abundant in the wild lands of the United States, there are almost none in the area. On the outside, near Suyak of Lepanto, there is a huckleberry found so plentifully that they claim it is gathered for food in its season.

HUNTING

A large pile of rocks stands like a compact fortress on the mountain horizon to the north of Bontoc pueblo. Here a ceremony is observed twice annually by rich men for the increase of ay-ya-wan′, the wild

carabao. It is claimed that there are now seventeen wild carabaos in Ma-ka'-lan Mountain near the pueblo. There are others in the mountains farther to the north and east, and the ceremony has among its objects that of inducing these more distant herds to migrate to the public lands surrounding the pueblo.

The men go to the great rock, which is said to be a transformed anito, and there they build a fire, eat a meal, and have the ceremony called "mang-a-pu'-i si ay-ya-wan'," freely, "fire-feast for wild carabaos." The ceremony is as follows:

Ay-ya-wân ad Sa-ka'-pa a-li-kâ is-nâ ma-am'-mung is-nâ.
Ay-ya-wân ad O-ki-kí a-li-kâ is-nâ ma-am'-mung is-nâ.
Fay-cha'-mi ya'-i nan a-pu'-i ya pa'-tay.

This is an invitation addressed to the wild carabaos of the Sakapa and Okiki Mountains to come in closer to Bontoc. They are also asked to note that a fire-feast is made in their honor.

The old men say that probably 500 wild carabaos have been killed by the men of the pueblo. There is a tradition that Lumawig instructed the people to kill wild carabaos for marriage feasts, and all of those killed—of which there is memory or tradition—have been used in the marriage feasts of the rich. The wild carabao is extremely vicious, and is killed only when forty or fifty men combine and hunt it with spears. When wounded it charges any man in sight, and the hunter's only safety is in a tree.

The method of hunting is simple. The herd is located, and as cautiously as possible the hunters conceal themselves behind the trees near the runway and throw their spears as the desired animal passes. No wild carabaos have been killed during the past two years, but I am told that the numbers killed three, four, six, seven, and eight years ago were, respectively, 5, 8, 7, 10, and 8.

Seven men in Bontoc have dogs trained to run deer and wild boar. One of the men, Aliwang, has a pack of five dogs; the others have one or two each. The hunting dogs are small and only moderately fleet, but they are said to have great courage and endurance. They hunt out of leash, and still-hunt until they start their prey, when they cry continually, thus directing the hunter to the runway or the place where the victim is at bay.

Not more than one deer, og'-sa, is killed annually, and they claim that deer were always very scarce in the area. A large net some 3½ feet high and often 50 feet long is commonly employed in northern Luzon and through the Archipelago for netting deer and hogs, but no such net is used in Bontoc. The dogs follow the deer, and the hunter spears it in the runway as it passes him or while held at bay.

The wild hog, la'-man or fang'-o, when hunted with dogs is a surly fighter and prefers to take its chances at bay; consequently

it is more often killed then by the spearman than in the runway. The wild hog is also often caught in pitfalls dug in the runways or in its feeding grounds. The pitfall, fi′-to, is from 3 to 4 feet across. about 4 feet deep, and is covered over with dry grass.

In the forest feeding grounds of Polus Mountains, between the Bontoc culture area and the Banawi area to the south, these pitfalls are very abundant, there frequently being two or three within a space one rod square.

A deadfall, called "ĭl-tĭb′," is built for hogs near the sementeras in the mountains. These deadfalls are quite common throughout the Bontoc area, and probably capture more hogs than the pitfall and the hunter combined. The hogs are partial to growing palay and camotes, and at night circle about a protecting fence anxious to take advantage of any chance opening. The Igorot leaves an opening in a low fence built especially for that purpose, as he does not commonly fence in the sementeras. The ĭl-tĭb′ is built of two sections of heavy tree trunks, one imbedded in the earth, level with the ground, and the other the falling timber. As the hog enters the sementera, the weight of his body springs the trigger which is covered in the loose dirt before the opening, and the falling timber pins him fast against the lower timber firmly buried in the earth. From half a dozen to twenty wild hogs are annually killed by the people of the pueblo. They are said to be as plentiful as formerly.

Bontoc pueblo does not catch many wild fowls. Fowl catching is an art she never learned to follow, although two or three of her boys annually catch half a dozen chickens each. The surrounding pueblos, as Tukukan, Sakasakan, Mayinit, and Maligkong, secure every year in the neighborhood of fifty to one hundred fowl each. The sa′-fûg, or wild cock, is most commonly caught in a snare, called "shi′-ay," to which it is lured by another cock, a domestic one, or often a half-breed or a wild cock partially domesticated, which is secured inside the snare set up in the mountains near the feeding grounds of the wild fowls.

The shi′-ay when set consists of twenty-four si′-lu, or running loops, attached to a cord forming three sides of an open square space. As the snare is set the open side is placed against a rock or steep base of a rise. The shi′-ay is made of braided bejuco, and when not in use is compactly packed away in a basket for the purpose (see Pl. XLIV). There are also five pegs fitted into loops in the basket, four of which are employed in pegging out the three sides of the snare, and the other for securing the lure cock within the square. Only cocks are caught with the shi′-ay, and they come to fight the intruder who guides them to the snare by crowing his challenge. As the wild cock rushes at the other he is caught by one of the loops closing about him. The hunter, always hiding within a few feet of the snare, rushes upon the captive, and at once resets his snare for another possible victim.

that this si′-le is both carnivorous and frugivorous. These two animals are trapped at times, and when caught are eaten.

During the year the boys catch numbers of small birds, all of which are eaten. Probably not over 200 are captured, however, during a year.

The ling-an′, a spring snare, is the most used for catching birds. I saw one of them catch four shrikes, called ta′-la, in a single afternoon, and a fifth one was caught early the next morning. Pl. XLVII shows the ling-an′ as it is set, and also shows ta′-la as he is caught.

The kok-o′-lâng is also employed successfully for such birds as run on the ground, especially those which run in paths. The si-sĭm′ is another spring snare set on the open ground. Food is scattered about leading to it, and is placed abundantly in an inclosure, the entrance to which is through the fatal noose which tightens when the bird perches on the trigger at the opening to the inclosure.

When the palay is in the milk a great many birds which feed upon it are captured by means of a broom-like bundle of runo. As the birds fly over the sementeras a boy sweeps his broom, the ka-lĭb′, through the flock, and rarely fails to knock down a bird. The ka-lĭb′ is about 7 feet long, 2½ inches in diameter at the base, and flattened and broadened to 14 or 15 inches in width at the outer end. What the ka-lĭb′ really does for the boy is to give him an arm about 9 feet long and a long open hand a foot and a quarter wide.

FISHING

The only water available to Bontoc pueblo for fishing purposes is the river passing between it and her sister pueblo, Samoki. In the dry season, where it is not dammed, the river is not over six and eight rods across in its widest places, and is from a few inches to 3 feet deep. All the water would readily pass, at the ordinary velocity of the stream, in a channel 20 feet wide and 6 feet deep.

Three methods are employed in fishing in this river—the first, catching each fish in the hand; the second, driving the fish upstream by fright into a receptacle; a third, a combined process of driving the fish downstream by fright and by water pressure into a receptacle.

The Igorot seems not to have a general word for fish, but he has names for the three varieties found in the river. One, ka-cho′, a very small, sluggish fish, is captured during the entire year. In February these fish were seldom more than 2 inches in length, and yet they were heavy with spawn. The ka-cho′ is the fish most commonly captured with the hands. It is a sluggish swimmer and is provided with an exterior suction valve on its ventral surface immediately back of the gill opening. This valve seems to enable the fish to withstand the ordinary current of the river which, in the rainy season, becomes a torrent. This valve is also one of the causes of the Igorot's success

A spring snare, called kok[illegible] frightened, but clings
catching both wild cocks and [illegible]y, and then ordinarily
in the heavy undergrowth. [illegible]rom 6 to 10 years old
into the ground one on e[illegible]uring half a day, simply
together at the tops with[illegible]
these uprights is a loose[illegible]bers by the second or driving
passing knocks down, t[illegible]n fish together with a large,
fig. 1. When this is fre[illegible]d ko-yûg', and the operation is
as the cord is drawn [illegible]e river beach the fishermen remove
bent over and secured[illegible] their faces in the warm, sun-heated sand.
not shown in the dra[illegible] the middle of the swift stream, and one
[illegible]below him by grasping the side poles which
[illegible]for that purpose. The two other men, below
[illegible]put large stones on their backs between the
[illegible]will not float downstream, and disappear beneath
[illegible]as possible, coming up a dozen times to breathe
[illegible]they clear away the rocks below the trap, piling
[illegible]floor, until it finally sinks and remains stationary
[illegible]of sandy bed. Their task being ended, the three
[illegible]shore, and sprawl on the hot sands to warm their
[illegible]the sun dries and toasts their backs.

[illegible]or beaters enter the river and stretch in a line from
[illegible]75 feet below the trap. Each fellow squats in the
[illegible]a heavy stone on his back. One of the men calls, and the
[illegible]hump-backed creatures disappears beneath the water.
[illegible]work swiftly, and, as later appears, successfully. Each
[illegible]bowlders within his reach as large or larger than
[illegible]he works upstream 4 to 6 feet. They come up
[illegible]a head here and there, but soon all are up with renewed
[illegible]the next call to beat up the prey. This process is
[illegible]and again, and each time the outer ends of the line
[illegible]gradually looping in toward the trap. When the line
[illegible]become quite circular and is contracting rapidly, a dozen
[illegible]the river from the shore and line up on each side
[illegible]of the trap, a flank movement to prevent the fish running
[illegible]outside the snare. From the circle of beaters a few now drop
[illegible]are in a bunch, the last stone is turned, and the prey
[illegible]under the rocks in the trap, which the flankers at once lift
[illegible]the water. The rocks are thrown out and the trap and fish
[illegible]to the shore.

[illegible]drive they catch about three quarts of fish. These are
[illegible]baskets, usually the carrying basket of the man, and when
[illegible]catch is made and divided each man receives an equal share,
[illegible]about 1 pound per household. A procession of men and boys
[illegible]from the river, each carrying his share of fish in his basket

hat in his hard and the last man carrying the fish trap, is a sight very frequently seen in the pueblo.

The ka-cho′ is also caught in a small trap, called ob-o′-fü, by the third method mentioned above. A small strip of shallow water along the shore is quite effectually cut off from the remainder of the stream by a row of rocks. The lower end of this strip is brought to a point where the water pours out and into the upturned ob-o′-fü, carrying with it the ka-cho′ which happen to be in the swift current, the fish having been startled from their secure resting places by the fishermen who have gradually proceeded downstream overturning the stones.

A fish called "li′-lĭng," which attains a length of about 6 inches, is also caught by the last-described method. It is not nearly so plentiful as the ka-cho′.

One man living in Bontoc may be called a fisherman. He spends most of his time with his traps in the river, and sells his fish to the Ilokano and Igorot residents of the pueblo. He places large traps in the deep parts of the stream, adjusts them, and revisits them by swimming under the water, and altogether is considered by the Igorot boys as quite a "water man." He catches each year many ka-cho′ and li′-lĭng, and one or more large fish, called "cha-lĭt." The cha-lĭt is said to acquire a length of 3, 4, or 5 feet.

Women and small children wade about the river and pick up quantities of small crabs, called "ag-ka′-ma," and also a small spiral shell, called "ko′-ti." It is safe to say that every hour of a rainless day one or more persons of Bontoc is gathering such food in the river. Immediately after the first rain of the season of 1903, coming April 5, there were twenty-four persons, women and small children, within ten rods of one another, searching the river for ag-ka′-ma and ko′-ti.

The women wear a small rump basket tied around the waist in which they carry their lunch to the rice sementeras, and once or twice each week they bring home from a few ounces to a pound of small crustaceans. One variety is named song′-an, another is kit-an′, a third is fĭng′-a, and a fourth is lis′-chûg. They are all collected in the mud of the sementeras.

VEGETAL PRODUCTION

All materials for timbers and boards for the dwellings, granaries, and public buildings, all wood for fires, all wood for shields, for ax and spear handles, for agricultural implements, and for household utensils, and all material for splints employed in various kinds of basket work, and for strings (warp and woof) employed in the weaving of Bontoc girdles and skirts, are gathered wild with no effort at cultural production. There are three exceptions to this statement, however. One small shrub, called "pü-üg′," is planted near the house as a fiber plant, and is no longer known to the Igorot in the wild state. Much of the bamboo from which the basket-work splints are made is purchased from people west of Bontoc.

in capturing the fish, which is not rea
to the bed of the stream until almost brush
swims only a few inches or feet. Small
capture by hand a hundred or more ka-c
by following them in the shallow water.

The ka-cho′ is also caught in great nu
method. Twenty to forty or more m
closely woven, shovel-like trap called
most interesting to witness. At the
all clothing, and stretch out on their f
Three men carry the trap to the mi
holds it from floating away below hi
project at the upper end for that p
the trap at its mouth, put large
shoulder blades, so they will not flo
the water. As quickly as possible
during the process, they clear a
them in it over its floor, until
on the cleared spot of sandy b
trap setters come to shore, and
dripping skins, while the sun

Then the drivers or beaters
shore to shore about 75 feet
water and places a heavy ston
row of strange, hump-back
There the men work swiftl
turns over all the bowlde
his two fists, and he wo
blowing, at first a head h
breath, waiting the nex
repeated again and ag
bend upstream, gradua
of men has become q
other men enter the
of the mouth of the
upstream outside the
out; the others are
seeks covert under
above the water.
carried to the sho

In each drive
dumped into bas
the day's catch
usually about
coming in fro

worthy
highest
rbarian—

own, through-
ation.
of Philippine rice
peopled by primi-
and China) are indige-
isolated area; second,
from one center, or pos-
Luzon—as influences from
island to island; third, that
excluding only China—are due
Philippines, spreading northward

any isolated areas where it is found,
more or less marked wherever irriga-
or modern agriculture. However, it
production of the Philippines. Certain
art, nor does it belong to the Moro or to

have rice terraces, and as early as the thir-
rchants traded with the Philippines, yet there
d north of Manila—where terracing is alone
record of the early commerce with the
Jukna about 1250 it is claimed—specifically
of the Islands were the merchants, taking the
trading them even to other islands; the Chinese
Even though the Chinaman brought phases of his
it would not have been agriculture, since he did
Moreover, whatever culture he did leave would
mountains three or four days inland, while the
traded were without the art. The same arguments

...e Japanese as the inspirers of Igorot terraces. There is ...traded in the Islands as early as did the Chinese, ...no matter when they were along the coasts of ... penetrated several days into the mountains, ...unting people, for what the agricultural Igorot

...tural movements in Malaysia have been not from ...rd but from Sumatra and Java to the north and east; ...wed the migrations of the people. It is believed that ...lding culture of the Asiatic islands for the production ... rice by irrigation during the dry season has drawn its ...from one source, and that such terraces where found to-day ...ombok, Luzon, Formosa, and Japan are a survival of very early ...which spread from the nest of the primitive Malayan stock ...it its marks along the way—doubtless in other islands besides ... cited. If Japan, as has Formosa, had an early Malayan culture, ...will probably be proved in due time, one should not be surprised to ...nd old rice terraces in the mountains of Batanes Islands and the Loo Choo Islands which lie between Luzon and Japan.

BUILDING THE SEMENTERA

It must be noted here that all Bontoc agricultural labors, from the building of the sementera to the storing of the gathered harvest, are accompanied by religious ceremonials. They are often elaborate, and some occupy a week's time. These ceremonials are left out of this chapter to avoid detail; they appear in the later chapter on religion.

There are two varieties of sementeras—garden patches, called "pay-yo'"—in the Bontoc area, the irrigated and the unirrigated. The irrigated sementeras grow two crops annually, one of rice by irrigation during the dry season and the other of camotes, "sweet potatoes," grown in the rainy season without irrigation. The unirrigated sementera is of two kinds. One is the mountain or side-hill plat of earth, in which camotes, millet, beans, maize, etc., are planted, and the other is the horizontal plat (probably once an irrigated sementera), usually built with low terraces, sometimes lying in the pueblo among the houses, from which shoots are taken for transplanting in the distant sementeras and where camotes are grown for the pigs. Sometimes they are along old water courses which no longer flow during the dry season; such are often employed for rice during the rainy season.

The unirrigated mountain-side sementera, called "fo-ag'," is built by simply clearing the trees and brush from a mountain plat. No effort is made to level it and no dike walls are built. Now and then one is hemmed in by a low boundary wall.

The irrigated sementeras are built with much care and labor. The earth is first cleared; the soil is carefully removed and placed in a

pile; the rocks are dug out; the ground shaped, being excavated and filled until a level results. This task for a man whose only tools are sticks is no slight one. A hûge bowlder in the ground means hours—often days—of patient, animal-like digging and prying with hands and sticks before it is finally dislodged. When the ground is leveled the soil is put back over the plat, and very often is supplemented with other rich soil. These irrigated sementeras are built along water courses or in such places as can be reached by turning running water to them. Inasmuch as the water must flow from one to another, there are practically no two sementeras on the same level which are irrigated from the same water course. The result is that every plat is upheld on its lower side, and usually on one or both ends, by a terrace wall. Much of the mountain land is well supplied with bowlders and there is an endless water-worn supply in the beds of all streams. All terrace walls are built of these undressed stones piled together without cement or earth. These walls are called "fa-nĭng'." They are from 1 to 20 and 30 feet high and from a foot to 18 inches wide at the top. The upper surface of the top layer of stones is quite flat and becomes the path among the sementeras. The toiler ascends and descends among the terraces on stone steps made by single rocks projecting from the outside of the wall at regular intervals and at an angle easy of ascent and descent (see Pl. LIII).

These stone walls are usually weeded perfectly clean at least once each year, generally at the time the sementera is prepared for transplanting. This work falls to the women, who commonly perform it entirely nude. At times a scanty front-and-back apron of leaves is worn tucked under the girdle.

In the Banawi district, south of the Bontoc area, there are terrace walls certainly 75 feet in height, though many of these are not stoned, since the earth is of such a nature that it does not readily crumble.

It is safe to say that nine-tenths of the available water supply of the dry season in the Bontoc area is utilized for irrigation. In some areas, as about Bontoc pueblo, there is practically not a gallon of unused water where there is space for a sementera.

A single area consisting of several thousand acres of mountain side is frequently devoted to sementeras, and I have yet to behold a more beautiful view of cultivated land than such an area of Igorot rice terraces. Winding in and out, following every projection, dipping into every pocket of the mountain, the walls ramble along like running things alive. Like giant stairways the terraces lead up and down the mountain side, and, whether the levels are empty, dirt-colored areas, fresh, green-carpeted stairs, or patches of ripening, yellow grain, the beholder is struck with the beauty of the artificial landscape and marvels at the industry of an otherwise savage people.

IRRIGATING

By irrigation is meant the purposeful distribution of water over soil by man by means of diverting streams or by the use of canals in the shape of ditches or troughs for conveying and directing part of a water supply, or by means of some other man-directed power to raise water to the required level.

The Igorot employ three methods of irrigation: One, the simplest and most natural, is to build sementeras along a small stream which is turned into the upper sementera and passes from one to another, falling from terrace to terrace until all water is absorbed, evaporated, or all available or desired land is irrigated. Usually such streams are diverted from their courses, and they are often carried long distances out of their natural way. The second method is to divert a part of a river by means of a stone dam. The third method is still more artificial than the preceding—the water is lifted by direct human power from below the sementera and poured to run over the surface.

The first method is the most common, since the mountains in Igorot land are full of small, usually perpetual, streams. There are practically no streams within reach of suitable pueblo sites which are not exhausted by the Igorot agriculturist. Everywhere small streams are carefully guarded and turned wherever there is a square yard of earth that may be made into a rice sementera. Small streams in some cases have been wound for miles around the sides of a mountain, passing deep gullies and rivers in wooden troughs or tubes.

Much land along the river valleys is irrigated by means of dams, called by the Igorot "lung-ud'." During the season of 1903 there was one dam (designated the main dam in Pl. LVII—see also Pls. LV and LVI) across the entire river at Bontoc, throwing all the water which did not leak through the stones into a large canal on the Bontoc side of the valley. Half a mile above this was another dam (called the upper dam in Pl. LVII) diverting one-half the stream to the same valley, only onto higher ground. Immediately below the main dam were two low piles of stones (designated weirs) jutting into the shallow stream from the Bontoc side, and each gathering sufficient water for a few sementeras. Within a quarter of a mile below the main dam were three other loose, open weirs of rocks, two of which began on a shallow island, throwing water to the Samoki side of the river. In the stream a short distance farther down a shallow row of rocks and gravel turned water into three new sementeras constructed early in the year on a gravel island in the river.

The main dam is about 12 feet high, 2 feet broad at the top, 8 or 10 at the bottom, and is about 300 feet long. It is built each year during November and December, and requires the labor of fifteen or twenty men about six weeks. It is constructed of river-worn bowlders piled

pile; the rocks are dug out. The top stones are flat on the upper sur-
filled until a level results. A pathway across the river for the people from
sticks is no slight one. A [illegible] until its destruction by the freshets of
often days—of patient, and [illegible]
sticks before it is finally [illegible] new piece of primitive engineering. It, with
soil is put back over the pl[illegible] for at least two years; but it was completed
rich soil. These irrigate[illegible] small, extending only half way across the river,
in such places as can be r[illegible]. This dam turns water into a canal averag-
much as the water must [illegible] about 5 inches of water. The canal, called
no two sementeras on th[illegible] feet long from the dam at *a* in Pl. LVII to
water course. The resu[illegible] into the level area at *b*. For about 530 feet
and usually on one o[illegible] impossible for the primitive engineer to con-
mountain land is well [illegible] earth, as the solid rock of the mountain dips
water-worn supply in [illegible] About fifty sections of large pine trees were
built of these undress[illegible] into troughs, called "ta-la′-kan," which have
These walls are called [illegible] water by means of buttresses, by wooden scaffold-
high and from a foo[illegible] and by attachment to the overhanging rocks, until
of the top layer of st[illegible] artificial waterway from the dam to the tract
sementeras. The to[illegible]
stone steps made by [illegible]
wall at regular int[illegible] sense has been shown and no small amount
(see Pl. LIII). [illegible] the construction of this last irrigating scheme.

These stone wall[illegible] foot or more in diameter, and have a waterway dug
each year, generally [illegible] 12 inches deep and wide. These trees were felled
ing. This work f[illegible] with the wasay, a short-handled tool with an iron
nude. At times a [illegible] an inch and a half wide, and convertible alike into
under the girdle.

In the Banawi[illegible] a fall of about 22 feet between *a* at the upper
walls certainly 7[illegible] discharge from the troughs.[1] This fall in a
since the earth i[illegible] 3,000 feet seems needlessly great; however, the

It is safe to s[illegible] has shown excellent judgment in the matter.
dry season in th[illegible] the dam (upper dam) where it is, only half the
as about Bont[illegible] built across. Second, there is a rapids immediately
water where th[illegible] had the Igorot built his dam below the rapids, a dam

A single are[illegible] would have raised the water to a much lower level;
is frequently [illegible] necessitated a canal probably 10 or 12 feet deep instead
beautiful view[illegible]
terraces. Wi[illegible]
every pocket [illegible]
alive. Like [illegible]
side, and, wi[illegible]
carpeted sta[illegible]
struck with [illegible]
industry of [illegible]

[illegible] by a primitive surveying outfit as follows:
[illegible] used for a liquid level, was sighted from a camera tripod.
[illegible] to the tripod showed the distance of the rifle above the sur-
[illegible] surveyor's tape measured the distance between the tripod and the
[illegible] had an attached tape to show the distance of the point sighted
[illegible] the water.
[illegible] W. F. Smith, American teacher in Bontoc, for assisting me in
[illegible] measurements.
[illegible] scaffolding supporting the troughs is suggested by the statement
[illegible] brimming full of swift-running water, while our "surveying"
[illegible] accompanied by half a dozen juvenile Igorot sightseers, weighed
[illegible] was often distributed along in the troughs, which we waded,
[illegible] feet.

of three. Third, the height of the water at the upper dam has enabled him to lay the log section of the waterway above the high-water mark of the river, thus, probably, insuring more or less permanence. Had the dam been built much lower down the stream the troughs would have been near the surface of the river and been torn away annually by the freshets, or the people would be obliged each year to tear down and reconstruct that part of the canal. As it now is it is probable that only the short dam will need to be rebuilt each year.

All dams and irrigating canals are built directly by or at the expense of the persons benefited by the water. Water is never rented to persons with sementeras along an artificial waterway. If a person refuses to bear his share of the labor of construction and maintenance his sementeras must lie idle for lack of water.

All sementera owners along a waterway, whether it is natural or artificial, meet and agree in regard to the division of the water. If there is an abundance, all open and close their sluice gates when they please. When there is not sufficient water for this, a division is made—usually each person takes all the water during a certain period of time. This scheme is supposed to be the best, since the flow should be sufficient fully to flood the entire plat—a 100-gallon flow in two hours is considered much better than an equal flow in two days.

During the irrigating season, if there is lack of water, it becomes necessary for each sementera owner to guard his water rights against other persons on the same creek or canal. If a man sleeps in his house during the period in which his sementeras are supposed to receive water, it is pretty certain that his supply will be stolen, and, since he was not on guard, he has no redress. But should sleep chance to overtake him in his tiresome watch at the sementeras, and should some one turn off and steal his water, the thief will get clubbed if caught, and will forfeit his own share of water when his next period arrives.

The third method of irrigation—lifting the water by direct human power—is not much employed by the Igorot. In the vicinity of Bontoc pueblo there are a few sementeras which were never in a position to be irrigated by running water. They are called "pay-yo′ a kao-u′-chan," and, when planted with rice in the dry season, need to be constantly tended by toilers who bring water to them in pots from the river, creeks, or canals. On the Samoki side of the valley during a week or so of the driest weather in May, 1903, there were four "well sweeps," each with a 5-gallon kerosene-oil can attached, operating nearly all day, pouring water from a canal into sementeras through 60 or 80 feet of small, wooden troughs.

TURNING THE SOIL

Since rice, called "pa-kü′," is the chief agricultural product of the Igorot it will be considered in the following sections first, after which data of other vegetable products will be given.

together without adhesive. The top stones
face, and the dam is a pathway across the
the time of its completion until its des
June or July.

The upper dam is a new piece of pri
its canal, has been in mind for at least tw
only in 1903. The dam is small, extending
and beginning on an island. This dam
ing 3 feet wide and carrying about 5 inc
"a'-lak," is about 3,000 feet long fro
the place of discharge into the level
of this distance it was impossible fo
struct a canal in the earth, as the
vertically into the river. About fift
brought and hollowed into trough
been secured above the water by mea
ing, called "to-kod'," and by attachi
there is now a continuous artificial
of irrigated land.

Considerable engineering sense
of labor expended in the constr
The pine logs are a foot or mor
in them about 10 or 12 inches
and the troughs dug with the
blade only an inch a
ax and adz.

There seems to be a fall
dam and *b* at the dischar
distance of about 3,000 fe
primitive engineer has sh
First, by putting the dam
stream had to be built ac
below the dam, and, had th
of the same height would
this would have necessita

[1] This estimate was obtained
A rifle, with a bottle attach
A measuring tape attached t
face of the water. A survey
leveling rod, which also hac
above the surface of the w
I am indebted to Mr. W
obtaining these measurem
The strength of the sca
that the troughs were h
party of four adults, ac
about 900 pounds, and
within a space of 30 fe

while the implements are withdrawn from the earth and jabbed
ı new place, while the syllable pronounced at that instant
ly jabbed into the air. Again they withdraw their imple-
ıging and working in rhythmic unison, again jab kay-kay
The implements are now thrust about 8 inches below the
song ceases; each toiler pries her section of the soil loose
ıoment, together they push their tools from them, the mass
›me 2 feet long, 1 foot wide, and 8 inches deep—falls away
ater, and the song begins again. As the earth is turned a
passed by in the camote harvest, is discovered; the old woman
up and lays it on the dry ground beside her. The little girl
omes for it and stores it in a basket on the terrace wall with a
›zen others found during the morning.
.er a section of earth 10 or 15 feet square has been turned the
ımic labor and song ceases. Each person now grasps her kay-kay
ı one hand at the middle and the other near the sharpened end and
ch it rapidly crumbles and spreads about the new-turned soil. Now
.ey trample the bed thoroughly, throwing out any stones or pebbles
ıiscovered by their feet, and frequently using the kay-kay further to break up some small clod of earth. Finally a large section of the sementera is prepared, and the toilers form in line abreast and slowly tread back and forth over the plat, making the bed soft and smooth beneath the water for the transplanting.

It is a delightful picture in the soil-turning season to see the acres of terraces covered by groups of toilers, relieving their labors with almost constant song.

I saw only one variation from the above methods in the Bontoc area. In some of the large sementeras in the flat river bottom near Bontoc pueblo a herd of seventeen carabaos was skillfully milled round and round in the water, after the soil was turned, stirring and mixing the bed into a uniform ooze. The animals were managed by a man who drove them and turned them at will, using only his voice and a long switch. It is impossible to get carabaos to many irrigated sementeras because of the high terrace walls, but this herd is used annually in the Bontoc river bottom.

After each rice harvest the soil of the irrigated sementera is turned for planting camotes, but this time it is turned dry. More effort is needed to thrust the kay-kay deep enough into the dry soil, and it is thrust three or four times before the earth may be turned. Only one-half the surface of a sementera is turned for camotes. Raised beds are made about 2 feet wide and 8 to 12 inches high. The spaces between these beds become paths along which the cultivator and harvester walks. The soil is turned from the spaces used as paths over the spaces which become beds, but the earth under the bed is not turned or loosened.

Bontoc beds are almost invariably constructed like parallel-sided, square-cornered saw teeth standing at right angles to the blade of the saw, which is also a camote bed, and are well shown in Pl. LXII. In Tulubin this saw-tooth bed also occurs, but the continuous spiral bed and the broken, parallel, straight beds are equally as common; they are shown in figs. 2 and 3.

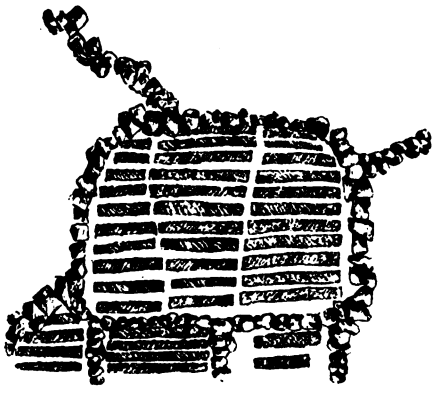


FIG. 2.—Parallel camote beds.

FIG. 3.—Spiral camote beds.

The mountain-side sementera for camotes, maize, millet, and beans is prepared simply by being scratched or picked an inch or two deep with the woman's camote stick, the su-wan'. If the plat is new the grass is burned before the scratching occurs, but if it is cultivated annually the surface seldom has any care save the shallow work of the su-wan'; in fact, the surface stones are seldom removed.

In the season of 1903, the first rains came April 5, and the first mountain sementera was scratched over for millet April 10, after five successive daily rains.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LX. MUD-SPATTERED SOIL TURNERS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXI. SOIL TURNERS TRAMPING THE TURNED SOIL SMOOTH AND SOFT.

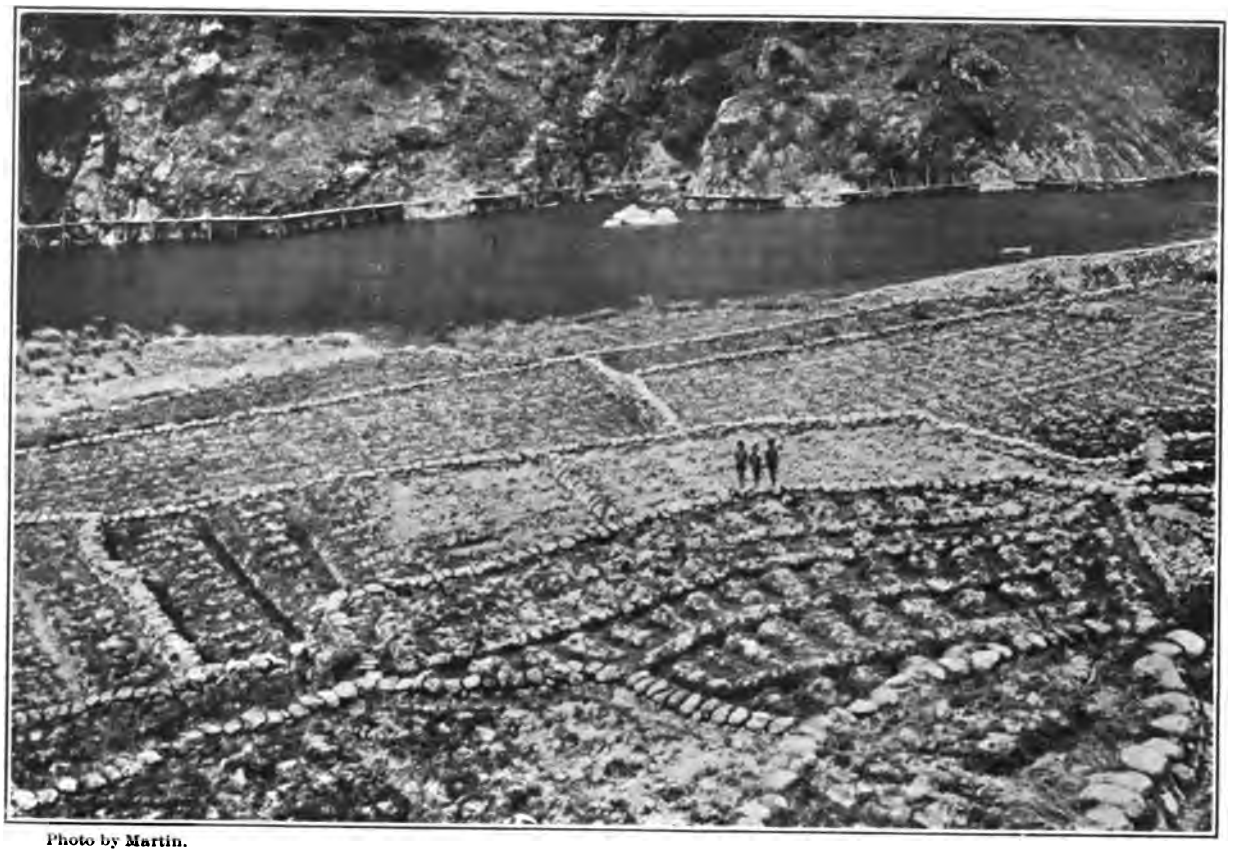


Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXII. BONTOC CAMOTE BEDS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXIII. MEN CROSSING THE RIVER WITH PIG MANURE TO FERTILIZE THE RICE SEMENTERAS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXIII. MEN CROSSING THE RIVER WITH PIG MANURE TO FERTILIZE THE RICE SEMENTERAS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXIV. WOMAN DIGGING HER FINAL CAMOTE CROP AND WORKING DEAD GRASS BENEATH THE SOIL FOR FERTILIZER.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXV. THE RICE SEED BEDS AT TRANSPLANTING TIME, WITH GRANARIES IMMEDIATELY BEYOND.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXVI. WOMEN TRANSPLANTING RICE.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXVII. THE BIRD SCARERS, KI'-LAO, FLOATING OVER A FIELD OF RIPENING RICE.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXVIII. AN OUTLOOK TO GUARD AGAINST WILD HOGS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXIX. HARVESTING THE RICE.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXX. TWO HARVESTERS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXI. CAMOTE HARVEST.

FERTILIZING

Much care is taken in fertilizing the irrigated sementeras. The hog of a few pueblos in the Bontoc area, as in Bontoc and Samoki, is kept confined all its life in a walled, stone-paved sty dug in the earth (see Pl. LXXVII). Into this inclosure dry grasses and dead vines are continually placed to absorb and become rotted by the liquids. As the soil of the sementera is turned for the new rice crop these pigsties are cleaned out and the rich manure spread on the beds.

The manure is sometimes carried by women though generally by men, and the carriers in a string pass all day between the sementeras and the pueblo, each bearing his transportation basket on his shoulder containing about 100 pounds of as good fertilizer as agricultural man ever thought to employ.

The manure is gathered from the sties with the two hands and is dumped in the sementera in 10-pound piles about 5 feet apart after the soil has been turned and trod soft and even.

It is said that in some sections of Igorot land dry vegetable matter is burned so that ash may be had for fertilizing purposes.

I have seen women working long, dry grass under the soil in camote sementeras at the time the crop was being gathered (Pl. LXIV), but I believe fertilizers are seldom employed, except where rice is grown. Mountain-side sementeras are frequently abandoned after a few years' service, as they are supposed to be exhausted, whereas fertilization would restore them.

SEED PLANTING

Pad-cho-kan′ is the name of the sementera used as a rice seed bed. One or more small groups of sementeras in every pueblo is so protected from the cold rains and winds of November and December and is so exposed to the warm sun that it answers well the purposes of a primitive hotbed; consequently it becomes such, and anyone who asks permission of the owner may plant his seed there (see Pl. LXV).

The seed is planted in the beds after they have been thoroughly worked and softened, the soil usually being turned three times. The planting in Bontoc occurs the first part of November. November 15, 1902, the rice had burst its kernel and was above water in the Bontoc beds. The seed is not shelled before planting, but the full fruit heads, sĭn-lu′-wi, are laid, without covering, on the soft ooze, under 3 or 4 inches of water. They are laid in rows a few inches apart, and are so close together that by the time the young plants are 3 inches above the surface of the water the bed is a solid mass of green.

Bontoc pueblo has six varieties of rice. Neighboring pueblos have others; and it is probable that fifty, perhaps a hundred, varieties are

...TING THE RICE S...

FERTILIZING

...fertilizing the irriga...
...Bontoc area, as in B...
...walled, stone-paved ...
...inclosure dry g...
...and become ...
...turned for the ...
...manure spread ...
...carried by wom...
...pass all day ...
...transportation ...
...as good fert...

...from the stic...
...10-pound p...
...trod soft an...
...sections of Igo...
...had for fer...
...long, dry ...
...crop was bei...
...employed...
...are frequently...
...to be ...

SEED PLANT...

...of the se...
...of sement...
...winds of N...
...that it answ...
...becomes s...
...his seed ...
...the beds ...
...soil usuall...
...the first ...
...kernel a...
...shelled before...
...without coverin...
...are laid in ...
...the time th...
...the bed is n...
...six varieties ...
...able that fi...

The women pull up the young rice plants in the seed beds and tie them in bunches about 4 inches in diameter. They transport them by basket to the newly prepared sementera and dump them in the water so they will remain fresh.

As has been said, the manure fertilizer is placed about the sementera in piles. The women thoroughly spread this fertilizer with their hands and feet when they transplant (see Pl. LIX). When the soil is ready the transplanter grasps a handful of the plants, twists off 3 or 4 inches of the blades, leaving the plant about 6 inches long, and, while holding the plants in one hand, with the other she rapidly thrusts them one by one into the soft bed. They are placed in fairly regular rows, and are about 5 inches apart. The planter leans enthusiastically over her work, usually resting one elbow on her knee—the left elbow, since most of the women are right-handed—and she sets from forty to sixty plants per minute.

When the sementeras are planted they present a clean and beautiful appearance—even the tips of the rice blades twisted off are invariably crowded into the muddy bed to assist in fattening the crop.

As many as a dozen women often work together in one sementera to hasten the planting. There are usually two or three little girls with their mothers, who while away the hours playing work. They stuff up the chinks of the stone walls with dirt and vegetable matter; they carry together the few camotes discovered in this last handling of the old camote bed; and they quite successfully and industriously play at transplanting rice, though such small girls are not obliged to work in the field.

Camotes are also transplanted. The women cut or pick off the "runners" from the perpetual vines in the sementeras near the dwellings. These they transplant in the unirrigated mountain sementeras after the crops of millet and maize have been gathered.

The irrigated sementeras are also planted to camotes by transplanting from these house beds. This transplanting lasts about six weeks in Bontoc, beginning near the middle of July.

Some little sugar cane is grown by the Igorot of the Bontoc area. It is claimed to grow up each year from the roots left at the preceding harvest. At times new patches of cane are started by transplanting shoots from the parent plants. It is said that in January the stalks are cut and set in a rich mud, and that in the season of Baliling, from about July 15 until early in September, the rooted shoots are transplanted to the new beds.

CULTIVATING

The chief cultivation given to Igorot crops is bestowed on rice, though all cultivated lands are remarkably free from weeds. The rice sementeras are carefully weeded, "suckers" are pulled out, and the beds are

matic
nogs
rac-
water
ople
tera
and
the

ful
walls
so
ently
rom

ploy
out 8
when
readily

rrows."
leaf, or
coarse
ove the
ably is
tive of
om the
y over

i'-lao.
ally the
is also

made in other shapes, as that of man, the lizard, etc. The pole is about 20 feet high, and is stuck in the earth at such an angle that the swinging figure attached by a line at the top of the pole hangs well over the sementera and about 3 or 4 feet above the grain (see Pl. LXVII). The bird-like ki′-lao is hung by its middle, at what would be the neck of the bird, and it soars back and forth, up and down, in a remarkably lifelike way. There are often a dozen ki′-lao in a space 4 rods square, and they are certainly effectual, if they look as bird like to ti-lĭn′ as they do to man. When seen a short distance away they appear exactly like a flock of restless gulls turning and dipping in some harbor.

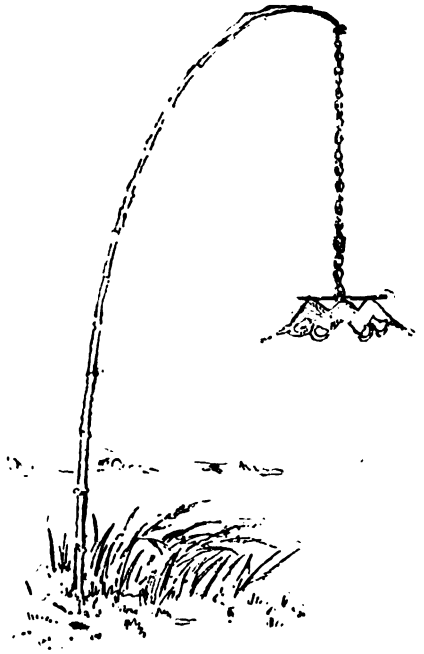


FIG. 4.—Bird scarer in rice field.

The water-power bird scarers are ingenious. Across a shallow, running rapids in the river or canal a line, called "pi-chug′," is stretched, fastened at one end to a yielding pole, and at the other to a rigid pole. A bowed piece of wood about 15 inches long and 3 inches wide, called "pit-ug′," is suspended by a line at each end from the horizontal cord. This pit-ug′ is suspended in the rapids, by which it is carried quickly downstream as far as the elasticity of the yielding pole and the pi-chug′ will allow, then it snaps suddenly back upstream and is ready to be carried down and repeat the jerk on the relaxing pole. A system of cords passes high in the air from the jerking pole at the stream to other slender, jerked poles among the sementeras. From these poles a low jerking line runs over the sementeras, over which are stretched at right

thinned generally, so that each plant will have all needful chance to develop fruit. This weeding and thinning is the work of women and half-grown children. Every day for nearly two months, or until the fruit heads appear, the cultivators are diligently at work in the sementeras. No tools or agricultural implements other than bare hands are used in this work.

The men keep constant watch of the sementera walls and the irrigat ing canals, repairing all, thus indirectly assisting the women in the cultivation by directing water to the growing crop and by conserving when it is obtained.

PROTECTING

The rice begins to fruit early in April, at which time syste effort to protect the new grain from birds, rats, monkeys, and wild commences. This effort continues until the harvest is completed, tically for three months. Much of this labor is performed by power, much by wind power, and about all the children and old in a pueblo are busied from early dawn until twilight in the se as independent guards. Besides, throughout the long night women build fires among the sementeras and guard their crop wild hog. It is a critical time with the Igorot.

The most natural, simplest, and undoubtedly the most protection of the grain is the presence of a person on the t of the sementera, whether by day or night. Hundreds of guarded each day in Bontoc by old people and children, wh erect small screens of tall grass to shade and protect the the sun.

The next simplest method is one followed by the boys. a hollow section of carabao horn, cut off at both end inches in length; it is called "kong-ok′." This the birds are near, producing an open, resonant sound wh be heard a mile.

The wind tosses about over the growing grain vari The pa-chĕk′ is one of these. It consists of a single a bunch of small dry leaves, suspended by a cord fr grass 6 or 8 feet high; the leaf, the sa-gi-kak′, han fruit heads. It swings about slightly in the bree some protection against the birds. I believe it t the various things devised by the Igorot to prote multitudes of ti-lĭn′—the small, brown ricebird[1] the Archipelago.

The most picturesque of these wind-tossed bir The ki′-lao is a basket-work figure swung from a shape and size of the distended wings of a larg

[1] *Munia jagori* (Martens).

when they started out in the morning. The younger children are toddling by the side of their father or mother, a small, dirty hand smothered in a large, labor-cracked one; or else are carried on their father's back or shoulder, or perhaps astride their mother's hip. The old men and women, almost always unsightly and ugly, who go to the sementera only to guard and not to toil, come slowly and feebly home, often picking their way with a staff. There is much laughing and coquetting among the young people. A boy dashes by with several girls in laughing pursuit, and it is not at all likely that he escapes them with all his belongings. Many of the younger married women carry babies; some carry on their heads baskets filled with weeds used as food for the pigs, and all have their small rump baskets filled with "greens" or snails or fish.

A man may carry on his shoulder a huge short log of wood cut in the mountains, the wood partially supported on the shoulder by his spear; or he perhaps carries a large bunch of dry grass to be thrown into the pigpen as bedding; or he comes swinging along empty handed save for his spear used as a staff. Most of the returning men and boys carry the empty topil, the small, square, covered basket in which rice for the noon meal is carried to the sementera; sometimes a boy carries a bunch of three or four, and he dangles them open from their strings as he dances along.

For an hour or more the procession continues—one almost-naked figure following another—all dirty, most of them doubtless tired, and yet seemingly happy and content with the finish of their day of toil. It is long after dark before the last straggler is in.

HARVESTING

Rice harvesting in Bontoc is a delightful and picturesque sight to an American, and a most serious religious matter to the Igorot.

Though ceremonials having to do with agriculture have purposely been omitted from this chapter, yet, since one of the most striking and important features of the harvesting is the harvest ceremonial, it is thought best to introduce it here.

Sa-fo′-sab is the name of the ceremony. It is performed in a pathway adjoining each sementera before a single grain is gathered. In the path the owner of the field builds a tiny fire beside which he stands while the harvesters sit in silence. The owner says:

"So-mi-ka-ka′ pa-kü′ ta-mo i-sa′-mi sĭk′-a kĭn-po-num′ nan a-lang′," which, freely rendered, means, "Palay, when we carry you to the granary, increase greatly so that you will fill it."

As soon as the ceremonial is said the speaker harvests one handful of the grain, after which the laborers arise and begin the harvest.

In the trails leading past the sementera two tall stalks of runo are

planted, and these, called "pud-i-pud'," warn all Igorot that they must not pass the sementera during the hours of the harvest. Nor will they ignore the warning, since if they do they are liable to forfeit a hog or other valuable possession to the owner of the grain.

I spent half a day trying to get close enough to a harvesting party to photograph it. All the harvesters were women, and they scolded our party long and severely while we were yet six or eight rods distant; my Igorot boys carrying the photographic outfit—boys who had lived four months in my house—laughingly but positively refused to follow me closer than three or four rods to the sementera. No photographs were obtained at that time. It was only after the matter was talked over by some of the men of the pueblo that photographs could be willingly obtained, and the force of the warning pud-i-pud' withdrawn for our party. Even during the time my Igorot boys were in the trail by a harvest party all other Igorot passed around the warning runo. The Igorot says he believes the harvest will be blasted even while being gathered should one pass along a pathway skirting any side of the sementera.

Several harvesters, from four to a dozen, labor together in each sementera. They begin at one side and pass across the plat, gathering all grain as they pass. Men and women work together, but women are recognized the better harvesters, since their hands are more nimble. Each fruited stalk is grasped shortly below the fruit head, and the upper section or joint of the stalk, together with the fruit head and topmost leaf, is pulled off. As most Bontoc Igorot are right-handed, the plucked grain is laid in the left hand, the fruit heads projecting beyond between the thumb and forefinger while the leaf attached to each fruit head lies outside and below the thumb. When the proper amount of grain is in hand (a bunch of stalks about an inch in diameter) the useless leaves, all arranged for one grasp of the right hand, are stripped off and dropped; the bunch of fruit heads, topping a 6-inch section of clean stalk or straw is handed to a person who may be called the binder. This person in all harvests I have seen was a woman. She binds all the grain three, four, or five persons can pluck; and when there is one binder for every three gatherers the binder finds some time also to gather.

The binder passes a small, prepared strip of bamboo twice around the palay stalks, holds one end between her teeth and draws the binding tight; then she twists the two ends together, and the bunch is secure. The bunch, the manojo of the Spaniard, the sĭn fĭng-e' of the Igorot, is then piled up on the binder's head until a load is made. Before each bunch is placed on the pile the fruitheads are spread out like an open fan. These piles are never completed until they are higher than the woman's arm can reach—several of the last bunches being tossed in place, guided only by the tips of the fingers touching the butt of the

straw. The women with their heads loaded high with ripened grain are striking figures—and one wonders at the security of the loads.

When a load is made it is borne to the transportation baskets in some part of the harvested section of the sementera, where it is gently slid to the earth over the front of the head as the woman stoops forward. It is loaded into the basket at once unless there is a scarcity of binders in the field, in which case it awaits the completion of the harvest.

In all agricultural labors the Igorot is industrious, yet his humor, ever present with him, brings relief from continued toil. The harvest field is no exception, since there is much quiet gossip and jest during the labors.

In 1903 rice was first harvested May 2. The harvest continued one month, the crop of a sementera being gathered here and there as it ripened. The Igorot calls this first harvest month the "moon of the small harvest." During June the crop is ripened everywhere, and the harvest is on in earnest; the Igorot speaks of it as the "moon of the all harvest."

I had no view of the harvest of millet or maize; however, I have seen in the pueblo much of each grain of some previous harvest. The millet, I am told, is harvested similarly to the rice, and the clean-stalked bunches are tied up in the same way—only the bunches are four or five times larger.

The fruit head, or ears, of the maize is said to be plucked off the stalks in the fields as the American farmer gathers green corn or seed corn. It is stored still covered with its husks.

The camote harvest is continued fairly well throughout the year. Undoubtedly some camotes are dug every day in the year from the dry mountain-side sementeras, but the regular harvest occurs during November and December, during which time the camotes are gathered from the irrigated sementeras preparatory to turning the soil for the transplanting of new rice.

Women are the camote gatherers. I never saw men, nor even boys, gathering camotes. At no other time does the Igorot woman look so animal like as when she toils among the camote vines, standing with legs straight and feet spread, her body held horizontal, one hand grasping the middle of her short camote stick and the other in the soil picking out the unearthed camotes. She looks as though she never had stood erect and never would stand erect on two feet. Thus she toils day after day from early morning till dusk that she and her family may eat.

STORING

No palay is carried to the a-lang', the separate granary building, or to the dwelling for the purpose of being stored until the entire crop of the sementera is harvested. It may be carried part way, but there it halts until all the grain is ready to be carried home.

[illegible] on the ground or on a roof in the sun two or three [illegible] before storing. When the grain is to be stored away an old [illegible] asks a blessing on it that it may make men, hogs, and [illegible] strong, and fat when they consume it. This ceremony is [illegible] and the man who performs it is known by the title [illegible]

The Igorot granary, the a-lang', is a "hip-roofed" structure about 8 feet long, 5 wide, 4 feet high at the sides and 6 at the ridgepole. The sides are built of heavy pine planks, which are inserted in grooved horizontal timbers, the planks being set up vertically. The floor is about 3 feet from the earth. The roof consists of a heavy, thick cover of long grass securely tied on a pole frame. It is seldom that a granary stands alone—usually there are two or more together, and Bontoc has several groups of a dozen each, as shown in Pl. LXXII. When built together they are better protected from the rain storms. The roofs also are made so they extend close to the earth, thus almost entirely protecting the sides of the structure from the storms. All cracks are carefully filled with pieces of wood wedged and driven in. Even the door, consisting of two or three vertical planks set in grooved timbers, is laboriously wedged the same way. The building is rodent proof, and, because of its wide, projecting roof and the fact that it sets off the earth, it is practically moisture proof.

Most palay is stored in the granaries in the small bunches tied at harvest. The a-lang' is carefully closed again after each sementera crop has been put in. There are granaries in Bontoc which have not been opened, it is said, in eight or more years, except to receive additional crops of palay, and yet the grain is as perfectly preserved as when first stored. Some palay, especially that needed for consumption within a reasonable time, is stored in the upper part of the family dwelling.

Maize and millet are generally stored in the dwelling, in the second and third stories, since not enough of either is grown to fill an a-lang', it is said.

Camotes are sometimes stored in the granary after the harvest of the irrigated fields. Often they are put away in the kubkub, the two compartments at either end of the sleeping room on the ground floor of the dwelling. At other times one sees bushels of camotes put away on the earth under the broad bench extending the full length of the dwelling. In the poorer class of dwellings the camotes are frequently dumped in a corner.

Beans are dried and shelled before storing and are set away in a covered basket, usually in the upper part of the dwelling. Only one or two cargoes are grown by each family, so little space is needed for storage.

Since rice is the staple food and may be preserved almost indefinitely, the Igorot has developed a means and place to care for it. Maize and millet, while probably capable of as long preservation, are generally not

grown in sufficient quantity to require more storage space than the upper part of the dwelling affords. The Igorot has not developed a way to preserve his camotes long after harvest; they are readily perishable, consequently no place has been differentiated as a storehouse.

EXPENSE AND PROFIT

An irrigated sementera 60 by 100 feet, having 6,000 square feet of surface, is valued at two carabaos, or, in money, about 100 pesos. It produces an average annual crop of ten cargoes of palay, each worth 1 peso. Thus there is an annual gross profit of ten per cent on the value of the permanent investment.

It requires ten men one day to turn the soil and fertilize the plat. The wage paid in palay is equivalent to 5 cents per laborer, or 50 cents. Five women can transplant the rice in one day; cost, 25 cents. Cultivating and protecting the crop falls to the members of the family which owns the sementera, so the Igorot say; he claims never to have to pay for such labor. Twenty people can harvest the crop in a day; cost, 1 peso.

The total annual expense of maintaining the sementera as a productive property is, therefore, equivalent to 1.75 pesos. This leaves 8.25 pesos net profit when the annual expense is deducted from the annual gross profit. A net profit of 8.25 per cent is about equivalent to the profit made on the 10,000-acre Bonanza grain farms in the valley of the Red River of the North, and the 5,000-acre corn farm of Iowa.

ZOÖCULTURE

The carabao, hog, chicken, and dog are the only animals domesticated by the Igorot of the Bontoc culture area.

Cattle are kept by Benguet Igorot throughout the extent of the province. Some towns, as Kabayan, have 300 or 400 head, but the Bontoc Igorot has not yet become a cattle raiser.

In Benguet, Lepanto, and Abra there are pueblos with half a hundred brood mares. Daklan, of Benguet, has such a bunch, and other pueblos have smaller herds.

In Bontoc Province between Bontoc pueblo and Lepanto Province a few mares have recently been brought in. Sagada and Titipan each have half a dozen. Near the east side of the Bontoc area there are a few bunches of horses reported among the Igorot, and in February, 1903, an American brought sixteen head from there into Bontoc. These horses are all descendants of previous domestic animals, and an addition of half a hundred is said to have been made to the number by horses abandoned by the insurgents about three years past. Some of the sixteen brought out in 1903 bore saddle marks and the brands common in the coastwise lands. These eastern horses are not used by the Igorot except

for food, and no property right is recognized in them, though the Igorot brands them with a battle-ax brand. He exercises about as much protecting control over them as the Bontoc man does over the wild carabao.

CARABAO

The people of Bontoc say that when Lumawig came to Bontoc they had no domestic carabaos—that those they now have were originally purchased, before the Spaniards came, from the Tinguian of Abra Province.

There are in the neighborhood of 400 domestic carabaos owned in Bontoc and Samoki. Most of them run half wild in the mountains encircling the pueblos. Such as are in the mountains receive neither herding, attention in breeding, feed, nor salt from their owners. The young are dropped in February and March, and their owners mark them by slitting the ear, each person recognizing his own by the mark.

A herd of seventeen, consisting of animals belonging to five owners, ranges in the river bottom and among the sementeras close to Bontoc. These animals are more tame than those of the mountains, but receive little more attention, except that they are taught to perform a certain unique labor in preparing the sementeras for rice, as has been noted in the section on agriculture. This is the only use to which the Bontoc carabao is put as a power in industry. He is seldom sold outside the pueblo and is raised for consumption, chiefly on various ceremonial occasions.

Four men in Bontoc own fifty carabaos each. Three others have a herd of thirty in joint ownership. Others own five and six each, and again a single carabao may be the joint property of two and even six individuals. Carabaos are valued at from 40 to 70 pesos.

HOG

Bontoc has no record of the time or manner of first acquiring the hog, chicken, or dog. The people say they had all three when Lumawig came.

Sixty or 70 per cent of the pigs littered in Bontoc are marked lengthwise with alternate stripes of brick-red or yellowish hair, the other hair being black or white; the young of the wild hog is marked the same. All the pigs, both domestic and wild, outgrow this red or yellow marking at about the age of six months, and when they are a year old become fine-looking black hogs with white marking not unlike the Berkshire of the States. There is no chance to doubt that the Igorot domestic hog was the wild hog in the surrounding mountains a few generations ago.

The Bontoc hog is bred, born, and raised in a secure pen, yet wild blood is infused direct, since pigs are frequently purchased by Bontoc from surrounding pueblos, most of whose hogs run half wild and inter-

mingle with the wild ones of the mountains. That the domestic hog in some places in northern Luzon does thus interbreed with the wild ones is a proved fact. In the Quiangan area I was shown a litter of half-breeds and was told that it was customary for the pueblo sows to breed to the wild boar of the mountains.

The Bontoc hog in many ways is a pampered pet. He is at all times kept in a pen and fed regularly three times each day with camote vines when in season, with camote parings, and small camotes available, and with green vegetal matter, including pusleys, gathered by the girls and women when there are no camote vines. All of his food is carefully washed and cooked before it is given to him.

The pigsty consists of a pit in the earth about 4 feet deep, 5 or 6 feet wide, and 8 or 12 feet long. It is entirely lined with bowlders, and the floor space consists of three sections of about equal size. One end is two or more feet deeper than the other, and it is into this lower space that the washings of the pen are stored in the rotted straw and weeds, and from which the manure for fertilizer is taken. The other end is covered over level with the outside earth with timbers, stones and dirt; it is the pig's bed and is entered by a doorway in the stone wall. Most of these "beds" have a low, grass roof about 30 inches high over them. Underneath the roof is an opening in the earth where the people defecate. Connecting the "bed" section and the opposite lower section of the sty is an incline on which the stone "feed" troughs are located.

As soon as a pig is weaned he is kept in a separate pen, and one family may have in its charge three or four pens. The sows are kept mainly for breeding, and there are many several years old. The richest man in Bontoc owns about thirty hogs, and these are farmed out for feeding and breeding—a common practice. When one is killed it is divided equally between the owner and the feeder. When a litter of pigs is produced the bunch is divided equally, the sow remaining the property of the owner and counting as one in the division. Throughout the Island of Luzon it is the practice to leave most male animals uncastrated. But in Bontoc the boar not intended for breeding is castrated.

Hogs are raised for ceremonial consumption. They are commonly bought and sold within the pueblo, and are not infrequently sold outside. A pig weighing 10 pounds is worth about 3 pesos, and a hog weighing 60 or 70 pounds is valued at about 12 pesos.

CHICKEN

The Bontoc domestic chickens were originally the wild fowl, found in all places in the Archipelago, although some of them have acquired varied colorings and markings, largely, probably, from black and white Spanish fowl, which are still found among them. The markings of the wild fowl, however, are the most common, and practically all small chickens are marked as are their wild kin. The wild fowl bears mark-

ings similar to those of the American black-breasted red game, though the fowls are smaller than the American game fowl. Each of the twelve wild cocks I have had in my hands had perfect five-pointed single combs, and the domestic cock of Bontoc also commonly has this perfect comb. I know of no people within the Bontoc area who now systematically domesticate the wild fowl, though this was found to be the custom of the Ibilao southeast of Dupax in the Province of Nueva Vizcaya. Those people catch the young wild fowl for domestication.

The Bontoc domestic fowl are not confined in a coop except at night, when they sleep in small cages placed on the ground in the dwelling houses. In the daytime they range about the pueblo feeding much in the pigpens, though they are fed a small amount of raw rice each morning. Their nests are in baskets secured under the eaves of the dwelling, and in those baskets the brooding hens hatch their chicks, from eight to twenty eggs being given a hen. The fowl is raised exclusively for ceremonial consumption, and is frequently sold in the pueblo for that purpose, being valued at from half a peso to a peso each. A wild fowl sells for half a peso.

In Banawi of the Quiangan area, south of Bontoc, one may find large capons, but Bontoc does not understand caponizing.

DOG

The dog of the Bontoc Igorot is usually of a solid color, black, white, or yellow, really "buckskin" color. Where he originated is not known. He has none of the marks of the Asiatic dog which has left its impress everywhere in the lowlands of the west coast of Luzon—called in the Islands the "Chino" dog, and in the States the "Eskimo" dog. The Igorot dog is short-haired, sharp-eared, gaunt, and sinewy, with long legs and body. In height and length he ranges from a fair-sized fox terrier to a collie. I fail to see anything in him resembling the Australian dingo or the "yellow cur" of the States. The Ibilao have the same dog in two colors, the black and the "brindle"—the brown and black striped. In fact, a dog of the same general characteristics occurs throughout northern Luzon. No matter what may be his origin, a dog so widely diffused and so characteristically molded and marked must have been on the island long enough to have acquired its typical features here. The dog receives little attention from his owners. Twice each day he is fed sparingly with cooked rice or camotes. Except in the case of the few hunting dogs, he does nothing to justify his existence. He lies about the dwelling most of the time, and is a surly, more or less evil-tempered cur to strangers, though when a pueblo flees to the mountains from its attacking enemies the dog escapes in a spiritless way with the women and children. He is bred mainly for ceremonial consumption.

In Benguet the Igorot eats his dog only after it has been reduced to skin and bones. I saw two in a house so poor that they did not raise their heads when I entered, and the man of the house said they would be kept twenty days longer before they would be reduced properly for eating. No such custom exists in Bontoc, but dogs are seldom fat when eaten. They are not often bought or sold outside the pueblo. A litter of pups is generally distributed about the town, and dogs are constantly bought and sold within the pueblo for ceremonial purposes. They are valued at from 2 to 4 pesos.

CLOTHING PRODUCTION

MAN'S CLOTHING

Up to the age of 6 or 7 years the Igorot boys are as naked as when born. At that time they put on the suk'-lâng, the basket-work hat worn on the back of the head, held in place by a cord attached at both sides and passing across the forehead and usually hidden by the front hair. The suk'-lâng is made in nearly all pueblos in the Bontoc culture area. It does not extend uninterruptedly to the western border, however, since it is not worn at all in Agawa, and in some other pueblos near the Lepanto border, as Fidelisan and Genugan, it has a rival in the headband. The beaten-bark headband, called "a-pong'-ot," and the headband of cloth are worn by short-haired men, while the long-haired man invariably wears the hat. The suk'-lâng varies in shape from the fez-like ti-no-od' of Bontoc and Samoki, through various hemispherical forms, to the low, flat hats developing eastward and perfected in the last mountains west of the Rio Grande de Cagayan. Barlig makes and wears a carved wooden hat, either hemispherical or slightly oval. It goes in trade to Ambawan.

The men of the Bontoc area also have a basket-work, conical rain hat. It is waterproof, being covered with beeswax. It is called "sĕg-fi'," and is worn only when it rains, at which time the suk'-lâng is often not removed.

About the age of 10 the boys frequently affect a girdle. These girdles are of four varieties. The one most common in Bontoc and Samoki is the song-kit-an', made of braided bark-fiber strings, some six to twelve in number and about 12 feet long. They are doubled, and so make the girdle about 6 feet in length. The strings are the twisted inner bark of the same plants that play a large rôle in the manufacture of the woman's skirt. This girdle is usually worn twice around the body, though it is also employed as an apron, passing only once around the body and hanging down over the genitals (see Pl. XXI). Another girdle worn much in Tukukan, Kanyu, and Tulubin is called the "i-kĭt'." It is made of six to twelve braided strings of bejuco (see Pl. LXXX). It is constructed to fit the waist, has loops at both ends, passes once

around the body, and fastens by a cord passing from one loop to the other. Both the sang-ki-tan′ and the i-kĭt′ are made by the women. A third class of girdles is made by the men. It is called ka′-kot, and is worn and attached quite as is the i-kĭt′. It is a twisted rope of bejuco, often an inch in diameter, and is much worn in Mayinit. A fourth girdle, called "ka′-chĭng," is a chain, frequently a dog chain of iron purchased on the coast, oftener a chain manufactured by the men, and consisting of large, open links of commercial brass wire about one-sixth of an inch in diameter.

At about the age of puberty, say at 15, it is usual for the boy to possess a breechcloth, or wa′-nĭs. However, the cloth is worn by a large per cent of men in Bontoc and Samoki, not as a breechcloth but tucked under the girdle and hanging in front simply as an apron. Within the Bontoc area fully 50 per cent of the men wear the breechcloth simply as an apron.

There are several varieties of breechcloths in the area. The simplest of these is of flayed tree bark. It is made by women in Barlig, Tulubin, Titipan, Agawa, and other pueblos. It is made of white and reddish-brown bark, and sometimes the white ones are colored with red ocher. The white one is called "so′-put" and the red one "ti-nan′-ag." Some of the other breechcloths are woven of cotton thread by the women. Much of this cotton is claimed by the Igorot to be tree cotton which they gather, spin and weave, but much also comes in trade from the Ilokano at the coast. Some is purchased in the boll and some is purchased after it has been spun and colored. Many breechcloths are now bought ready made from the Ilokano.

Men generally carry a bag tucked under the girdle, and very often indeed these bags are worn in lieu of the breechcloth aprons—the girdle and the bag apron being the only clothing (see Pl. CXXV and also Frontispiece, where, from left to right, figs. 1, 2, 3, 5, and 7 wear simply a bag). One of the bags commonly worn is the fi-chong′, the bladder of the hog; the other, cho′-kao, is a cloth bag some 8 inches wide and 15 inches long. These cloth bags are woven in most of the pueblos where the cotton breechcloth is made.

Old men now and then wear a blanket, pi′-tay, but the younger men never do. They say a blanket is for the women.

Some few of the principal men in many of the pueblos throughout the area have in late years acquired either the Army blue-woollen shirt, a cotton shirt, or a thin coat, and these they wear during the cold storms of January and February, and on special social occasions.

During the period of preparing the soil for transplanting palay the men frequently wear nothing at the middle except the girdle. In and out of the pueblo they work, carrying loads of manure from the hogpens to the fields, apparently as little concerned or noticed as though they wore their breechcloths.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXII. RICE GRANARIES.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXXIII. BUNCHES OF PALAY CURING ON THE ROOF OF A DWELLING.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXIV. GRANARIES.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXV. CARRYING HOME THE CAMOTES.

PLATE LXXVI. PHILIPPINE CARABAOS.

Photos by Martin.

PLATE LXXVII. BONTOC PIGPENS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXVIII. CAGE IN WHICH FOWLS ARE SHUT AT NIGHT.

Photos by Martin.

PLATE LXXIX. HATS AND HEADBAND.

Photo by Martin.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE LXXX. (*a*) THE BAG POCKET CARRIED IN FRONT; (*b*) THE RAIN HAT.

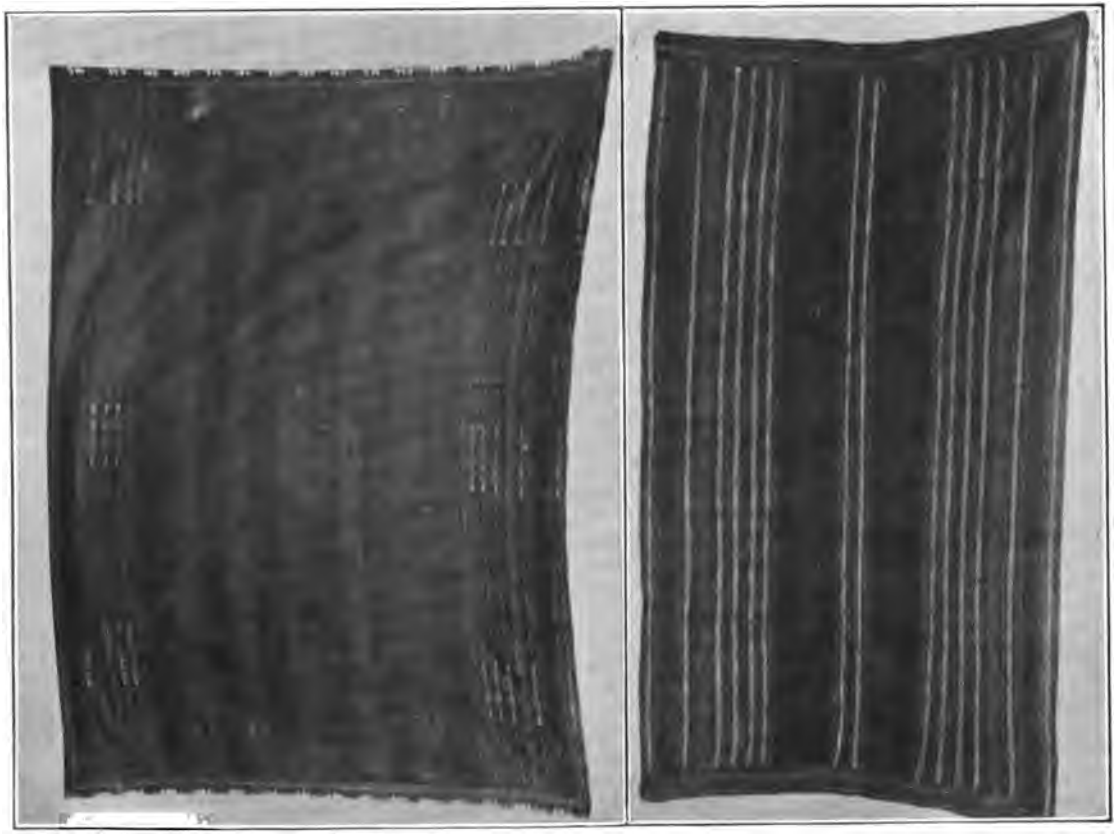


Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXXI. COTTON BLANKETS WOVEN BY IGOROT IN THE WESTERN PART OF THE BONTOC AREA.

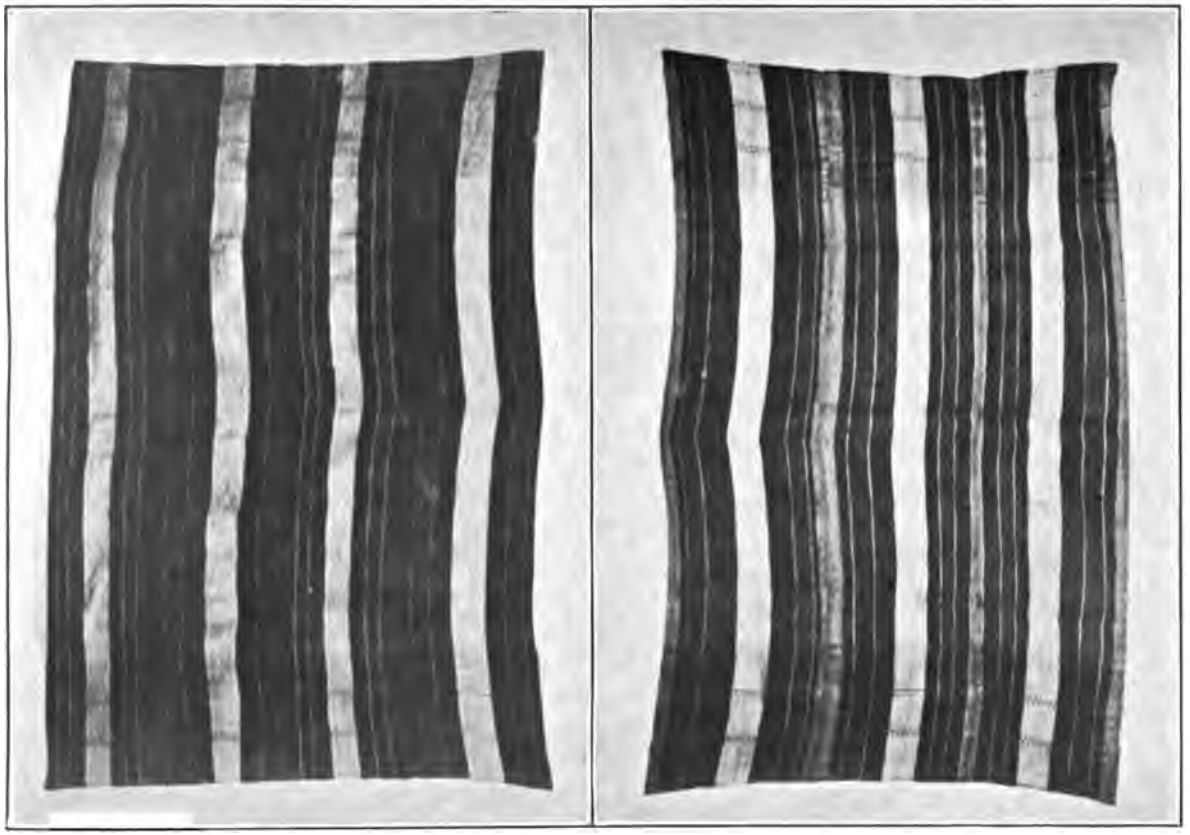


Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXXII. KAMBULO BARK-FIBER BLANKETS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXXIII. WOMAN SPINNING THREAD ON HER NAKED THIGH.

All Igorot—men, women, and children—sleep without breechcloth, skirt, or jacket. If a woman owns a blanket she uses it as a covering when the nights are cold. All wear basket-work nightcaps, called "kut'-lao." They are made to fit closely on the head, and have a small opening at the top. They may be worn to keep the hair from snarling, though I was unable to get any reason from the Igorot for their use, save that they were worn by their ancestors.

WOMAN'S CLOTHING

From infancy to the age of 8 and very often 10 years the little girls are naked; not unfrequently one sees about the pueblo a girl of a dozen years entirely nude. However, practically all girls from about 5 years, and also all women, have blankets which are worn when it is cold, as almost invariably after sundown, though no pretense is made to cover their nakedness with them. During the day this pi'-tay, or blanket, is seldom worn except in the dance. I have never seen women or girls dance without it. The blankets of the girls are usually small and white with a blue stripe down each side and through the middle; they are called "kûd-pas'." Those of the women are of four kinds—the tĭ-na'-pi, the fa-yĭ-ong', the fan-cha'-la, and the pi-nag-pa'-gan. In Barlig, Agawa, and Tulubin the flayed tree-bark blanket is worn; and in Kambulo, east of Barlig, woven bark-fiber blankets are made which sometimes come to Bontoc.

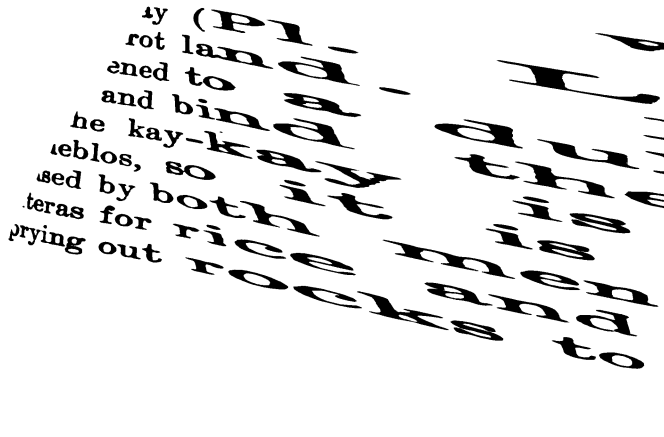
Before a girl puts on her lu-fĭd', or woven bark-fiber skirt, at about 8 or 10 years of age, she at times wears simply the narrow girdle, later worn to hold up the skirt. The skirt is both short and narrow. It usually extends from below the navel to near the knees. It opens on the side, and is frequently so scant and narrow that one leg is exposed as the person walks, the only part of the body covered on that side being under the girdle, or wa'-kĭs—a woven band about 4 inches wide passing twice around the body (see Pl. XXIII). The women sometimes wear the braided-string bejuco belt, i-kĭt', worn by the men.

The lu-fĭd' and the wa'-kĭs are the extent of woman's ordinary clothing. For some months after the mother gives birth to a child she wears an extra wa'-kĭs wrapped tightly about her, over which the skirt is worn as usual. During the last few weeks of pregnancy the woman may leave off her skirt entirely, wearing simply her blanket over one shoulder and about her body. Women wear breechcloths during the three or four days of menstruation.

During the period when the water-soaked soil of the sementera is turned for transplanting palay the women engaged in such labor generally lay aside their skirts. Sometimes they retain a girdle and tuck an apron of camote leaves or of weeds under it before and behind. I have frequently come upon women entirely naked climbing up and down

Igorot's "stone age"? There are stone hammers
in the ironsmith's shop. There are stone trough
which the animal's food is placed. Very ra
ne sees a large, flat stone supported a
stones. It is used as a bench or t
are whetstones for sharpening
tone of the "flint-and-steel"
yed as seats, in construc
ng of various inhabited s
one age"—no memory of
day, to-morrow would reve
gorot is to-day as much i
his present land. He had
r utensils before he manufac

tially a user and maker of we
wood. There are many vesti
the use of wood for purposes
e sphere of stone and metal.
bamboo knife used in circumcisio
ceremonial killing of domestic h
nent of ten or a dozen cutting blad
, wooden spear shafts and battle-ax h
eads attached to hard-wood shafts; a
ails to impale the enemy.
ve uses of wood for cutting flesh and
is and subsequent chapters, enough data
demonstrate that the wood age plays
nitive people prior to the common use of
as practically no occasion for the devel
ls in a country with such woods as the b
e find an order of development differen
temperate zones—the "stone age" appear



OODEN IMPLEMENTS AND UTENSILS

XI) is one of the most indispensable w
It is a hard-wood implement from 5 to
l, flat edge at one end; this end is fire tem
fibers, thus preventing splitting and exc
obtained in the mountains in the vicini
seldom bought or sold. It is the soil-tu
and women in turning the earth in all irri
camotes. It is also employed in digging ar
be removed from sementeras or needed for w

[illegible] and crowbar. A small per cent of [illegible] rendering them more efficient [illegible] ground.

[illegible] stick, is about 2 feet long [illegible]. It is a heavy, compact wood, and [illegible] down 6 or 8 inches, when it usually [illegible] girl for gathering wild plants for the [illegible] of Bontoc and Samoki cones [illegible] near Tulubin. It is employed in [illegible] irrigated sementeras, as those for camotes, [illegible] used to pick over the earth in [illegible] is gathered. Perhaps 1 per cent of [illegible] point. Such an instrument is of [illegible] mountain lands, but is not so serviceable [illegible] irrigated sementeras, because it cuts and bruises [illegible]

[illegible] wooden vessel in the Bontoc area is the kak-wan', [illegible] about six or eight quarts. In it the cooked [illegible] and carried to the animals. Every household [illegible]

[illegible] made wooden dishes, called "chu'-yu", are found [illegible] which the people eat broth of fish or other meats. [illegible] workmanship and, in common with all things of [illegible] are the product of the man's art. Both the [illegible] used to hollow out these bowls.

[illegible] wooden dipper, called "ka-oo'," is found in every [illegible] with the kak-wan', the pig-food pail.

[illegible] long-handled spoon used exclusively as a drinking [illegible] liquor called "sa-fu-éng'."

[illegible] ladle employed in cooking foods.

[illegible] eating spoons, about the size of the dessert spoon [illegible] found in most dwellings. They are usually without [illegible] called "i-chhe'."

[illegible]

[illegible] the only metal implement employed at all commonly [illegible] found in each family. It consists of an iron, steel- [illegible] an inch to an inch and a half in width and about [illegible] It is attached to the short, wooden handle by a [illegible] into the handle. Since the haft is square the [illegible] is instantly converted into either an "ax" with blade [illegible] handle or an "adz" with blade at right angle to the [illegible]

[illegible] used in felling and cutting up all trees, and in getting

and dressing all timbers and boards. It is the sole carpenter tool, unless the man by chance possess a bolo.

There are no metal agricultural implements in common use. As was noted earlier in the chapter, the soil-turning stick and the woman's camote stick are now and then shod with iron, but they are rare.

There are a few large, shallow Chinese iron boilers in the area, used especially for boiling sugar, evaporating salt in Mayinit, and for cooking carabao or large quantities of hog on ceremonial occasions. There are probably not more than two or three dozen such boilers in Bontoc pueblo, though they are becoming much more plentiful during the past three years—since the Igorot has more money and goes more often to Candon on the coast, where he buys them.

POTTERY

Most of the pottery consumed in the Bontoc area is the product of Samoki, the sister pueblo of Bontoc. Samoki pottery meets no competition down the river to the north until in the vicinity of Bitwagan, which makes and vends similar ware both up and down the river. To the south there is also competition, since Data makes and sells an excellent pot to Antedao, Fidelisan, Sagada, Titipan, and other near-by pueblos. It is probable, also, that Lias and Barlig, to the east, are supplied with pottery, and, if so, that their source is Bitwagan. But Bitwagan and Data pots are really not competitors with those of Samoki; they rather supply areas which the Samoki potters can not reach because of distance and the hostility of the people.

There are no traditions clustering around pottery making in Samoki. The potters say they taught themselves, and have always made earthenware.

To-day Samoki pottery is made of two clays—one a reddish-brown mineral dug from pits several feet deep on the hillside, shown in Pl. LXXXII, and the other a bluish mineral gathered from a shallow basin situated on the hillside nearer the river than the pits, and in which a little water stands much of the year.

Formerly Samoki made pottery of only the brown clay, and she used cut grass intermixed for a temper, but she claims those earlier pots were too porous to glaze well. Consequently the experiment was made of adding the blue surface clay, in which there is a considerable amount of fresh and decaying vegetable matter—probably sufficient to give temper, although the potters do not recognize it as such.

Samoki consists of eight ato, one of which is I-kang'-a occupying the outer fringe of dwellings on the northwest side of the pueblo. It is claimed that all of the women of I-kang'-a, whether married or single, are potters. Even women who marry men of the I-kang'-a ato, and who come to that section of the pueblo to live, learn and follow the

It is spade, plow, pickax, and crowbar. A small per cent is shod with an iron point, rendering them more effic breaking up new or sod ground.

The su-wan′, the woman's camote stick, is about inch in diameter (Pl. LXXV). It is a heavy, comm by the woman until worn down 6 or 8 inches, w the property of a small girl for gathering wil pigs. The su-wan′ of the woman of Bontoc in trade, from the mountains near Tulubin. the earth loose in all unirrigated sementeras, beans, and maize. It is also used to pu sementeras when the crop is gathered. sticks is shod with an iron point. Suc service in the rough, stony mountain lo the unshod stick in the irrigated semen the vegetables.

The most common wooden vessel i a vessel, or "pail" holding about six food of the pigs is mixed and carr has two or more of them.

A few small, poorly made wood in each dwelling, from which the All are of inferior workmanship wood made by the Igorot, are knife and fire are used to hollow

A long-handled wooden dipp dwelling. It belongs with the

Tûg-on′ is a large, long-han dipper for the fermented liqu

Fa′-nu is a wooden ladle

A few very-crude eating of America, are found in ornament, and are called

The wa′-say is the only in the area; it is found bitted blade from an inch 6 inches in length. It square haft inserted into implement may be inser parallel to the handle handle.

This is the tool used in felling and cutting

hand and a short, round stick. This process is well illustrated in Pl. XC. The first stage of manufacture is completed and the vessel is set in the sun with the rim of an old broken pot for a supporting base.

In the course of a few hours the shaped and nearly completed rim of the pot becomes strong and set by the heat of the sun. However, the rough and irregular bowl has apparently retained relatively a larger amount of moisture and is in prime condition to be thinned, expanded, and given final form. The pot is now handled by the rim, which is sufficiently rigid for the purpose, and is turned about on its supporting base as is needed, or the base is turned about on the earth like a crude "potter's wheel." A smooth discoidal stone, some 4 or 5 inches in diameter, and a wooden paddle are the instruments used to shape the bowl. The paddle is first dipped in water and rubbed over one of the flattish surfaces of the stone slightly to moisten it, and is then beaten against the outer surface of the bowl, while the stone, tapped against the inner surface, prevents indenting or cracking, and, by offering a more or less nonresisting surface, assists in thinning and expanding the clay. After the upper part of the bowl has been thus completed the potter sits on her feet and haunches, with her knees thrust forward from her. Again and again she moistens her paddle and discoidal stone, and continues the spanking process until the entire bowl of the pot is shaped. It is then set in the sun to dry—this time usually bottom side up.

After it has thoroughly dried, both the inner and outer surfaces are carefully and patiently smoothed and polished with a small stone, commonly a ribbon agate. During this process all pebbles found protruding from the surface are removed and the pits are filled with new clay thoroughly smoothed in place, and the thickness of the pot is made more uniform. The vessel is again placed on its supporting base in the sun, and kept turned and tilted until it has become well dried and set. Two and sometimes three days are required to bring a pot thus far toward completion, though during the same time there are several equally completed by each potter.

There remains yet the burning and glazing. Samoki burns her pots in the morning before sunrise. Immediately on the outskirts of the pueblo there is a large, gravelly place strewn with thin, black ash where for generations the potters coming and going have completed their primitive ware. Usually two or more firings occur each week, and several women combine and burn their pots together. On the earth small stones are laid upon which one tier of vessels is placed, each lying upon its side. Tier upon tier of pots is then placed above the first layer, each on its side and each supported by and supporting other pots. The heat is supplied by pine bark placed beneath and around the lower layer. The pile is entirely blanketed with dead grass tied in small

po
po

p
r

and

cereals, in and about the house. It is made in all the pueblos and is shown in Pl. XCIV. A few other household baskets are often found. Among these are the large, bottle-shaped locust basket, i-wûs′, a smaller basket, ko′-lug, of the same shape used to hold threshed rice, and the open-work spoon basket, so′-long, which usually hangs over the fireplace in each dwelling.

The large winnowing tray, lĭg-o′, shown bottom up in Pl. XCIII, is made in Samoki and Kanyu of a′-nĭs bamboo. There are two sizes of winnowing trays, both of which are employed everywhere in the area.

Several small a′-nĭs-bamboo eating trays, called "ki′-ûg," are shown in Pl. XCIV. These food dishes are used on ceremonial occasions, and some of them can not be purchased. They are made in all pueblos.

Samoki alone is said to make the rice sieve, called "a-ka′-ûg. It passes widely in the pueblo.

Aside from these various basket utensils and implements there are the three kinds of fish traps described in the section on fishing.

There are also three varieties of basket-work hats. The rain hat, called "sĕg-fi′," is made in Bontoc, and may be in imitation of those worn nearer the western coast. This with the suk-lâng, the pocket hat always worn by the men and boys, and the kut′-lao, or sleeping hat, worn by children and adults of both sexes, are described under the head of "Clothing."

WEAPON PRODUCTION

Igorot weapons are few and relatively simple. The bow and arrow, used wherever the Negrito is in Luzon, is not known to the Igorot warrior of the Bontoc culture area. Small boys in Bontoc pueblo make for themselves tiny bows 1½ or 2 feet long with which they snap light arrows a few feet. But the instrument is of the crudest, merely a toy, and is a thing of the day, being acquired from the culture of the Ilokano who live in the pueblo. The Igorot claim they never employed the bow and arrow, and, to-day at least, consider the question as to their ever using it as very foolish, since, they say, pointing to the child's toy, "It is nothing."

In 1665–1668 Friar Casimiro Diaz wrote of the Igorot that they used arrows,[1] but it is believed his statement did not apply to the Bontoc man. Igorot-like people throughout northern Luzon commonly do not have this weapon, yet the large Tinguian group of Abra, west and north of Bontoc, and the Ibilao of southeastern Nueva Vizcaya, Nueva Ecija, and adjacent Isabela employ the bow constantly.

The natural projectile weapon of the Negrito is the bow and arrow; that of the Malayan seems to be the blowgun—at present, however, largely replaced by the spear, though in some southern islands, especially in Paragua, it has held its own.

[1] Igorrotes, Estudio Geográfico y Etnográfico sobre algunos Distritos del Norte de Luzon, by R. P. Fr. Angel Pérez (Manila), 1902.

to-bong' is cut at an angle, and as the tubes end outside the opening in the brick, the air inbreathed by the bellows, as the plungers are raised, is drawn from back of the fireplace—thus the fire is not disturbed.

The fuel is an inferior charcoal prepared by the Igorot from pine.

This bellows is found throughout the Archipelago and is evidently a Malayan product. It is believed that it came to Bontoc with the Igorot from their earlier home and is not, as some say, a Chinese invention.[1] The Igorot manufacturer of metal pipes uses exactly the same kind of bellows, except that it is very much smaller, and so appears like a toy. It is poorly shown in Pl. CIX.

Much of the iron now employed in the manufacture of Igorot weapons is Chinese bar iron coming from China to the Islands at Candon, in Ilokos Sur. However, the people readily make weapons from any iron they may acquire, greatly preferring the scraps of broken Chinese cast-iron pots, vessels purchased primarily for making sugar. In his choice of cast iron the Igorot exhibits a practical knowledge of metallurgy, since cast iron makes better steel than wrought iron—that is, as he has to work.

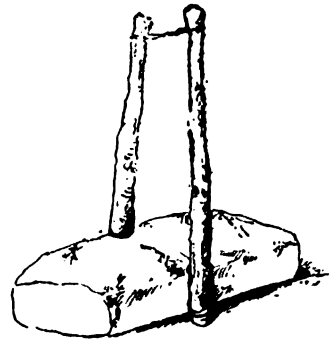


FIG. 5.—Ironsmith's stone hammer.

The anvils of the smithy, numbering four or five, are large rocks set solidly in the earth. The hammers are nearly all stone, though some of the workmen have a small iron hammer used in finishing the weapons.

There are several varieties of stone hammers. One weighing about 30 pounds is 16 inches long, 10 inches wide, and from 4 to 6 inches thick. An inch-deep groove is cut in both edges of the hammer, and into these grooves the short, double wooden handle is attached by a withe. Another hammer, similar to the above in shape and attachment, is about one-third its size and weight. There is a still smaller hammer lashed

[1] This typical Malayan bellows is also found in Siam, and is shown in a half tone from a photograph facing page 186 of Maxwell Somerville's Siam on the Meinam from the Gulf to Aynthia (London, Sampson Low, Marston & Co., 1897).

There is also a crude woodcut of this bellows printed as fig. 2, Pl. XIV, in The Journal of the Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, vol. XXII. With the illustration i the information that the bellows is found in Assam, Salwin, Sumatra, Java, Philippines, and Madagascar.

with leather bands to a single, straight wooden handle; and there is also a round hammer stone about 3 inches in diameter without handle or attachment, which hammer, together with the larger one last mentioned, is largely superseded in some of the smithies by the metal hammer.

The bellows operator sits squatting on a slight platform the height of the bellows, and constantly works the plungers up and down with rhythmic strokes.

Two men at first handle the hot iron—one, the real blade maker, holds the white-hot metal with long-handled iron pinchers (purchased in Candon) and his helper wields the 30-pound hammer. He stands with legs well apart, grasps the heavy hammer with both hands, and swings it back and forth between his legs. The blow is struck at the downward, backward swing.

These smiths weld iron, and also temper it to make steel. The following detailed picture of a welding observed in a Baliwang smithy may be duplicated there any day. The two pieces of iron to be welded were separately heated a dull red. One was then laid on the other and both were cooled with water. Wet earth, gathered for the occasion at the side of the smithy, was then put over them; while still covered they were inserted again in the fire. When red-hot they were withdrawn, the little mound of earth covering the two pieces of iron being still in place but having been brought also to a red heat. A few light blows fell on the red mass, and it was again returned to the fire. Four times the iron was withdrawn and received a few blows with a light hammer wielded by the master smith. On being withdrawn the fifth time half a dozen blows were struck by the helper with the 30-pound hammer. Again the iron was heated, but when removed the sixth time the welding was evidently considered finished, and the shaping of the weapon was then begun. Weldings made by this smith seem to be complete.

The tempering done by the [illegible] crude, and is such as may be seen in any country blacksmith [illegible] States. The iron is heated and is tempered [illegible] ling in [illegible] wooden trough of water. There [illegible] qual[illegible] steel turned out by the Igorot [illegible] ough[illegible] are recognized as more skilful.

[illegible] of [illegible] s made by Baliwang. The [illegible] [illegible] is a simple, single-barbed [illegible] [illegible] s in length. This style of [illegible] [illegible] he smaller, lighter blades [illegible] [illegible] the heavier ones.

[illegible] blade, is next common in [illegible] [illegible] t entirely in killing [illegible] [illegible] this statement—[illegible]

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE LXXXIV. LEPANTO IGOROT WOMAN WEAVING.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXXV. WOODEN "PIG PAILS."

Photo by Martin.

PLATE LXXXVI. GOURD AND WOODEN SPOONS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXXXVII. SAMOKI POTTERS AT THE CLAY PIT.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE LXXXVIII. TRANSPORTING CLAY FROM THE PIT TO THE PUEBLO.

Photos by Jenks.

PLATE LXXXIX. (a) MACERATING THE CLAYS IN A WOODEN MORTAR; (b) BEGINNING A POT.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XC. SHAPING THE RIM OF A POT.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XCI. EXPANDING THE BOWL OF A POT.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE XCII. SMOOTHING AND FINISHING A SUN-DRIED POT.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XCIII. WOMAN'S LARGE TRANSPORTATION BASKET AND WINNOWING TRAY.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE XCIV. HOUSEHOLD BASKETS (SÛG-FI', FA-LO'-KO, KI'-ÛG, KO'-LÛG).

Photos by Martin.

PLATE XCV. MAN'S TRAVELING BASKET; SO-CALLED "HEAD BASKET."

Photos by Martin.

PLATE XCV. MAN'S TRAVELING BASKET; SO-CALLED "HEAD BASKET."

metal ferrule at the tip and frequently is decorated for its full length with bands of brass or tin, or with sheets of either metal artistically incised.

The Balbelasan ax is not used by the pueblos making it, or at least by many of them, but finds its field of usefulness east and northeast of Bontoc pueblo as far as the foothills of the mountains west of the Rio Grande de Cagayan. I was told by the Kalinga of this latter region that the people in the mountain close to the Cagayan in the vicinity of Cabagan Nuevo, Isabela Province, also use this ax.

In the southern and western part of the Bontoc area the battle-ax shares place with the bolo, the sole hand weapon of the Igorot of adjoining Lepanto, Benguet, and Nueva Vizcaya Provinces.

The bolo within the Bontoc area comes from Sapao and from the Ilokano people of the west coast. The southern pueblo in the Bontoc area, Ambawan, uses the bolo of Sapao to the entire exclusion of the battle-ax. Tulubin, the next pueblo to Ambawan, and only an hour from it, uses almost solely the Baliwang battle-ax. Such pueblos as Titipan and Antedao, about three hours west of Bontoc, use both the ax and bolo, while the pueblos further west, as Agawa, Sagada, Balili, Alap, etc., use the bolo exclusively—frequently an Ilokano weapon.

The Sapao bolo is, in appearance, superior to that of Ilokano manufacture. It is a broad blade swelling markedly toward the center, and is somewhat similar in shape to the barong of the Sulu Moro of the Sulu Archipelago. This weapon finds its chief field of use in the Quiangan and Banawi areas. In these districts the bolo is fitted with an open scabbard, and the bright blade presents a novel appearance lying exposed against the red scabbard. The Igorot manufacturer of the bolo does not make the scabbard, and most of the bolos used within the Bontoc area are sheathed in the closed wooden scabbard commonly found in Lepanto and Benguet.

PIPE PRODUCTION, AND SMOKING

The Igorot of Bontoc area make pipes of wood, clay, and metal. All their pipes have small bores and bowls. In Benguet a wooden pipe is commonly made with a bowl an inch and a half in diameter; it has a large bore also. In Banawi I obtained a wooden pipe with a bowl 8¼ inches in circumference and 4 inches in height, but having a bore averaging only half an inch in diameter.

Nearly all pueblos make the pipes they use, but pipes of clay and metal are manufactured by the Igorot for Igorot trade. I never learned that wooden pipes are made by them for commercial purposes.

The wooden pipe of the area varies from simple tubular forms, exactly like a modern cigar holder, to those having bowls set at right angle to the stem. All wooden pipes are whittled by the men, and some of

ry graceful in form and have an excellent polish. They are
least three kinds of wood—ga-sa′-tan, la-no′-ti, and gi-gat′.
s—wooden, clay, or metal—have separable stems.

men in Agawa, a pueblo near the western border of the area,
utiful clay pipes, called "ki-na-lo′-sab." The clay is carefully
d between the fingers until it is soft and fine. It is then
shaped by the fingers, and afterwards, when partially hardened,
ied with a set of five light, wooden tools.

finished bowls are in three different colors. When baked about
ours the pipes come forth gray. Those coming out red have been
d about twelve hours, usually all night. The black ones are made
burning the red bowls about half an hour in palay straw.

wo men in Sabangan and one each in Genugan and Takong—all
tern pueblos—manufacture metal "anito" pipes. To-day brass wire
d the metal of cartridge shells are most commonly employed in making
ese pipes.

The process of manufacture is elaborate and very interesting. First a beeswax model is made the exact size and shape of the finished metal pipe. All beeswax, called "a-tĭd′," used in pipe making comes from Barlig through Kanu, and the illustration (Pl. CVIII) shows the form in which it passes in commerce in the area. A small amount of wax is softened by a fire until it can be flattened in the palm of the hand. It is then rolled around a stick the size of the bore in the bowl. The outside of the wax bowl is next designed as is shown in the illustration (Pl. CVIII). A careful examination of the illustration will show that the design represents the sitting figure of a man. He is resting his elbows on his knees and holding his lower jaw in his hands—eyes, ears, nose, mouth, and fingers are all represented. This design is made in the wax with a small knife. The wax for the short stem piece is flattened and folded around a stick the size of the bore of the stem. The stem piece is then set into the bowl and the design which was started on the bowl is continued over the stem.

When the wax pipe is completed a projecting point of wax is attached to the base of the pipe, and the whole is imbedded in a clay jacket, the point of wax, however, projecting from the jacket. The clay used by the pipe maker is obtained in a pit at Pingad in the vicinity of Genugan. Around the wax point a clay funnel is built. The clay mold, called "bang-bang′-a," is thoroughly baked by a fire. In less than an hour the mold is hardened and brown, and the wax pipe within it has melted and the wax been poured out of the mold through the gate or opening left by the melting point of wax, leaving the mold empty.

A small Malayan bellows, called "op-op′," the exact duplicate in miniature of the double tubular bellows described in the preceding section on "metal weapons," furnishes the draught for a small charcoal

fire. The funnel of the clay mold is filled with pieces of metal, and the entire thing is buried in the fired charcoal. In fifteen minutes the metal melts and runs down through the gate at the bottom of the funnel into the hollow, wax-lined mold. Since the entire mold is hot, the metal does not cool or harden promptly, and the pipe maker taps and jars the mold in order to make the metal penetrate and fill every part.

The mold is set aside to cool and is then broken away from the metal core. To-day the pipe maker possesses a file with which to smooth and clean the crude pipe. Formerly all that labor, and it is extensive, was performed with stones.

It requires two men to make the "anito" pipes—tĭn-ak-ta'-go. One superintends all the work and performs the finest of it, and the second pumps the bellows and smooths and cleans the pipe after it is cast. The two men make four pipes per day, but the purchaser of an "anito" pipe puts days of toil on the metal, smoothing and perfecting it by cleaning and digging out the design until it becomes really a beautiful bit of primitive art.

When a pueblo wants a few tĭn-ak-ta'-go it sends for the manufacturer, and he comes to the pueblo with his helper and remains as long as necessary. Ay-o'-na, of Genugan, annually visits Titipan, Ankiling, Sagada, Bontoc, and Samoki. He usually furnishes all material, and receives a peseta for each pipe, but the pueblo furnishes the food. In this way a pipe maker is a journeyman about half the year.

Tukukan makes a smooth, cast-metal pipe, called "pĭn-e-po-yong'," and Baliwang makes tubular iron pipes at her smithies. They are hammered out and pounded and welded over a core. I have seen several of such excellent workmanship that the welded seam could not be detected on the surface.

In the western part of the area both men and women smoke, and some smoke almost constantly. Throughout the areas occupied by Christians children of 6 or 7 years smoke a great deal. I have repeatedly seen girls not over 6 years of age smoking rolls of tobacco, "cigars," a foot long and more than an inch in diameter, but in Bontoc area small children do not smoke. In most of the area women do not smoke at all and boys seldom smoke until they reach maturity.

In Bontoc the tobacco leaf for smoking is rolled up and pinched off in small sections an inch or so in length. These pieces are then wrapped in a larger section of leaf. When finished for the pipe the tobacco resembles a short stub of a cigar. Only half a dozen whiffs are generally taken in a smoke, and the pipe with its tobacco is then tucked under the edge of the pocket hat. Four pipes in five as they are seen sticking from a man's hat show that the owners stopped smoking long before [illegible] their pipes.

FIRE MAKING

The oldest instrument for fire making used by the Bontoc Igorot is now seldom found. However, practically all boys of a dozen years know how to make and use it.

It is called "co-li'-li," and is a friction machine made of two pieces of dry bamboo. A 2-foot section of dead and dry bamboo is split lengthwise and in one piece a small area of the stringy tissue lining the tube is splintered and picked quite loose. Immediately over this, on the outside of the tube, a narrow groove is cut at right angles to it. This piece of bamboo becomes the stationary lower part of the fire machine. One edge of the other half of the original tube is sharpened like a chisel blade. This section is grasped in both hands, one at each end, and is at first slowly and heavily, afterwards more rapidly, drawn back and forth through the groove of the stationary bamboo, making a small conical pile of dry dust beneath the opening.

After a dozen strokes the sides of the groove and the edge of the friction piece burn brown, presently a smell of smoke is plain, and before three dozen strokes have been made smoke may be seen. Usually before one hundred strokes a larger volume of smoke tells that the dry dust constantly falling on the pile has grown more and more charred until finally a tiny friction-fired particle falls, carrying combustion to the already heated dust cone.

The machine is carefully raised, and, if the fire is permanently kindled, the pinch of smoldering dust is inserted in a wisp of dry grass or other easily inflammable material; in a minute or two flames burst forth, and the fire may be transferred where desired.

The pal-tĭng', the world-wide flint and steel-percussion fire machine, is found with all Bontoc men.

At Sagada there is a ledge of exposed and crumbling rock from which most of the men of the western part of the Bontoc culture area obtain their "flint." The "steel" is any piece of iron which may be had—probably a part of the ferrule from the butt of a spear shaft is used more than is any other one kind of iron.

The pal-tĭng' is secured either in a very small basket or a leather roll which is fastened closed by a string. In this receptacle a small amount of dry tree cotton is also carried. The pal-tĭng' receptacle is carried about in the large bag hanging at the girdle.

Fire is made by a tiny percussion-heated particle of the stone as it flies away under the sharp, glancing blow of the "steel" and catches in the dry cotton held by the thumb nail on the upper surface of the stone.

If the fire maker wishes to light his pipe, he tucks the smoldering cotton lightly into his roll of tobacco; a few draws are sufficient to ignite the pipeful. If an out-of-door fire is desired the cotton is first used to ignite a dry bunch of grass. Should the fire be needed in the

dwelling, the cotton is placed on charcoal. Blowing and care will produce a good, blazing wood fire in a few minutes.

To-day friction matches are known throughout the area, although probably not one person in one hundred has ever owned a box of matches.

The fire syringe, common west of Bontoc Province among the Tinguian, is not known in the Bontoc culture area.

DIVISION OF LABOR

Under this title must be grouped all forms of occupations which are considered necessary to the life of the pueblo.

Up to the age of 5 or 6 years Bontoc children do not work. As has been said in a previous chapter, during the months of April and May many little girls from 5 to 10 work and play together for long hours daily gathering a few varieties of wild plants close about the pueblo for food for the pigs. This labor is unnecessary as soon as the camote vines become large enough for gathering. During June and July these same girls gather the camote vines for pig food. About August this labor falls to the women.

Mention has also been made of the fact that during the latter half of April and May the boys and girls of all ages from 6 or 7 years to 13 or 14 guard the palay sementeras against the birds from earliest dawn till heavy twilight.

Little girls often help about the dwelling by paring camotes for the forthcoming meal.

At all times the elder children, both boys and girls, are baby tenders while their parents work.

Man is the sole hunter and warrior, and he alone fishes when traps or snares are employed.

Only men go to the mountains to cut and bring home firewood and lumber for building purposes; widowed women sometimes bring home dead fallen wood found along the trails. Only men construct the various private and public buildings. They alone build the stone dikes of the sementeras and construct the irrigating ditches and dams; they transport to the pueblo most of the harvested palay. They manufacture and vend basi, and prepare the salted meats. They make all weapons, and all implements and utensils for field and household labors. Contrary to a widespread custom among primitive people, as has been noted, the Igorot man constructs all basket work, whether hats, baskets, trays, or ornaments, and bindings of weapons and implements. Men are the workers of all metal and stone. They are the only cargadors, though in the Kiapa area of Benguet Province women sometimes go on the trails as paid burden bearers for Americans.

Only men are said to tattoo and circumcise. They determine the days of rest and of ceremony for the pueblo, and all pueblo ceremonies are in

'so are the ceremonies of the ato—only men are
ivate household ceremonials.

"control element" of the pueblo. They are the
, and judicial power for the pueblo and each ato;
l the wisdom of their people, and they alone, it is said,
e on important matters.

is the only weaver of fabrics and the only spinner of the
which the fabrics are made. On the west coast the Ilokano
reat deal of the spinning, but the Igorot man has not imitated
the industry, though he has often seen them. Women are the
ters of Samoki, and they alone transport and vend their wares
ier pueblos. In the Mayinit salt industry only the woman tends
salt house, gathering the crude salt solution.

Only the women plant the rice seed, and they alone transplant the palay; they also care for the growing plants and harvest most of the crops. In the transplanting and harvesting of palay the woman is given credit for greater dexterity than the man; men harvest palay only when sufficient women can not be found. Women plant, care for, harvest, and transport to the pueblo all camotes, millet, maize, and beans.

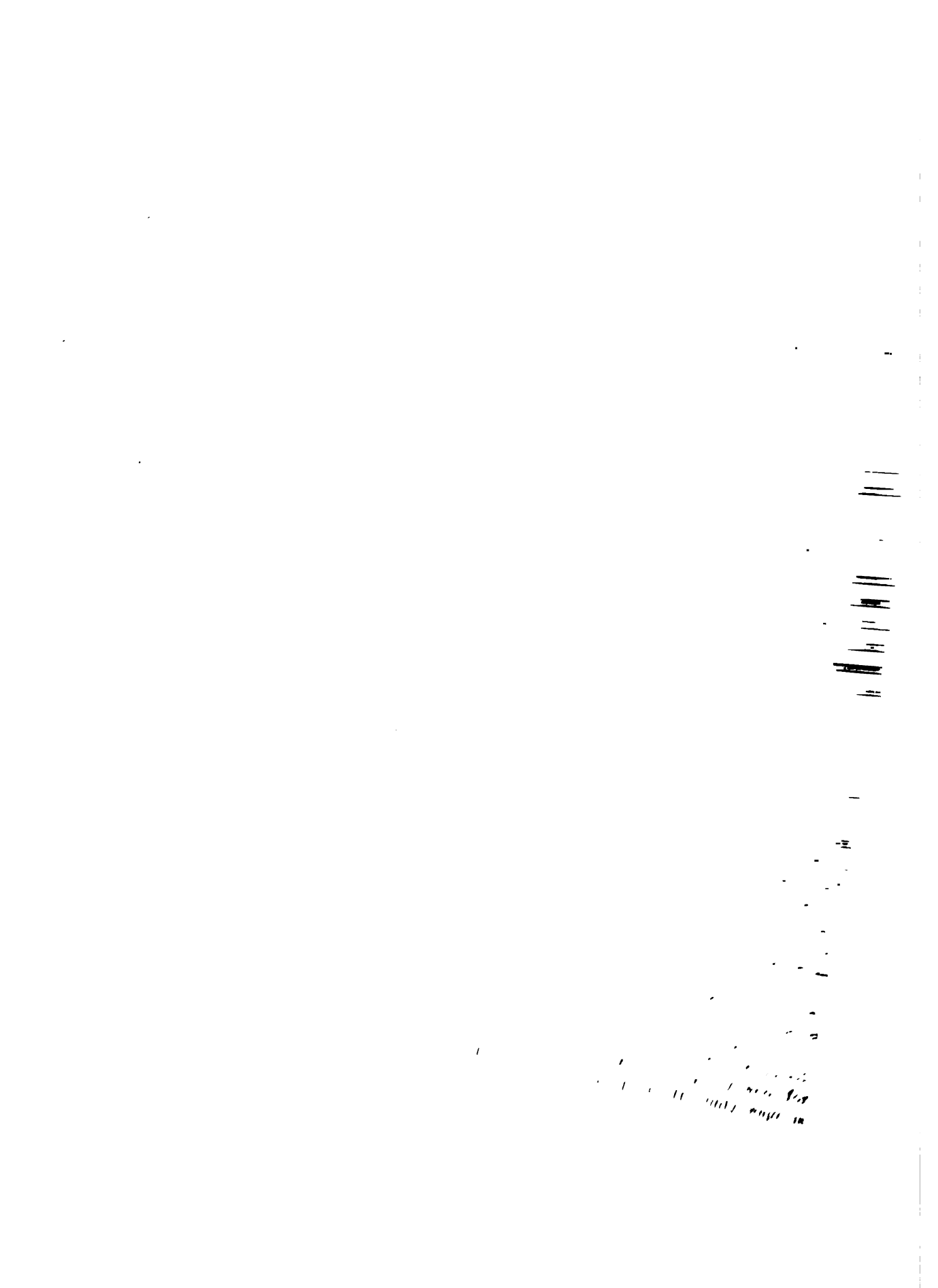
The men and women together construct and repair irrigated sementeras, men usually digging the earth while the women transport it. Together they prepare the soil of irrigated sementeras, and carry manure to them from the pigpens. Men at times do the women's work in harvesting, and women sometimes assist the men to carry the harvest to the pueblo. Either threshes out and hulls the rice, though the woman does more than half this work. Both prepare foods for cooking, cook the meals, and serve them. Both bring water from the river for household uses, though the woman brings the greater part. Each tends the babe while the other works in the field. Both care for the chickens and pigs, even to cooking the food for the latter. Men and women catch fish by hand in the river, manufacture tapui, and in the salt industry both evaporate the salt solution and vend the salt.

In the treatment of the sick and the driving out of afflicting anito, men and women alike serve.

Little work is demanded of the old people, though the labors they perform are of great value to the pueblo, as the strong are thus given more time for a vigorous industrial life.

Great service is rendered the pueblo by the councils of the old men, and they are the "priests" of all ceremonials, except those of the household.

The old men do practically nothing at manual labor in the field. However, numbers of old men and women guard the palay sementeras from the birds, and they frequently tend their grandchildren about the pueblo. They also bring water from the river to the dwelling.



these two meals. But this labor is light, and frightening away the birds is usually the work of children or very old people who can not perform hard labors. In all classes of work for which only food is given, much time is left to the laborers in which the men may weave their basket work and the women spin the bark-fiber thread for skirts.

Five manojos of palay is the daily wage for all laborers except those mentioned in the last paragraph. This is the wage of the wood gatherer in the mountains, of the builder of granaries, sementeras, irrigating ditches, and dikes, and of those who prepare soils and who plant and harvest crops.

There is much exchange of labor between individuals, and even between large groups of people, such as members of an ato. Formerly exchange of labor was practiced slightly more than at present, but to-day, as has been noted, all dwellings are built by the unpaid labor of those who come for the accompanying feast and "good time," and because their own dwellings were or will be built by such labor. A great deal of agricultural labor is now paid for in kind; practically all the available labor in an ato turns out to help a member when a piece of work is urgent. However, it is not customary for poor people to exchange their labor, since they constantly need food for those dependent on them. When the poor man desires a wage for his toil he needs only to tell some rich person that he wishes to work for him—both understand that a wage will be paid.

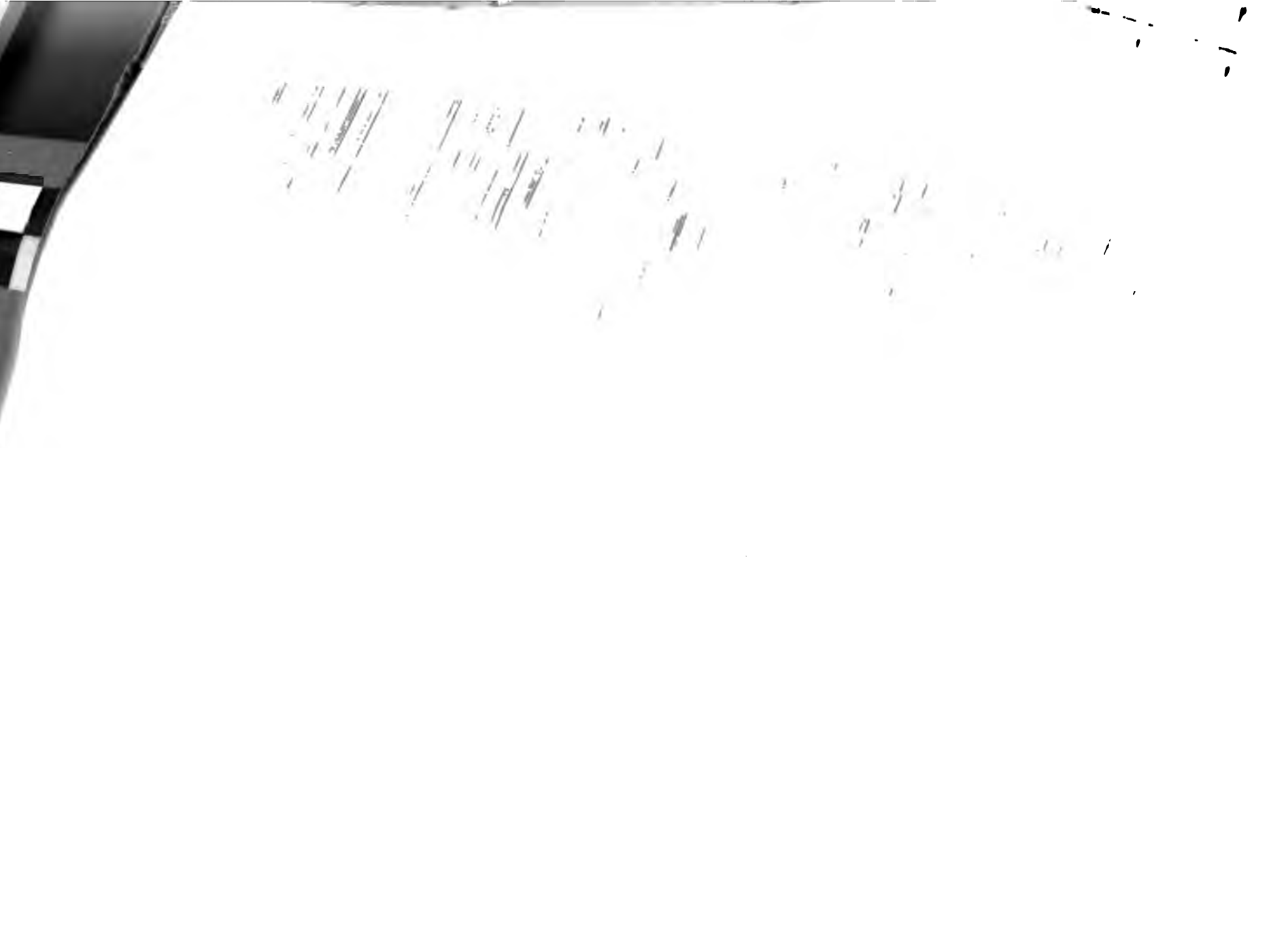
DISTRIBUTION

By the term "distribution" is here meant the ordinary division of the productions of Bontoc area among the several classes of Igorot in the area—in other words, what is each person's share of that which the area produces?

It must be said that distribution is very equitable. Wages are uniform. No man or set of men habitually spoils another's accumulations by exacting from him a tax or "rake off." There is no form of gambling or winning another's earnings. There are no slaves or others who labor without wages; children do not retain their own wages until they marry, but they inherit all their parents' possessions. There is almost no usury. There is no indigent class, and the rich men toil as industriously in the fields as do the poor—though I must say I never knew a rich man to go as cargador on the trail.

THEFT

Higher forms of society, even such society as the Christianized Filipinos of the coastal cities, produce and possess a considerable number of people who live and often raise families on personal property stolen and carried away from the lawful owners. Almost no thief in



CONSUMPTION

Under this title will be considered simply the foods and beverages of the people. No attempt will be made to treat of consumption in its breadth as it appears to the economist.

FOODS

There are few forms of animal life about the Igorot that he will not and does not eat. The exceptions are mainly insectivora, and such larger animals as the mythology of the Igorot says were once men—as the monkey, serpent-eagle, crow, snake, etc. However, he is not wholly lacking in taste and preference in his foods. Of his common vegetable foods he frequently said he prefers, first, beans; second, rice; third, maize; fourth, camotes; fifth, millet.

Rice is the staple food, and most families have sufficient for subsistence during the year. When rice is needed for food bunches of the palay, as tied up at the harvest, are brought and laid in the small pocket of the wooden mortar where they are threshed out of the fruit head. One or two mortarsful is thus threshed and put aside on a winnowing tray. When sufficient has been obtained the grain is put again in the mortar and pounded to remove the pellicle. Usually only sufficient rice is threshed and cleaned for the consumption of one or two days. When the pellicle has been pounded loose the grain is winnowed on a large round tray by a series of dexterous movements, removing all chaff and dirt with scarcely the loss of a kernel of good rice.

The work of threshing, hulling, and winnowing usually falls to the women and girls, but is sometimes performed by the men when their women are preoccupied. At one time when an American wished two or three bushels of palay threshed, as horse food for the trail, three Bontoc men performed the work in the classic treadmill manner. They spread a mat on the earth, covered it with palay, and then tread, or rather "rubbed," out the kernels with their bare feet. They often scraped up the mass with their feet, bunching it and rubbing it in a way that strongly suggested hands.

Rice is cooked in water without salt. An earthern pot is half filled with the grain and is then filled to the brim with cold water. In about twenty minutes the rice is cooked, filling the vessel, and the water is all absorbed or evaporated. If there is no great haste, the rice sets ten or fifteen minutes longer while the kernels dry out somewhat. As the Igorot cooks rice, or, for that matter, as the native anywhere in the Islands cooks it, the grains are not mashed and mussed together, but each kernel remains whole and separate from the others.

Cooked rice, ma-kan′, is almost always eaten with the fingers, being crowded into the mouth with the back of the thumb. In Bontoc,

Samoki, Titipan, Mayinit, and Ganang salt is either sprinkled on the rice after it is dished out or is tasted from the finger tips during the eating. In some pueblos, as at Tulubin, almost no salt is eaten at any time. When rice alone is eaten at a meal a family of five adults eats about ten Bontoc manojo of rice per day.

Beans are cooked in the form of a thick soup, but without salt. Beans and rice, each cooked separately, are frequently eaten together; such a dish is called "sĭb-fan'." Salt is eaten with sĭb-fan' by those pueblos which commonly consume salt.

Maize is husked, silked, and then cooked on the cob. It is eaten from the cob, and no salt is used either in the cooking or eating.

Camotes are eaten raw a great deal about the pueblo, the sementera, and the trail. Before they are cooked they are pared and generally cut in pieces about 2 inches long; they are boiled without salt. They are eaten alone at many meals, but are relished best when eaten with rice. They are always eaten from the fingers.

One dish, called "ke-le'-ke," consists of camotes, pared and sliced, and cooked and eaten with rice. This is a ceremonial dish, and is always prepared at the lis-lis ceremony and at a-su-fal'-i-wis or sugar-making time.

Camotes are always prepared immediately before being cooked, as they blacken very quickly after paring.

Millet is stored in the harvest bunches, and must be threshed before it is eaten. After being threshed in the wooden mortar the winnowed seeds are again returned to the mortar and crushed. This crushed grain is cooked as is rice and without salt. It is eaten also with the hands—"fingers" is too delicate a term.

Some other vegetable foods are also cooked and eaten by the Igorot. Among them is taro which, however, is seldom grown in the Bontoc area. Outside the area, both north and south, there are large sementeras of it cultivated for food. Several wild plants are also gathered, and the leaves cooked and eaten as the American eats "greens."

The Bontoc Igorot also has preferences among his regular flesh foods. The chicken is prized most; next he favors pork; third, fish; fourth, carabao; and fifth, dog. Chicken, pork (except wild hog), and dog are never eaten except ceremonially. Fish and carabao are eaten on ceremonial occasions, but are also eaten at other times—merely as food.

The interesting ceremonial killing, dressing, and eating of chickens is presented elsewhere, in the sections on "Death" and "Ceremonials." It is unnecessary to repeat the information here, as the processes are everywhere the same, excepting that generally no part of the fowl, except the feathers, is unconsumed—head, feet, intestines, everything, is devoured.

The hog is ceremonially killed by cutting its throat, not by "sticking,"

as is the American custom, but the neck is cut, half severing the head. At Ambuklao, on the Agno River in Benguet Province, I saw a hog ceremonially killed by having a round-pointed stick an inch in diameter pushed and twisted into it from the right side behind the foreleg, through and between the ribs, and into the heart. The animal bled internally, and, while it was being cut up by four men with much ceremony and show, the blood was scooped from the rib basin where it had gathered, and was mixed with the animal's brains. The intestines were then emptied by drawing between thumb and fingers, and the blood and brain mixture poured into them from the stomach as a funnel. A string of blood-and-brain sausages resulted, when the intestines were cooked. The mouth of the Bontoc hog is held or tied shut until the animal is dead. The Benguet hog could be heard for fifteen minutes at least a quarter of a mile.

After the Bontoc hog is killed it is singed, cut up, and all put in the large shallow iron boiler. When cooked it is cut into smaller pieces, which are passed around to those assembled at the ceremonial.

Fish are eaten both ceremonially and privately whenever they may be obtained. The small fish, the kacho, are in no way cleaned or dressed. Two or three times I saw them cooked and eaten ceremonially, and was told they are prepared the same way for private consumption. The fish, scarcely any over 2 inches in length, were strung on twisted green-grass strings about 6 inches in length. Several of these strings were tied together and placed in an olla of water. When cooked they were lifted out, the strings broken apart, and the fish stripped off into a wooden bowl. Salt was then liberally strewn over them. A large green leaf was brought as a plate for each person present, and the fish were divided again and again until each had an equal share. However, the old men present received double share, and were served before the others. At one time a man was present with a nursing babe in his arms, and he was given two leaves, or two shares, though no one expected the babe could eat its share. After the fish food was passed to each, the broth was also liberally salted and then poured into several wooden bowls. At one fish feast platters of cooked rice and squash were also brought and set among the people. Handful after handful of solid food followed its predecessor rapidly to the always-crammed mouth. The fish was eaten as one might eat sparingly of a delicacy, and the broth was drunk now and then between mouthfuls.

Two other fish are also eaten by the Igorot of the area, the liling, about 4 to 6 inches in length—also cooked and eaten without dressing—and the chalit, a large fish said to acquire the length of 4 feet.

Several small animals, crustaceans and mollusks, gathered in the river and picked up in the sementeras by the women, are cooked and eaten. All these are considered similar to fish and are eaten similarly. Among

Samoki, Titipan, Mayinit, and Ganang s ... is boiled and all rice after it is dished out or is tasted f... ...ers." A shrimp-eating. In some pueblos, as at Tulubin ... also boiled and time. When rice alone is eaten at a ... cooked. One, called about ten Bontoc manojo of rice per ... ike animal, and after

Beans are cooked in the form o... the apex of the shell Beans and rice, each cooked separa... ...als said to be somewhat such a dish is called "sĭb-fan'." pueblos which commonly consum... ...ough also eaten simply as

Maize is husked, silked, and ...remonial occasions, such as from the cob, and no salt is us... ...dwelling, and peace and war

Camotes are eaten raw a gr... ...e or feasts in commemoration. and the trail. Before they ...abao merely as a food is when an cut in pieces about 2 inches ... when no ceremonial event is at hand. are eaten alone at many ... ...en. All is eaten that can be masticated. rice. They are always ea... ...singed, nor scraped. All is cut up and

One dish, called "ke-le'... ...oofs, intestines, and head, excepting the cooked and eaten with ... not salted in cooking, and the use of salt prepared at the lis-lis ... ...on the individual eater. time.

Camotes are alway... ...of raw carabao meat are laid on high racks blacken very quickl... ...dried" in the sun. There are several such ...e can know a long distance from them whether

Millet is stored ... If one pueblo in the area exceeds another it is eaten. Afte... ...pleasantness of its "dried" meat it is Mayinit, seeds are again r... ...of a visit there a very small piece of meat jammed is cooked as is r... ...y stick"—and joyfully sucked by a 2-year-old babe "fingers" is too ... ...d and depopulated our camp.

Some other ... ...alled "It-tag'," as carabao and pork, are "preserved" Among them ... ...large bejuco-bound gourds, called "fa'-lay," or in Outside the ... ...called "tu-u'-nan." All pueblos in the area (except it cultivate... ...has an unexplained taboo against eating carabao) thus leaves cool... ...but Bitwagan, Sadanga, and Tukukan habitually salt

The Be... ...in the fa'-lay. Meats are kept thus two or three years, The chi... ...e the odor is vile. carabao ... ...nks last in the list of regular flesh foods of the Bontoc are n... ...Benguet area it ranks second, pork receiving the first cerem... ...Ibilao does not eat dog—his dog is a hunter and guard, ...of the approaching enemy.

...the dog is eaten only on ceremonial occasions. Funerals ...ages are probably more often celebrated by a dog feast than ...other of their ceremonials. The animal's mouth is held closed ...legs secured while he is killed by cutting the throat. Then his ...cut off close to the body—why, I could not learn, but I once saw

...It is believed to be either a *Porcelain* (*Porcelana*) or a *Spider* (*Maioidea*) crab.

told it always is so. The animal is singed in the fire
hair rubbed off with sticks and hands, after which it
ed, and then further cut up and eaten as is the cara-

ies are sometimes fed hard-boiled fresh eggs, but the Igorot does not eat "fresh" eggs, though he does eat large numbers ones. He prefers to wait, as one of them said, "until there is hing in the egg to eat." He invariably brings stale or developing to the American until he is told to bring fresh ones. It is not one the Igorot who has this peculiar preference—the same condition exists widespread in the Archipelago.

Locusts, or cho'-chon, are gathered, cooked, and eaten by the Igorot, as by all other natives in the Islands. They are greatly relished, but may be had in Bontoc only irregularly—perhaps once or twice for a week or ten days each year, or once in two years. They are cooked in boiling water and later dried, whereupon they become crisp and sweet. By some Igorot they are stored away, but I can not say whether they are kept in Bontoc any considerable time after cooking.

The locusts come in storms, literally like a pelting, large-flaked snowstorm, driving across the country for hours and even days at a time. All Igorot have large scoop nets for catching them and immense bottle-like baskets in which to put them and transport them home. The locust catcher runs along in the storm, and, whirling around in it with his large net, scoops in the victims. Many families sometimes wander a week or more catching locusts when they come to their vicinity, and cease only when miles from home. The cry of "enemy" will scarcely set an Igorot community astir sooner than will the cry of "cho'-chon." The locust is looked upon by them as a very manna from heaven. Pi-na-lat' is a food of cooked locusts pounded and mixed with uncooked rice. All is salted down in an olla and tightly covered over with a vegetable leaf or a piece of cloth. When it is eaten the mixture is cooked, though this cooking does not kill the strong odor of decay.

Other insect foods are also eaten. I once saw a number of men industriously robbing the large white "eggs" from an ant nest in a tree. The nest was built of leaves attached by a web. Into the bottom of this closed pocket the men poked a hole with a long stick, letting a pint or more of the white pupæ run out on a winnowing tray on the earth. From this tray the furious ants were at length driven, and the eggs taken home for cooking.

BEVERAGES

The Igorot drinks water much more than any other beverage. On the trail, though carrying loads while the American may walk empty handed, he drinks less than the American. He seldom drinks while

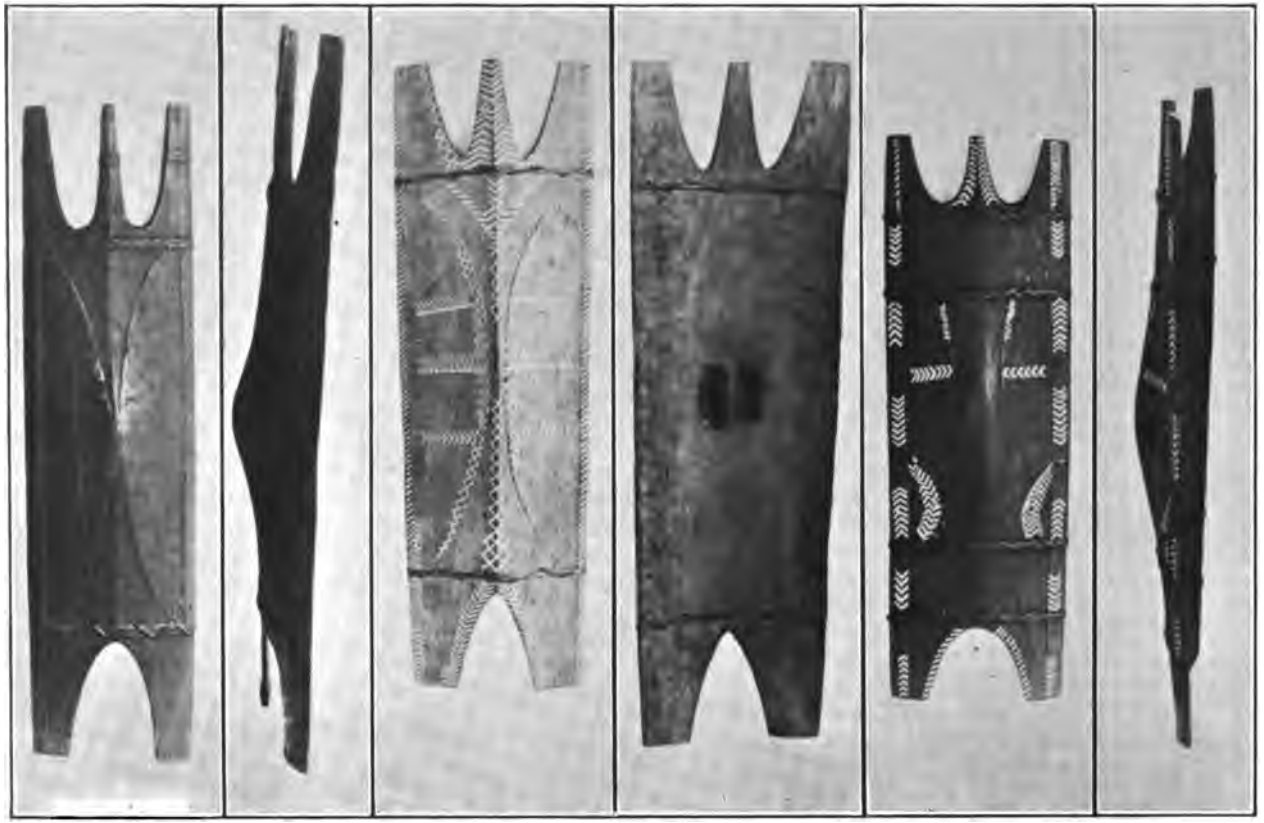
eating, though he makes a beverage said to be drunk only at mealtime. After meals he usually drinks water copiously.

Bá-si is the Igorot name of the fermented beverage prepared from sugar cane. "Bá-si," under various names, is found widespread throughout the Islands. The Bontoc man makes his bá-si in December. He boils the expressed juice of the sugar cane about six hours, at which time he puts into it a handful of vegetable ferment obtained from a tree called "tub-fíg'." This vegetable ferment is gathered from the tree as a flower or young fruit; it is dried and stored in the dwelling for future use. The brewed liquid is poured into a large olla, the flat-bottom variety called "fu-o-foy'" manufactured expressly for bá-si, and then is tightly covered over and set away in the granary. In five days the ferment has worked sufficiently, and the beverage may be drunk. It remains good about four months, for during the fifth or sixth month it turns very acid.

Bá-si is manufactured by the men alone. Tukukan and Titipan manufacture it to sell to other pueblos; it is sold for about half a peso per gallon. It is drunk quite a good deal during the year, though mostly on ceremonial occasions. Men frequently carry a small amount of it with them to the sementeras when they guard them against the wild hogs during the long nights. They say it helps to keep them warm. One glass of bá-si will intoxicate a person not accustomed to drink it, though the Igorot who uses it habitually may drink two or three glasses before intoxication. Usually a man drinks only a few swallows of it at a time, and I never saw an Igorot intoxicated except during some ceremony and then not more than a dozen in several months. Women never drink bá-si.

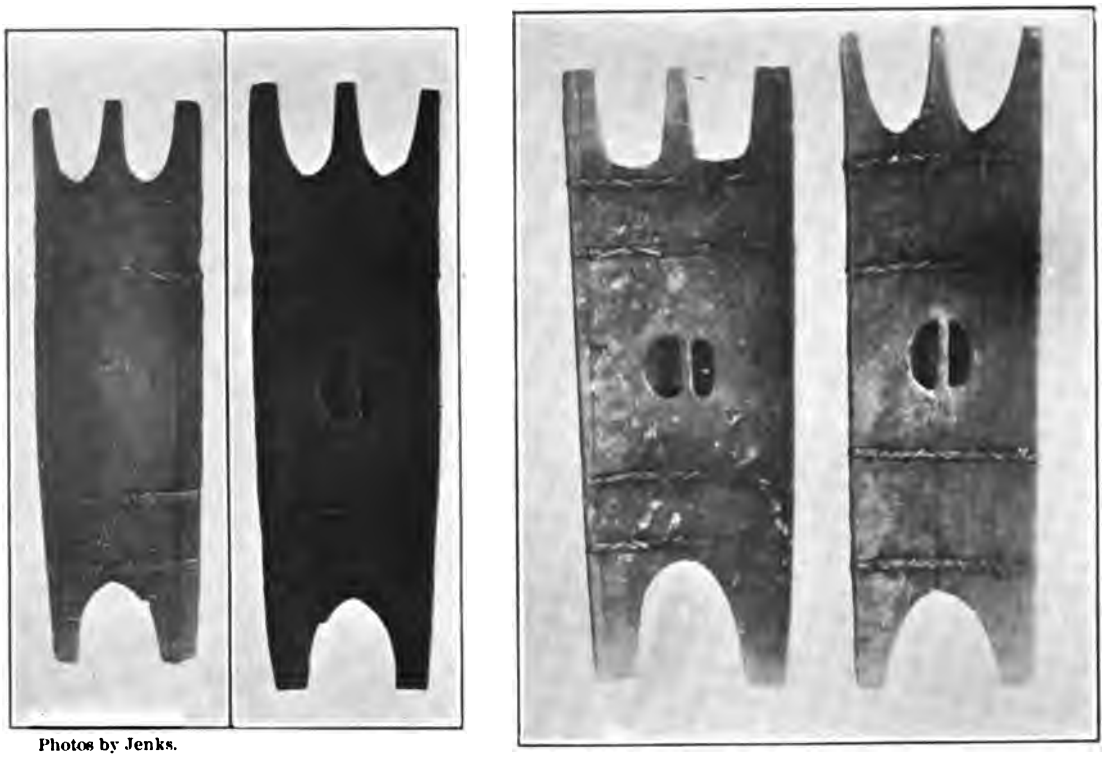
Ta-pú-i is a fermented drink made from rice, the cha-yĕt'-ĭt variety, they say, grown in Bontoc pueblo. It is a very sweet and sticky rice when cooked. This beverage also is found practically everywhere in the Archipelago. Only a small amount of the cha-yĕt'-ĭt is grown by Bontoc pueblo. To manufacture ta-pú-i the rice is cooked and then spread on a winnowing tray until it is cold. When cold a few ounces of a ferment called "fu-fud" are sprinkled over it and thoroughly stirred in; all is then put in an olla, which is tied over and set away. The ferment consists of cane sugar and dry raw rice pounded and pulverized together to a fine powder. This is then spread in the sun to dry and is later squeezed into small balls some 2 inches in diameter. This ferment will keep a year. When needed a ball is pulverized and sprinkled fine over the cooked rice. An olla of rice prepared for ta-pú-i will be found in one day half filled with the beverage.

Ta-pú-i will keep only about two months. It is never drunk by the women, though they do eat the sweet rice kernels from the jar, and they, as well as the men, manufacture it. It is claimed never to be



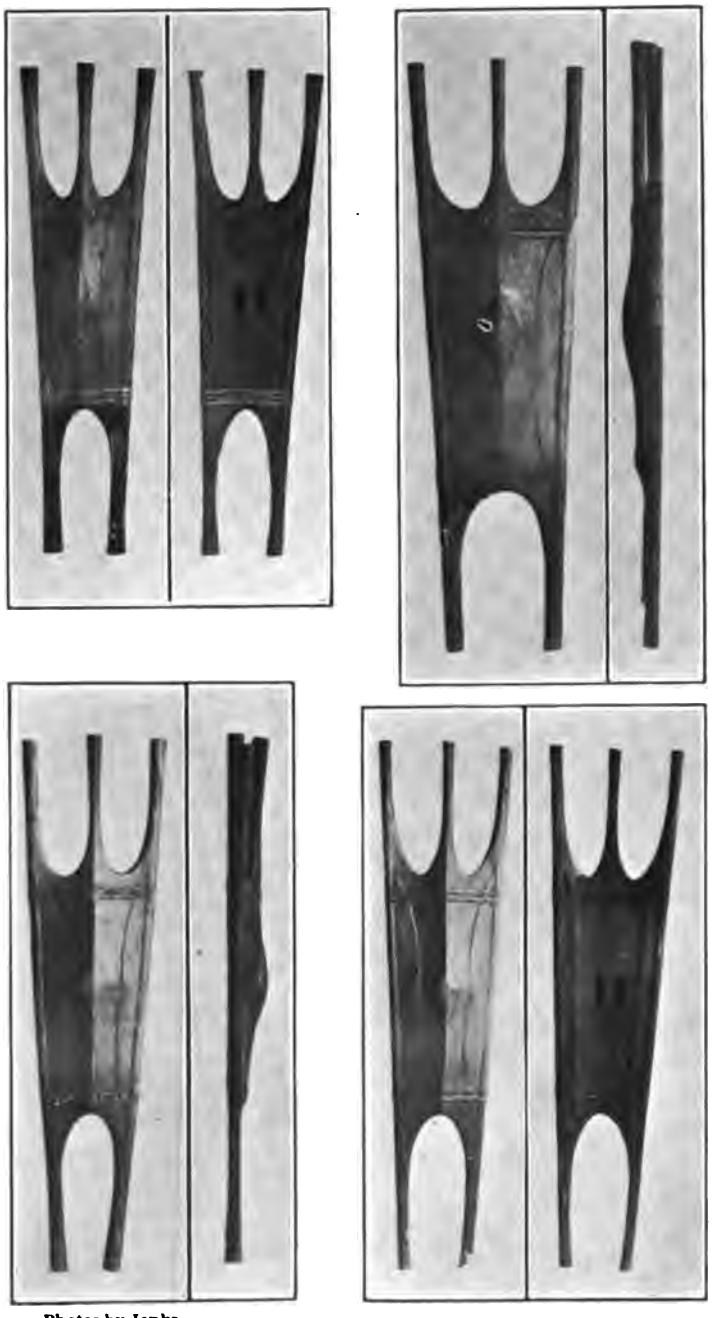
Photos by Jenks.

PLATE XCVI. BONTOC SHIELDS.



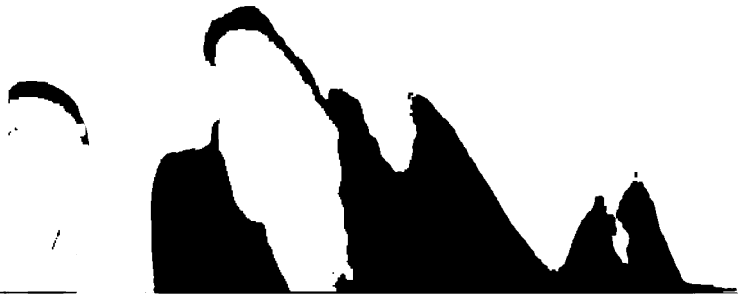
Photos by Jenks.

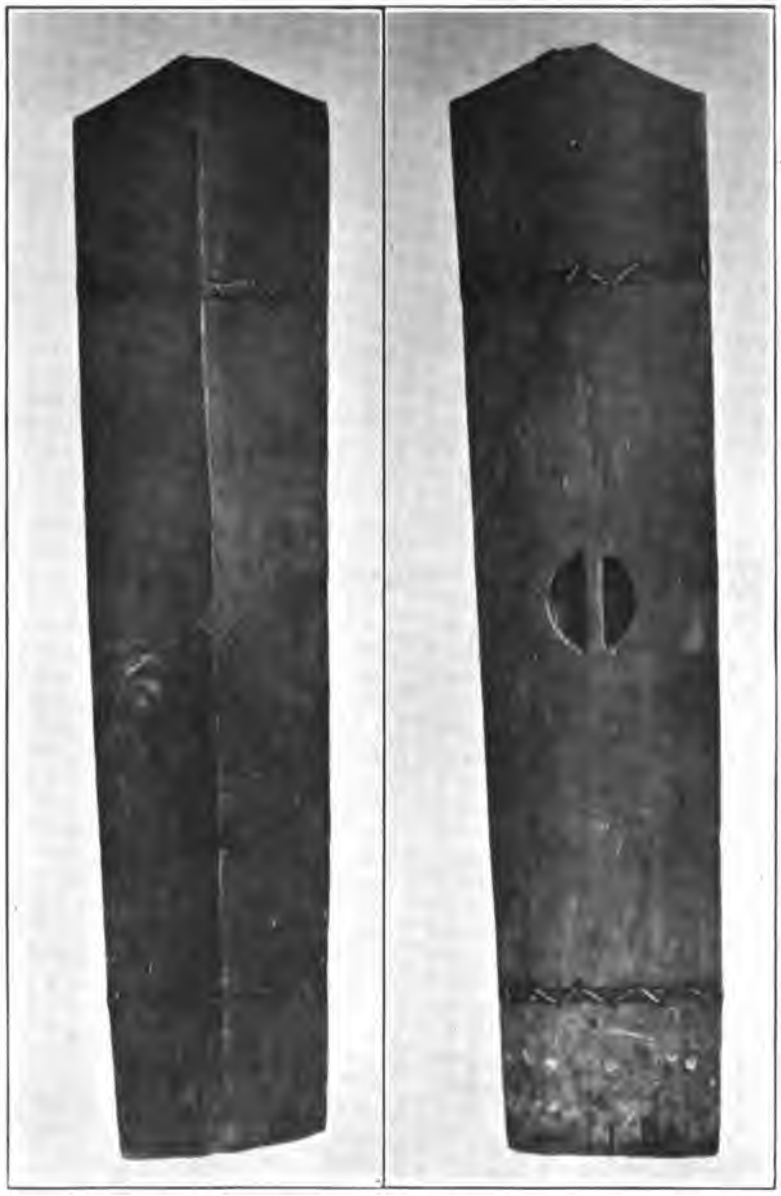
PLATE XCVII. BONTOC SHIELDS.



Photos by Jenks.

PLATE XCVIII. THE KALINGA SHIELDS.





Photos by Jenks.

PLATE XCIX. BANAWI SHIELD, FRONT AND BACK.

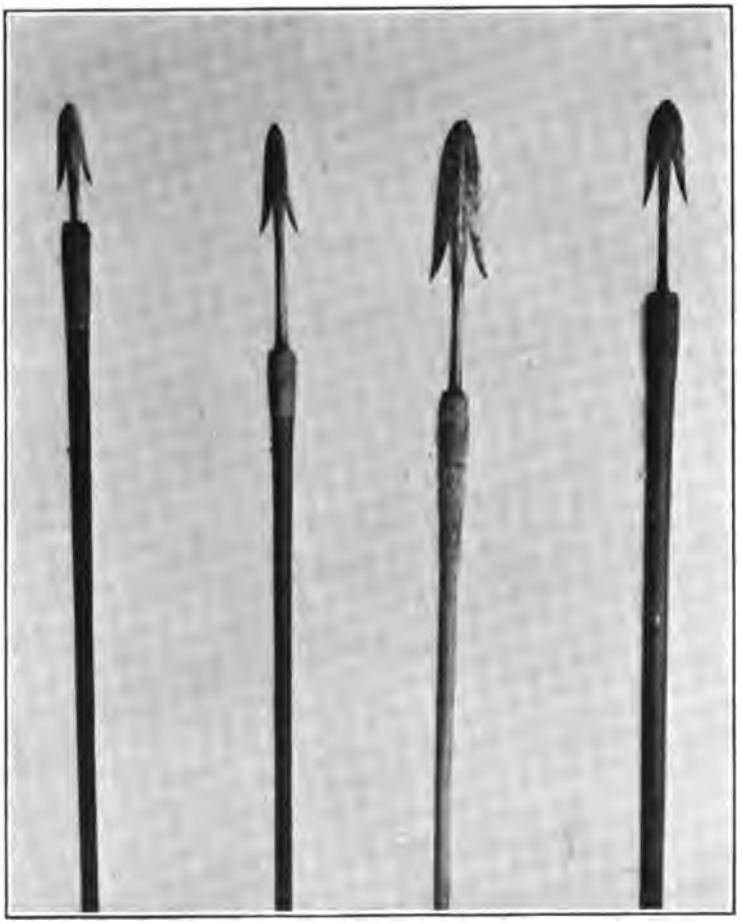


Photo by Martin.

PLATE C. BONTOC WAR SPEARS (FAL-FĔG').

Photos by Martin.

PLATE CI. SPEARS (FANG'-KAO AND KAY-YAN').

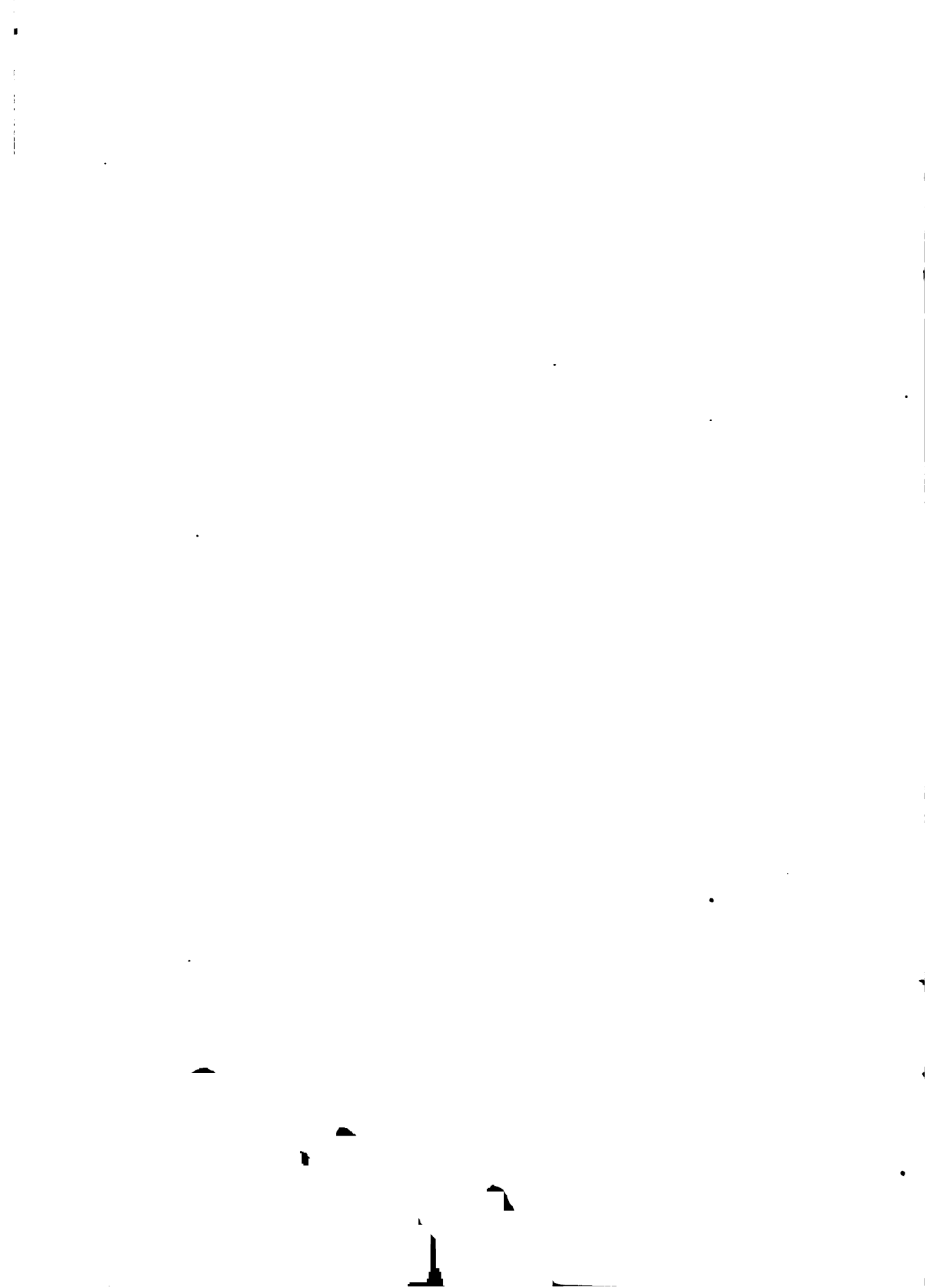
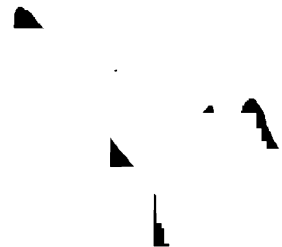


Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CII. BONTOC BATTLE-AXES, WITH BEJUCO FERRULES.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CIII. BONTOC BATTLE-AXES, WITH STEEL FERRULES.



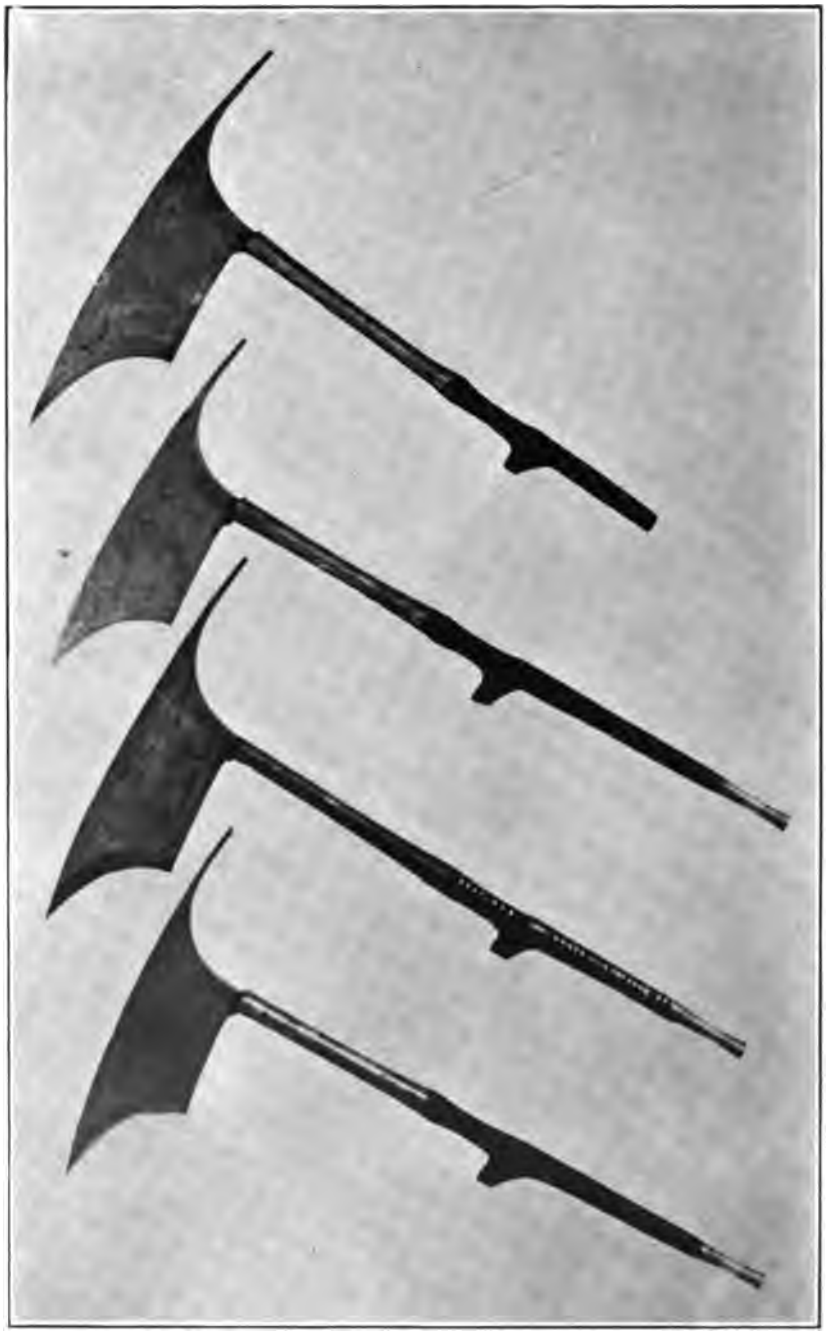


Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CIV. THE BALBELASAN OR NORTHERN BATTLE-AX.

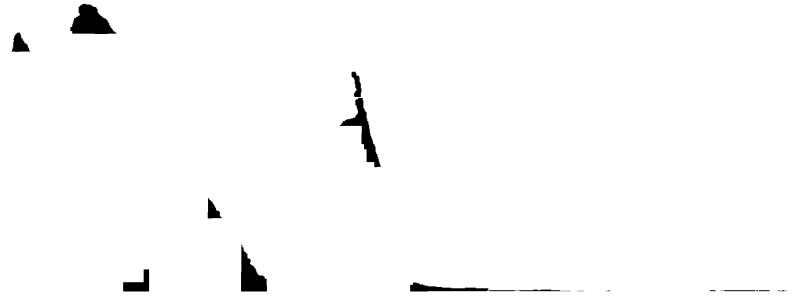
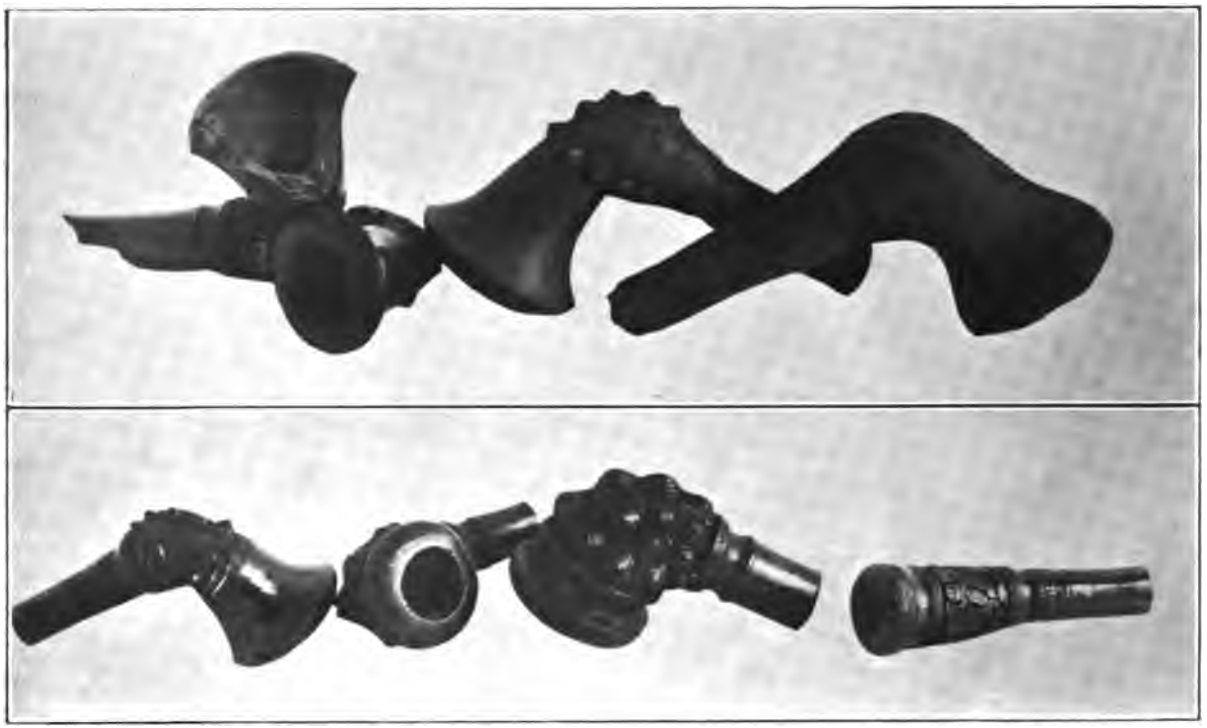


Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CV. AQAWA CLAY PIPE MAKER.



Photos by Jenks.

PLATE CVI. AGAWA CLAY PIPES. (THOSE IN THE LOWER ROW ARE FINISHED.)

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CVII. FINISHED AGAWA CLAY PIPES, WITH STEMS.

ctured in the Bontoc area for sale. A half glass of the beverage oxicate. At the end of a month the beverage is very intoxicating, then commonly weakened with water. Ta-pú-i is much pre- to bá-si.

e Bontoc man prepares another drink which is filthy, and, even themselves say, vile smelling. It is called "sa-fu-ĕng′," is drunk eals, and is prepared as follows: Cold water is first put in a jar, into it are thrown cooked rice, cooked camotes, cooked locusts, and sorts of cooked flesh and bones. The resulting liquid is drunk at end of ten days, and is sour and vinegar-like. The preparation is rpetuated by adding more water and solid ingredients—it does not atter much what they are.

The odor of sa-fu-ĕng′ is the worst stench in Bontoc. I never closely nvestigated the beverage personally—but I have no reason to doubt what the Igorot says of it; but if all is true, why is it not fatal?

SALT

Throughout the year the pueblo of Mayinit produces salt from a number of brackish hot springs occupying about an acre of ground at the north end of the pueblo.

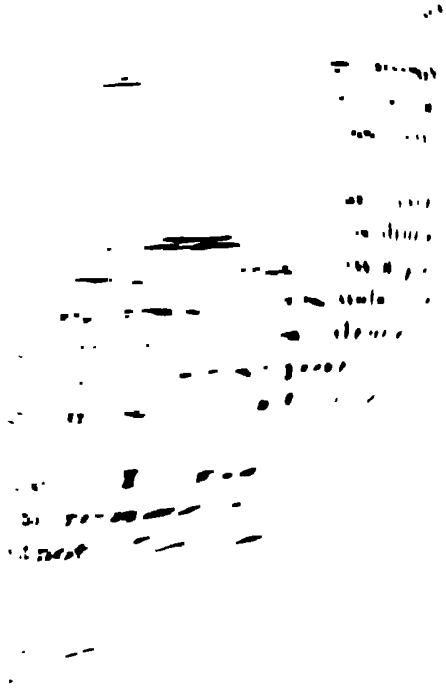
Mayinit has a population of about 1,000 souls, probably half of whom are directly interested in salt production. It is probable that the pueblo owes its location to the salt springs, although adjoining it to the south is an arable valley now filled with rice sementeras, which may first have drawn the people.

The hot springs slowly raise their water to the surface, where it flows along in shallow streams. Over these streams, or rather sheets of sluggish water, the Igorot have built 152 salt houses, usually about 12 feet wide and from 12 to 25 feet long. The houses, well shown in Pl. CXV, are simply grass-covered roofs extending to the earth.

There is no ownership in the springs to-day—just as there is no ownership in springs which furnish irrigating water—one owns the water that passes into his salt house, but has no claim on that which passes through it and flows out below. So each person has ownership of all and only all the water he can use within his plant, and the people claim there are no disputes between owners of houses—as they look at it, each owner of a salt house has an equal chance to gather salt.

The ground space of the salt house is closely paved with cobblestones from 4 to 6 inches in diameter. The water passes among the bases of these stones, and the salt is deposited in a thin crust over their surface. (See Pl. CXVI.)

These houses are inherited, and, as a consequence, several persons may



n made of Mayinit salt as prepared by the crude
. The showing is excellent when the processes are
ed salt having 86.02 per cent of sodium chloride as
t for Michigan common salt and 95.35 for Onondaga

Table of salt composition

ments	Mayinit salt[1]			Common fine—	
	Saturated brine	Evaporated salt	Baked salt	Michigan salt[2]	Onondaga salt[2]
e	0.73	1.50	0.46	0.805	1.355
	.92	6.28	10.03		
	7.95	72.19	86.02	90.682	95.353
r	2.14	.16	.45		
	88.03	19.19	1.78	6.752	3.000
	.23	.68	1.26		
de				.974	.155
ioride				.781	.136
	100	100	100	99.994	99.999

for this study by Bureau of Government Laboratories, Manila, P.I.,

smann in Universal Cyclopædia, vol. x (1900), p. 274.

duces from six to thirty cakes of salt at each baking.
at an equivalent of 5 cents, thus making an average salt
, say, fifteen cakes per month, worth 9 pesos per year.
seldom sold, but when they are they claim they sell for
os.

SUGAR

nd November the Bontoc Igorot make sugar from cane.
gathered, cut in lengths of about 20 inches, tied in
in diameter, and stored away until the time for expressing

cane crusher, shown in Pl. CXVIII, consists of two,
three, vertical, solid, hard-wood cylinders set securely
two horizontal timbers, which, in turn, are held in place
ights. One of the cylinders projects above the upper
mber and has fitted over it, as a key, a long double-end
main cylinder conveys its power to the others by means
ogs which are set firmly in the wood and play into sockets
he other cylinder. Boys commonly furnish the power used
e cane, and there is much song and sport during the hours

ple, usually boys, sitting on both sides of the crusher, feed the
and forth. Three or four stalks are put through at a time,

ultimately have proprietary interest in one house. In such a case the ground space is divided, often resulting in many twig-separated patches, as is shown in fig. 7.

About once each month the salt is gathered. The women of the family work naked in the stream-filled house, washing the crust of salt from the stones into a large wooden trough, called "ko-long'-ko." Each stone is thoroughly washed and then replaced in the pavement. The saturated brine is preserved in a gourd until sufficient is gathered for evaporation.

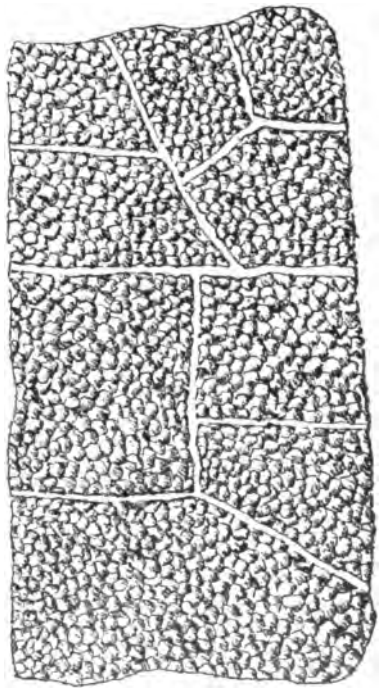


FIG. 7.—Ground plan of Mayinit salt house.

Two or more families frequently join in evaporating their salt. The brine is boiled in the large, shallow iron boilers, and from half a day to a day is necessary to effect the evaporation. Evaporation is discontinued when the salt is reduced to a thick paste.

The evaporated salt is spread in a half-inch layer on a piece of banana leaf cut about 5 inches square. The leaf of paste is supported by two sticks on, but free from, a piece of curved broken pottery which is the baking pan. The salt thus prepared for baking is set near a fire in the dwelling where it is baked thirty or forty minutes. It is then ready for use at home or for commerce, and is preserved in the square, flat cakes called "luk'-sa."

Analyses have been made of Mayinit salt as prepared by the crude method of the Igorot. The showing is excellent when the processes are considered, the finished salt having 86.02 per cent of sodium chloride as against 90.68 per cent for Michigan common salt and 95.35 for Onondaga common salt.

Table of salt composition

Constituent elements	Mayinit salt[1]			Common fine—	
	Saturated brine	Evaporated salt	Baked salt	Michigan salt[2]	Onondaga salt[2]
Calcium sulphate	0.73	1.50	0.46	0.805	1.355
Sodium sulphate	.92	6.28	10.03	.....	.....
Sodium chloride	7.95	72.19	86.02	90.682	95.358
Insoluble matter	2.14	.16	.45	.....	.....
Water	88.03	19.19	1.78	6.752	3.000
Undetermined	.23	.68	1.26	.....	.....
Calcium chloride	.....	.....	.....	.974	.155
Magnesium chloride	.....	.....	.....	.781	.136
Total	100	100	100	99.994	99.999

[1] Analysis made for this study by Bureau of Government Laboratories, Manila, P. I., February 21, 1908.

[2] Charles A. Goessmann in Universal Cyclopædia, vol. x (1900), p. 274.

One house produces from six to thirty cakes of salt at each baking. A cake is valued at an equivalent of 5 cents, thus making an average salt house, producing, say, fifteen cakes per month, worth 9 pesos per year. Salt houses are seldom sold, but when they are they claim they sell for only 3 or 4 pesos.

SUGAR

In October and November the Bontoc Igorot make sugar from cane. The stalks are gathered, cut in lengths of about 20 inches, tied in bundles a foot in diameter, and stored away until the time for expressing the juice.

The sugar-cane crusher, shown in Pl. CXVIII, consists of two, sometimes of three, vertical, solid, hard-wood cylinders set securely to revolve in two horizontal timbers, which, in turn, are held in place by two uprights. One of the cylinders projects above the upper horizontal timber and has fitted over it, as a key, a long double-end sweep. This main cylinder conveys its power to the others by means of wooden cogs which are set firmly in the wood and play into sockets dug from the other cylinder. Boys commonly furnish the power used to crush the cane, and there is much song and sport during the hours of labor.

Two people, usually boys, sitting on both sides of the crusher, feed the cane back and forth. Three or four stalks are put through at a time.

and they are run through thirty or forty times, or until they brea into pieces of pulp not over three or four inches in length.

The juice runs down a slide into a jar set in the ground beneat the crusher.

The boiling is done in large shallow iron boilers over an open fir under a roof. I have known the Igorot to operate the crusher unti midnight, and to boil down the juice throughout the night. Sugar-boiling time is known as a-su-fal'-i-wis.

A delicious brown cake sugar is made, which, in some parts of the area, is poured to cool and is preserved in bamboo tubes, in other parts it is cooked and preserved in flat cakes an inch in thickness.

There is not much sugar made in the area, and a large part of the product is purchased by the Ilokano. The Igorot cares very little for sweets; even the children frequently throw away candy after tasting it.

MEALS AND MEALTIME

The man of the family arises about 3.30 or 4 o'clock in the morning. He builds the fires and prepares to cook the family breakfast and the food for the pigs. A labor generally performed each morning is the paring of camotes. In about half an hour after the man arises the camotes and rice are put over to cook. The daughters come home from the olag, and the boys from their sleeping quarters shortly before breakfast. Breakfast, called "mang-an'," meaning simply "to eat," is taken by all members of the family together, usually between 5 and 6 o'clock. For this meal all the family, sitting on their haunches, gather around three or four wooden dishes filled with steaming hot food setting on the earth. They eat almost exclusively from their hands, and seldom drink anything at breakfast, but they usually drink water after the meal.

The members of the family who are to work away from the dwelling leave about 7 or 7.30 o'clock—but earlier, if there is a rush of work. If the times are busy in the fields, the laborers carry their dinner with them; if not, all members assemble at the dwelling and eat their dinner together about 1 o'clock. This midday meal is often a cold meal, even when partaken in the house.

Field laborers return home about 6.30, at which time it is too dark to work longer, but during the rush seasons of transplanting and harvesting palay the Igorot generally works until 7 or 7.30 during moonlight nights. All members of the family assemble for supper, and this meal is always a warm one. It is generally cooked by the man, unless there is a boy or girl in the family large enough to do it, and who is not at work in the fields. It is usually eaten about 7 or 7.30 o'clock, on the earth floor, as is the breakfast. A light is used, a bright, smoking blaze of the pitch pine. It burns on a flat stone kept ready in every house—it is certainly the first and crudest house lamp, being

removed in development only one infinitesimal step from the stationary fire. This light is also sometimes employed at breakfast time, if the morning meal is earlier than the sun.

Usually by 8 o'clock the husband and wife retire for the night, and the children leave home immediately after supper.

TRANSPORTATION

The human is the only beast of burden in the Bontoc area. Elsewhere in northern Luzon the Christianized people employ horses, cattle, and carabaos as pack animals. Along the coastwise roads cattle and carabaos haul two-wheel carts, and in the unirrigated lowland rice tracts these same animals drag sleds surmounted by large basket-work receptacles for the palay. The Igorot has doubtless seen all of these methods of animal transportation, but the conditions of his home are such that he can not employ them.

He has no roads for wheels; neither carabaos, cattle, nor horses could go among his irrigated sementeras; and he has relatively few loads of produce coming in and going out of his pueblo. Such loads as he has can be transported by himself with greater safety and speed than by quadrupeds; and so, since he almost never moves his place of abode, he has little need of animal transportation.

To an extent the river is employed to transport boards, timbers, and firewood to both Bontoc and Samoki during the high water of the rainy season. Probably one-fourth of the firewood is borne by the river a part of its journey to the pueblos. But there is no effort at comprehensive water transportation; there are no boats or rafts, and the wood which does float down the river journeys in single pieces.

The characteristic of Bontoc transportation is that the men invariably carry all their heavy loads on their shoulders, and the women as uniformly transport theirs on their heads.

In Benguet all people carry on their backs, as also do the women of the Quiangan area.

In all heavy transportation the Bontoc men carry the spear, using the handle as a staff, or now and then as a support for the load; the women frequently carry a stick for a staff. Man's common transportation vehicle is the ki-ma'-ta, and in it he carries palay, camotes, and manure. He swings along at a pace faster than the walk, carrying from 75 to 100 pounds. He carries all firewood from the mountains, directly on his bare shoulders. Large timbers for dwellings are borne by two or more men directly on the shoulders; and timbers are now, season of 1903, coming in for a schoolhouse carried by as many as twenty-four men. Crosspieces, as yokes, are bound to the timbers with bark lashings, and two or four men shoulder each yoke.

Rocks built into dams and dikes are carried directly on the bare

shoulders. Earth, carried to or from the building sementeras, in the trails, or about the dwellings, is put first in the tak-o-chûg′, the basket-work scoop, holding about 30 or 40 pounds of earth, and this is carried by wooden handles lashed to both sides and is dumped into a transportation basket, called "ko-chuk-kod′." This is invariably hoisted to the shoulder when ready for transportation. When men carry water the fang′-a or olla is placed directly on the shoulder as are the rocks.

When the man is to be away from home over night he usually carries his food and blanket, if he has one, in the waterproof fang′-ao slung on his back and supported by a bejuco strap passing over each shoulder and under the arm. This is the so-called "head basket," and, as a matter of fact, is carried on war expeditions by those pueblos that use it, though it is also employed in more peaceful occupations. As a cargador the man carries his burdens on the shoulder in three ways—either double, the cargo on a pole between two men; or singly, with the cargo divided and tied to both ends of the pole; or singly, with the cargo laid directly on the shoulder.

Women carry as large burdens as do the men. They have two commonly employed transportation baskets, neither of which have I seen a man even so much as pick up. These are the shallow, pan-shaped lu′-wa and the deeper, larger tay-ya-an′. In these two baskets, and also at times in the man's ki-ma′-ta, the women carry the same things as are borne by the men. Not infrequently the woman uses her two baskets together at the same time—the tay-ya-an′ setting in the lu′-wa, as is shown in Pls. CXIX and CXXI. When she carries the ki-ma′-ta she places the middle of the connecting pole, the pa′-tang on her head, with one basket before her and the other behind. At all times the woman wears on her head beneath her burden a small grass ring 5 or 6 inches in diameter, called a "ki′-kan." Its chief function is that of a cushion, though when her burden is a fang′-a of water the ki′-kan becomes also a base—without which the round-bottomed olla could not be balanced on her head without the support of her hands.

The woman's rain protector is often brought home from the camote gardens bottom up on the woman's head full of camote vines as food for the pigs, or with long, dry grass for their bedding. And, as has been noted, all day long during April and May, when there were no camote vines, women and little girls were going about bearing their small scoop-shaped sûg-fi′ gathering wild vegetation for the hogs.

Almost all of the water used in Bontoc is carried from the river to the pueblo, a distance ranging from a quarter to half a mile. The women and girls of a dozen years or more probably transport three-fourths of the water used about the house. It is carried in 4 to 6 gallon ollas borne on the head of the woman or shoulder of the man. Women totally blind, and many others nearly blind, are seen alone at the river getting water.

About half the women and many of the men who go to the river daily for water carry babes. Children from 1 to 4 years old are frequently carried to and from the sementeras by their parents, and at all times of the day men, women, and children carry babes about the pueblo. They are commonly carried on the back, sitting in a blanket which is slung over one shoulder, passing under the other, and tied across the breast. Frequently the babe is shifted forward, sitting astride the hip. At times, though rarely, it is carried in front of the person. A frequent sight is that of a woman with a babe in the blanket on her back and an older child astride her hip supported by her encircling arm.

When one sees a woman returning from the river to the pueblo at sundown a child on her back and a 6-gallon jar of water on her head, and knows that she toiled ten or twelve hours that day in the field with her back bent and her eyes on the earth like a quadruped, and yet finds her strong and joyful, he believes in the future of the mountain people of Luzon if they are guided wisely—they have the strength and courage to toil and the elasticity of mind and spirit necessary for development.

COMMERCE

The Bontoc Igorot has a keen instinct for a bargain, but his importance as a comerciante has been small, since his wants are few and the state of feud is such that he can not go far from home.

His bargain instinct is shown constantly. The American stranger is charged from two to ten times the regular price for things he wishes to buy. Early in April of the last two years the price of palay for the American has, on a plea of scarcity, advanced 20 per cent, although it has been proved that there is at all times enough palay in the pueblo for three years' consumption.

Rather than spoil a possible high price of a product, outside pueblos have left articles overnight with Bontoc friends to be sold to the American next day at his own price, and when those pueblos came again to vend similar wares the high prices were maintained.

BARTER

Most commerce is carried on by barter. Within a pueblo naturally having neither stores nor a legalized currency people trade among themselves, but the word "barter" as here used means the systematic exchange of the products of one community for those of another.

To note the articles produced for commerce by two or three pueblos will give a fair illustration of the importance which interpueblo commerce carried on entirely by barter has assumed among the Igorot of the Bontoc culture group, though the comerciante rarely remains from home more than one night at a time.

Samoki has about 1,200 fangas in daily use. The estimated population of the several towns that use Samoki pots is 24,000.

There is about one pot per individual in daily use in Bontoc and Samoki, and this estimate is probably fair for the other pueblos. So about 24,000 Samoki pots are daily in use, and this number is maintained by the potters. Igorot claim the average life of a fanga of Samoki is one year or less, so the pueblo must sell at least 24,000 pots per annum. At the average price of 5 centavos about the equivalent of 1,200 pesos come to the pueblo annually from this art, or about 40 pesos for each of the thirty potters, whether or not she works at her art. A few years ago, during a severe state of feud, Samoki pots increased in value about thirty-fold; it is said that the potters purchased carabao for ten large ollas each. To-day the large ollas are worth about 2 pesos, and carabaos are valued at from 40 to 70 pesos.

Mayinit salt passes in barter to about as many pueblos as do the Samoki pots, but while the pots go westward to the border of the Bontoc culture area the salt passes far beyond the eastern border, being bartered from pueblo to pueblo. It does not go far north of Mayinit, or go at all regularly far west, because those pueblos within access of the China Sea coast buy salt evaporated from sea water by the Ilokano of Candon. In April at two different times twelve loads of Candon salt passed eastward through Bontoc on the shoulders of Tukukan men, but during the rainy season and the busy planting and harvesting months Mayinit salt supplies a large demand.

In Bontoc and Samoki there are about one hundred and fifty gold earrings which came from the gold-producing country about Suyak, Lepanto Province. Carabaos are almost invariably traded for these. Sometimes one carabao, sometimes two, and again three are bartered for one gold earring. During the months of March and April the pueblo of Balili traded three of these earrings to Bontoc men for carabaos, and this particular form of barter has been carried on for generations.

Balili, Alap, Sadanga, Takong, Sagada, Titipan and other pueblos between Bontoc pueblo and Lepanto Province to the west weave breechcloths and skirts which are brought by their makers and disposed of to Bontoc and adjacent pueblos. Agawa, Genugan, and Takong bring in clay and metal pipes of their manufacture. Much of these productions is bartered directly for palay. If money is paid for the articles it is invariably turned into palay, because this is the greatest constant need of manufacturing Igorot pueblos.

SALE

The Spaniard left his impress on the Igorot of Bontoc pueblo in no realm probably more surely than in that of the appreciation of the value of money.

The sale instinct, and not the barter instinct, is foremost now in Bontoc and Samoki when an American is a party to a bargain, and this is true in all pueblos on the main trail to Lepanto and the west coast. But one has little difficulty in bartering for Igorot productions if he has things the people want—such as brass wire, cloth for the woman's skirt, the man's breechcloth, a shirt, or coat. In many pueblos the people try to buy for money the articles the American brings in for barter, although it is true that barter will often get from them many things which money can not buy. To the northeast and south of Bontoc barter will purchase practically anything.

The conditions of peace among the pueblos since the arrival of the Americans and the money which is now everywhere within the area have been the important factors in helping to develop interpueblo commerce from barter to sale.

Most of the clothing worn in the pueblos of Lepanto Province is made from cotton purchased for money at the coast. With few exceptions the breechcloths and blankets worn by Bontoc and Samoki are purchased for money, though it is not very many years since the bark breechcloth made in Titipan and Barlig was worn, and in Tulubin, only two hours distant, Barlig blankets and breechcloths of whole bark are worn to-day.

One week in April a Bontoc Igorot traded a carabao to an Ilokano of Lepanto Province for a copper ganza, the customary way of purchasing ganzas, and the following week another Bontoc man sold a carabao for money to another Lepanto Ilokano.

The Baliwang battle-ax and spear are now more generally sold for money than is any other production made or disposed of within the Bontoc area. They are said to-day to be seldom bartered for.

MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE

That a people with such incipient social and political institutions as has the Bontoc Igorot should have developed a "money" is remarkable. The North American Indian with his strong tendency and adaptability to political organization had no such money. Nothing of the kind has been presented as belonging to the Australian of ultrasocial development, and I am not aware that anything equal has been produced by other similar primitive peoples. However, it seems not improbable that allied tribes (say, of Malayan stock) which have solved the problem of subsistence in a like way have a similar currency, although I find no mention of it among four score of writers whose observations on similar tribes of Borneo have come to hand, and nothing similar has yet been found in the Philippines.

The Bontoc Igorot has a "medium of exchange" which gives a "measure of exchange value" for articles bought and sold, and which has a "standard of value." In other words he has "good money"—

probably the best money that could have been devised by him for his society. It is his staple product—palay, the unthreshed rice.

Palay is at all times good money, and it is the thing commonly employed in exchange. It answers every purpose of a suitable medium of exchange. It is always in demand, since it is the staple food. It is kept eight or ten years without deterioration. Except when used to purchase clothing, it is seldom heavier or more difficult to transport than is the object for which it is exchanged. It is of very stable value, so much so that as a purchaser of Igorot labor and products its value is constant; and it can not be counterfeited.

Aside from this universal medium of exchange the characteristic production of each community, in a minor way, answers for the community the needs of a medium of exchange.

Samoki buys many things with her pots, such as tobacco and salt from Mayinit; cloth from Igorot comerciantes; breechcloth and basi from the Igorot producers; chickens, pigs, palay, and camotes from neighboring pueblos. Mayinit uses her salt in much the same way, only probably to a less extent. Salt is not consumed by all the people.

To-day, as formerly, the live pig and hog and pieces of pork and carabao meat are used a great deal in barter. As far back as the pueblo memory extends pigs have been used to purchase a particularly good breechcloth called "balakes," made in Balangao, three days east of Bontoc.

In all sales the medium of exchange is entirely in coin. Paper will not be received by the Igorot. The peso (the Spanish and Mexican silver dollar) passes in the area at the rate of two to one with American money. There is also the silver half peso, the peseta or one-fifth peso, and the half peseta. The latter two are not plentiful. The only other coin is the copper "sipĕn."

No centavos (cents) reach the districts of Lepanto and Bontoc from Manila, and for years the Igorot of the copper region of Suyak and Mankayan, Lepanto, have manufactured a counterfeit copper coin called "sipĕn." All the half-dozen copper coins current in the active commercial districts of the Islands are here counterfeited, and the "sipĕn" passes at the high rate of 80 per peso; it is common and indispensable. A crude die is made in clay, and has to be made anew for each "sipĕn" coined. The counterfeit passes throughout the area, but in Tinglayan, just beyond its eastern border, it is not known. Within two days farther east small coins are unknown, the peso being the only money value in common knowledge.

MEASURE OF EXCHANGE VALUE

The Igorot has as clear a conception of the relative value of two things bartered as has the civilized man when he buys or sells for money. The value of all things, from a 5-cent block of Mayinit salt

to a ₱70 carabao, is measured in palay. To-day, as formerly, every bargain between two Igorot is made on the basis of the palay value of the articles bought or sold. This is so even though the payment is in money.

STANDARD OF VALUE

The standard of value of the palay currency is the sĭn fĭng-e′—the Spanish "manojo," or handful—a small bunch of palay tied up immediately below the fruit heads. It is about one foot long, half head and half straw. The value of such a standard is not entirely uniform, and yet there is a great uniformity in the size of the sĭn fĭng-e′, and all values are satisfactorily taken from it.

PALAY CURRENCY

An elaborate palay currency has been evolved from the standard, of which the following are the denominations:

Denomination	Number of handfuls
Sĭn fĭng-é	1
Sĭn ĭ′-tĭng	5
Chu′-wa ĭ′-tĭng	10
To-ló ĭ′-tĭng	15
I′-pat ĭ′-tĭng	20
Pu′-ak or gu′-tad	25
Sĭn fu-tĕk′	50
Sĭn fu-tĕk′ pŭ-ak	75
Chu′-wa fu-tĕk′	100
To-lo′ fu-tĕk′	150
I′-pat fu-tĕk′	200
Li-ma′ fu-tĕk′	250
I-nĭm′ fu-tĕk′	300
Pi-to′ fu-tĕk′	350
Wa-lo′ fu-tĕk′	400
Si-am′ fu-tĕk′	450
Sĭm-po′-o fu-tĕk′	500
Sĭn-o′-po	1,000

TRADE ROUTES

Commerce passes quite commonly within the Bontoc culture area from one pueblo to the next, and even to the second and third pueblos if they are friends; but the general direction is along the main river (the Chico), southwest and northeast, since here the people cling. This being the case, those living to the south and north of this line have much less commerce than those along the river route. For instance, practically no people now pass through Ambawan, southeast of Bontoc. It is the last pueblo in the area along the old Spanish calzada between the culture areas of Bontoc and Quiangan to the south. No people live

farther southward along the route for nearly a day, and the first pueblos met are enemies of Ambawan, fearful and feared. The only commerce between the two culture areas over this route passes when a detachment of native Constabulary soldiers makes the journey. Naturally the area traversed by a comerciante is limited by the existing feuds. The trader will not go among enemies without escort.

Besides the general trade route up and down the river, there is one between Bontoc and Barlig to the east via Kanyu and Tulubin. At Barlig the trail splits, one branch running farther eastward through Lias and Balangao and the other going southward through the Cambulo area—a large valley of people said to be similar in culture to those of Quiangan.

Another route from Bontoc leaves the main trail at Titipan and joins the pueblos of Tunnolang, Fidelisan, and Agawa in a general southwest direction. From Agawa the trail crosses the mountains, keeping its general southwest course. It turns westward at the Rio Balasian, which it follows to Ankiling on the Rio del Abra. The route is then along the main road to Candon on the coast via Salcedo.

Mayinit, the salt-producing pueblo, has her outlet on the main trail via Bontoc, but she also passes eastward to the main trail at Sakasakan, going through Baliwang, the battle-ax pueblo. She has no outlet to the north.

TRADE LANGUAGES AND TRADERS

Since the commerce is to-day nearly all interpueblo, the common language of the Igorot is used almost exclusively in trade. While the Spaniards were occupying the country, Chinamen—the "Chino" of the Islands—passed up from the coast as far as Bontoc, and even farther; the Ilokano also came. They brought much of the iron now in the country, and also came with brass wire, cloth, cotton, gangsas, and salt. These two classes of traders took out, in the main, the money and carabaos of the Igorot, and the Spaniard's coffee, cocoa, and money. To-day no comerciante from the coast dares venture farther inland than Sagada. Of the tradesmen the Chinese did not apparently affect the trade language at all, since the Chino commonly employs the Ilokano language. The Spanish gave the words of salutation, as "Buenos días" (good day) and "á Dios" (adieu); he also gave some of the names of coins. The peso, the silver dollar, is commonly called "peho." However, the medio peso is known as "thalepi," from the Ilokano "salepi." The peseta is called "peseta;" and the media peseta is known as "dies ay seis" (ten and six), or, simply, "seis"—it is from the Spanish, meaning sixteen quartos.

The Ilokano language was the more readily adopted, since it is of Malayan origin, and is heard west of the Igorot with increasing

frequency until its home is reached on the coast. Among the Ilokano words common in the language of commerce are the following:

Ma′-no, how much; a-sĭn′, salt; ba′-ag, breechcloth; bu-ya′-ang, black; con-di′-man, red; fan-cha′-la, blanket, white, with end stripes; pas-li-o′, Chinese bar iron from which axes, spears, and bolos are made; ba-rot′, brass wire; pi-nag-pa′-gan, a woman's blanket of distinctive design.

An Americanism used commonly in commercial transactions in the area, and also widely in northern Luzon, is "no got." It is an expression here to stay, and its simplicity as a vocalization has had much to do with its adoption.

STAGES OF COMMERCE

The commerce of the Igorot illustrates what seems to be the first distinctively commercial activity. Preceding it is the stage of barter between people who casually meet and who trade carried possessions on the whim of the moment. If we wish to dignify this kind of barter, it may properly be called "Fortuitous Commerce."

The next stage, one of the two illustrated by the Igorot of the Bontoc culture area, is that in which commodities are produced before a widespread or urgent demand exists for them in the minds of those who eventually become consumers through commerce. Such commodities result largely from a local demand and a local supply of raw materials. Gradually they spread over a widening area, carried by their producers whose home demand is, for the time, supplied, and who desire some commodity to be obtained among another people. Such venders never or rarely go alone to exchange their goods, which, also, are seldom produced by simply one person, but by a number of individuals or a considerable group. The motive prompting this commerce is the desire on the part of the trader to obtain the commodity for which he goes. In order to obtain it in honor, he attempts to thrust his own productions on the others by carrying his commodities among them. Commerce in this stage may be called "Irregular Intrusive Commerce." It also has its birth and development in barter.

A higher stage of commerce, an immediate outgrowth of the preceding, is that in which the producer anticipates a known demand for his commodity, and at irregular times carries his stock to the consumers. This commerce may be called "Irregular Invited Commerce." It is in this stage that a medium of exchange is likely to develop. This class of commerce is also in full operation in Bontoc to-day.

A higher form is that in which the producer keeps a supply of his commodity on hand, and periodically displays it repeatedly in a known place—a "market." This stage also may be developed simply through barter, as is seen among certain pueblo Indians of southwestern United States. But the Bontoc man has not begun to dream of a "market" for

satisfying his material wants. Such commerce may be called "Periodic Free Commerce." It is widespread in the Philippines, displaying both barter and sale. In many places in the Archipelago to-day, especially in Mindanao, periodic commerce is carried on regularly on neutral territory. Market places are selected where products are put down by one party which then retires temporarily, and are taken up by the other party which comes and leaves its own productions in exchange.

Growing out of these monthly, semimonthly, weekly, biweekly, and triweekly markets, as one sees them in the Philippines, is a still higher form of commerce carried on very largely by sale, but not entirely so. It may be called "Continual Free Commerce."

PROPERTY RIGHT

The idea of property right among the Igorot is clear. The recognition of property right is universal, and is seldom disputed, notwithstanding the fact that the right of ownership rests simply in the memory of the people—the only property mark being the ear slit of the half-wild carabao.

The majority of property disputes which have come to light since the Americans have been in Bontoc probably would not have occurred nor would the occasion for them have existed in a society of Igorot control. It is claimed in Bontoc that the Spaniard there settled most disputes which came to him in favor of the party who would pay the most money. In this way, it is said, the rich became the richer at the expense of the poor. This condition is suggested by recent *reclamos* made by poor people. Again, since the American heard the *reclamos* of all classes of people, the poor who, according to Igorot custom, forfeited sementeras to those richer as a penalty for stealing palay, have come to dispute the ownership of certain real property.

PERSONAL PROPERTY OF INDIVIDUAL

Most articles of personal property are individual. Such property consists of clothing, ornaments, implements, and utensils of out-of-door labor, the weapons of warfare, and such chickens, dogs, hogs, carabaos, food stuffs, and money as the person may have at the time of marriage or may inherit later.

Four of the richest men of Bontoc own fifty carabaos each, and one of them owns thirty hogs. Two other men and a woman, all called equally rich, own ten head of carabaos each. Others have fewer, while two of the ten richest men in the pueblo have no carabaos. Some of these men have eight granaries, holding from two to three hundred cargoes each, now full of palay. Carabaos are at present valued in Bontoc at about 50 pesos, and hogs average about 8 pesos. All rich people own one or more gold earrings valued at from one to two carabaos each.

frequency until its home is reached c
words common in the language of cor

Ma′-no, how much; a-sĭn′, salt; ba′-
con-di′-man, red; fan-cha′-la, blanket,
Chinese bar iron from which axes, spe
brass wire; pi-nag-pa′-gan, a woman's

An Americanism used commonly in
area, and also widely in northern Luzo
sion here to stay, and its simplicity
to do with its adoption.

STAGES OF COM

The commerce of the Igorot illustra
distinctively commercial activity. Prec
between people who casually meet and w
the whim of the moment. If we wish tc
may properly be called "Fortuitous Comr

The next stage, one of the two illustrat
culture area, is that in which commoditi
spread or urgent demand exists for thei
eventually become consumers through c
result largely from a local demand and a
Gradually they spread over a widening ar
whose home demand is, for the time, su
commodity to be obtained among another
or rarely go alone to exchange their goc
produced by simply one person, but by a
considerable group. The motive prompting
on the part of the trader to obtain the co
In order to obtain it in honor, he attempts t
on the others by carrying his commodities
this stage may be called "Irregular Intrusi
its birth and development in barter.

A higher stage of commerce, an immedia
ing, is that in which the producer anticipat
commodity, and at irregular times carries h
This commerce may be called "Irregular In
this stage that a medium of exchange is lik
of commerce is also in full operation in Bon

A higher form is that in which the produ
commodity on hand, and periodically displays
place—a "market." This stage also may be
barter, as is seen among certain pueblo India
States, but the Bontoc man has not begun to

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CVIII. ROLL OF BEESWAX AND THREE WAX PIPE MODELS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CIX. METAL PIPE MAKERS.

Photos by Jenks.

PLATE CX. METAL PIPES. (THE LOWER ROW SHOWS POORLY THE "ANITO" PIPE.)

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXI. CHILDREN PARING CAMOTES.

PLATE CXII. WOMEN THRESHING RICE.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXIII. GOURD FOR STORING SALT MEATS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXIV. BAMBOO TUBE FOR CARRYING BASI.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXV. MAYINIT PUEBLO. (LONG SALT HOUSES IN THE FOREGROUND.)

Photos by Martin.

PLATE CXVI. (*a*) WOMAN WASHING SALT; (*b*) SALT-INCRUSTED ROCKS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXVII. MAYINIT SALT PRODUCER PREPARING SALT CAKES FOR BAKING.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXIX. METHODS OF TRANSPORTATION.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXIX. METHODS OF TRANSPORTATION.

It is practically impossible to get the truth concerning the value of the personal or real property of the Igorot in Bontoc, because they are not yet sure the American will not presently tax them unjustly, as they say the Spaniard did. But the following figures are believed to be true in every particular. Mang-i-lot', an old man whose ten children are all dead, and who says his property is no longer of value because he has no children with whom to leave it, is believed to have spoken truthfully when he said he has the following sementeras in the five following geographic areas surrounding the pueblo:

Geographic area	Number of sementeras	Number of cargoes produced
Magkang	6	15
Kagchog	3	5
Felas	1	3
Toyub	1	5
Samuiyu	2	10
Total	13	43

These sementeras produce the low average of 3⅓ cargoes. The average value of Mang-i-lot's' sementeras, then, is 33⅓ pesos—which is thought to be a conservative estimate of the value of the Bontoc sementera. Mang-i-lot' is rated among the lesser rich men. He is relatively, as the American says, "well-to-do." However, when a man possesses twenty sementeras he is considered rich.

The richest man in Bontoc, with one hundred sementeras, has in them, say, 3,330 pesos' worth of real property in addition to his 6,340 pesos of personal property.

It is claimed that each household owns its dwelling and at least two sementeras and one granary, though a man with no more property than this is a poor man and some one in his family must work much of the time for wages, because two average sementeras will not furnish all the rice needed by a family for food.

A dwelling house is valued at about 60 pesos, which is less than it usually costs to build, and a granary is valued at about 10 or 15 pesos. It is constructed with great care, is valueless unless rodent proof, and costs much more than its avowed valuation.

Title to all buildings, building lands in the pueblo, and irrigated rice lands is recognized for at least two generations, though unoccupied during that time. They say the right to such unoccupied property would be recognized perpetually if there were heirs. At least it is true that there are now acres of unused lands, once palay sementeras, which have not been cultivated for two generations because water can

not be run to them, and the property right of the grandsons of the men who last cultivated them is recognized. However, if one leaves vacant any unirrigated agricultural mountain lands—used for millet, maize, or beans—another person may claim and plant them in one year's time, and no one disputes his title.

REAL PROPERTY OF GROUP

All real property accumulated by a man and woman in marriage is their joint property as long as both live and remain in union.

No form of real property, except forests, can be the joint property of other individuals than man and wife. Forests are most commonly the property of a considerable group of people—the descendants of a single ancestral owner. The lands as well as the trees are owned, and the sale of trees carries no right to the land on which they grow. It is impossible even to estimate the value of any one's forest property, but it is true that persons are recognized as rich or poor in forests.

PUBLIC PROPERTY

Public lands and forests extend in an irregular strip around most pueblos. There is no public forest, or even public lands, between Bontoc and Samoki, but Bontoc has access to the forests lying beyond her sister pueblo. Neither is there public forest, or any forest, between Bontoc and Tukukan, and Bontoc and Titipan, though there are public lands. In all other directions from Bontoc public forests surround the outlying private forests. They are usually from three to six hours distant. From them any man gathers what he pleases, but until the American came to Bontoc the Igorot seldom went that far for wood or lumber, as it was unsafe. Now, however, the individual will doubtless claim these lands, unless hindered by the Government. In this manner real property was first accumulated—a man claimed public lands and forests which he cared for and dared to appropriate and use. There have been few irrigated sementeras built on new water supplies in two generations by people of Bontoc pueblo. The "era of public lands" for Bontoc has practically passed; there is no more undiscovered water. However, three new sementeras were built this year on an island in the river near the pueblo, and are now (May, 1903) full of splendid palay, but they can not be considered permanent property, as an excessively rainy season will make them unfit for cultivation.

SALE OF PROPERTY

Personal property commonly passes by transfer for value received from one party to another. Such a thing as transfer of real property from one Igorot to another for legal currency is unknown; the trans-

fer is by barter. The transfer of personal property was considered in the preceding section on commerce.

Real property is seldom transferred for value received except at the death of the owner or a member of the family; at such times it is common, and occurs from the necessity of quantities of food for the burial feasts and the urgent need of blankets and other clothing for the interment.

Again, camote lands about the dwellings are disposed of to those who may want to build a dwelling. Dwellings are also disposed of if the original occupant is to vacate and some other person desires to possess the buildings.

Death may destroy one's personal property, such as hogs and carabaos, but almost never does an Igorot "lose his property," if it is real. Only a protracted family sickness or a series of deaths requiring the killing of great numbers of chickens, hogs, and carabaos, and the purchase of many things necessary for interment can lose to a person real property of any considerable value.

There is no formality to a "sale" of property, nor are witnesses employed. It is common knowledge within the ato when a sale is on, and the old men shortly know of and talk about the transaction—thenceforth it is on record and will stand.

RENT, LOAN, AND LEASE OF PROPERTY

Until recent years, long after the Spaniards came, it was customary to loan money and other forms of personal property without interest or other charge. This generous custom still prevails among most of the people, but some rich men now charge an interest on money loaned for one or more years. Actual cases show the rate to be about 6 or 7 per cent. The custom of loaning for interest was gained from contact with the Lepanto Igorot, who received it from the Ilokano.

It is claimed that dwellings and granaries are never rented.

Irrigated rice lands are commonly leased. Such method of cultivation is resorted to by the rich who have more sementeras than they can superintend. The lessee receives one-half of the palay harvested, and his share is delivered to him. The lessor furnishes all seed, fertilizers, and labor. He delivers the lessee's share of the harvest and retains the other half himself, together with the entire camote crop—which is invariably grown immediately after the palay harvest.

Unirrigated mountain camote lands are rented outright; the rent is usually paid in pigs. A sementera that produces a yield of 10 cargoes of camotes, valued at about six pesos, is worth a 2-peso pig as annual rental. In larger sementeras a proportional rental is charged—a rental of about 33⅓ per cent. All rents are paid after the crops are harvested.

INHERITANCE AND BEQUEST

As regards property the statement that all men are born equal is as false in Igorot land as in the United States. The economic status of the present generation and the preceding one was practically determined for each man before he was born. It is fair to make the statement that the rich of the present generation had rich grandparents and the poor had poor grandparents, although it is true that a large property is now and then lost sight of in its division among numerous children.

Children before their marriage receive little permanent property during the lives of their parents, and they retain none which they may accumulate themselves. A mother sometimes gives her daughter the hair dress of white and agate beads, called "apong;" also she may give a mature daughter her peculiar and rare girdle, called "akosan." Either parent may give a child a gold earring; I know of but one such case. This custom of not allowing an unmarried child to possess permanent property is so rigid that, I am told, an unmarried son or daughter seldom receives carabaos or sementeras until the death of the parents, no matter how old the child may be.

At the time of marriage parents give their children considerable property, if they have it, giving even one-half the sementeras they possess. If parents are no longer able to cultivate their lands when their children marry, they usually give them all they have, and their wants are faithfully met by the children.

The conditions presented above are practically the only ones in which the property owner controls the disposition of his possessions which pass in gift to kin.

The laws of inheritance and bequest are as firmly fixed as are the customs of giving and not giving during life.

Since all the property of a husband and wife is individual, except that accumulated by the joint efforts of the two during union, the property of each is divided on death. The survivor of a matrimonial union receives no share of the individual property of the deceased if there are kin. It goes first to the children or grandchildren. If there are none and a parent survives, it goes to the parent. If there are neither children, grandchildren, nor parents it goes to brothers and sisters or their children. If there are none of these relatives the property goes to the uncles and aunts or cousins. This seems to be the extent of the kinship recognized by the Igorot. If there are no relatives the property passes to the survivor of the union. If there is no survivor the property passes to that friend who takes up the responsibilities of the funeral and accompanying ceremonies. The law of inheri[illegible] then. as follows: First, lineal descendants; second,

ascendants; third, lateral descendants; fourth, surviving spouse; fifth, self-appointed executor who was a personal friend of the deceased.

Primogeniture is recognized, and the oldest living child, whether male or female, inherits slightly more than any of the others. For instance, if there were three or four or five sementeras per child, the eldest would receive one more than the others.

This law of primogeniture holds at all times, but if there are three boys and one girl the girl is given about the same advantage over the others, it is said, as though she were the eldest. If there are three girls and only one boy, no consideration is taken of sex. When there are only two children the eldest receives the largest or best sementera, but he must also take the smallest or poorest one.

It is said that division of the property of the deseased occurs during the days of the funeral ceremonies. This was done on the third day of the ceremonies at the funeral of old Som-kad', mentioned in the section on "Death and Burial." The laws are rigid, and all that is necessary to be done is for the lawful inheritors to decide which particular property becomes the possession of each. This is neither so difficult nor so conducive of friction as might seem, since the property is very undiversified.

TRIBUTE, TAX, AND "RAKE OFF"

There is no true systematic tribute, tax, or "rake off" among the Bontoc Igorot, nor am I aware that such occurs at all commonly sporadically. However, tribute, tax, and "rake off" are all found in pure Malayan culture in the Archipelago, as among the Moros of the southern islands.

Tribute may be paid more or less regularly by one group of people to a stronger, or to one in a position to harass and annoy—for the protection of the stronger, or in acknowledgment of submission, or to avoid harassment or annoyance. Nothing of the sort exists in Bontoc. The nearest approach to it is the exchange of property, as carabaos or hogs, between two pueblos at the time a peace is made between them—at which time the one sueing for peace makes by far the larger payment, the other payment being mere form. This transaction, as it occurs in Bontoc, is a recognition of submission and of inferiority, and is, as well, a guarantee of a certain amount of protection. However, such payments are not made at all regularly and do not stand as true tributes, though in time they might grow to be such.

Nothing in the nature of a tax for the purpose of supporting a government exists in Bontoc. The nearest approach to it is in a practice which grew up in Spanish time but is of Igorot origin. When to-day cargadors are required by Americans, as when Government supplies must be brought in, the members of each cargador's ato furnish him

food for the journey, though the cargador personally receives and keeps the wage for the trip. The furnishing of food seems to spring from the feeling that the man who goes on the journey is the public servant of those who remain—he is doing an unpleasant duty for his ato fellows. If this were carried one step further, if the rice were raised and paid for carrying on some regular function of the Igorot pueblo, it would be a true tax. It may be true, and probably is, in pure Igorot society that if men were sent by an ato on some mission for that ato they would receive support while gone. This would readily develop into a true tax if those public duties were to be performed continually, or even frequently with regularity.

"Rake off," or, as it is known in the Orient, "squeeze," is so common that every one—Malay, Chino, Japanese, European, and American—expects his money to be "squeezed" if it passes through another's hands or another is instrumental in making a bargain for him. In much of the Igorot territory surrounding the Bontoc area "rake off" occurs—it follows the advent of the "headman." It is one of the direct causes why, in Igorot society, the headman is almost always a rich man. During the hunting stage of human development no "rich man" can come up, as is illustrated by the primitive hunter folk of North America. As soon, however, as there are productions which may be traded in, there is a chance for one man to take advantage of his fellows and accumulate a part of their productions—this opportunity occurs among primitive agricultural people. The Bontoc area, however, has no "headman," no "rich man," and, consequently, no "rake off."

CHAPTER V

POLITICAL LIFE AND CONTROL

It is impossible to put one's hand on any one man or any one group of men in Bontoc pueblo of whom it may be said, "Here is the control element of the pueblo."

Nowhere has the Malayan attained national organization. He is known in the Philippines as a "provincial," but in most districts he is not even that. The Bontoc Igorot has not even a clan organization, to say nothing of a tribal organization. I fail to find a trace of matriarchy or patriarchy, or any mark of a kinship group which traces relationship farther than first cousins.

The Spaniard created a " presidente" and a "vice-presidente" for the various pueblos he sought to control, but these men, as often Ilokano as Igorot, were the avenue of Spanish approach to the natives—they were almost never the natives' mouthpiece. The influence of such officials was not at all of the nature to create or foster the feeling of political unity.

Aside from these two pueblo officers the government and control of the pueblo is purely aboriginal. Each ato, of which, as has been noted, there are seventeen, has its group of old men called "ĭn-tug-tu'-kan." This ĭn-tug-tu'-kan is not an organization, except that it is intended to be perpetual, and, in a measure, self-perpetuating. It is a thoroughly democratic group of men, since it is composed of all the old men in the ato, no matter how wise or foolish, rich or poor—no matter what the man's social standing may be. Again, it is democratic—the simplest democracy—in that is has no elective organization, no headmen, no superiors or inferiors whose status in the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan is determined by the members of the group. The feature of self-perpetuation displays itself in that it decides when the various men of the ato become am-a'-ma, "old men," and therefore members of the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan. A person is told some day to come and counsel with the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan, and thenceforth he is a member of the group.

In all matters with which the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan deals it is supreme in its ato, but in the ato only; hence the opening statement of the chapter that no man or group of men holds the control of the pueblo. The

life of the several ato has been so similar for such a number of generations that, in matters of general interest, the thoughts of one ĭn-tug-tu'-kan will be practically those of all others. For instance, there are eight ceremonial occasions on which the entire pueblo rests from agricultural labors, simply because each ato observes the same ceremonials on identical days. In one of these ceremonials, all the men of the entire pueblo have a rock con test with all the men of Samoki. Again, when a person of the pueblo has been killed by another pueblo treacherously or in ambush, or in any way except by fair fight, the pueblo as a unit hastens to avenge the death on the pueblo of the slayer.

In such matters as these—matters of common defense and offense, matters of religion wherein food supply is concerned—custom has long since crystallized into an act of democratic unity what may once have been the result of the councils of all the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan of the pueblo. It is customary for an ato to rest from agricultural labor on the funeral day of any adult man, but the entire pueblo thus seeks to honor at his death the man who was old and influential.

There is little differentiation of the functions of the ĭn-tug-tu'-kan. It hears, reviews, and judges the individual disagreements of the members of the ato and makes laws by determining custom. It also executes its judgments or sees that they are executed. It makes treaties of peace, sends and accepts or rejects challenges of war for its ato. In case of interato disagreements of individuals the two ĭn-tug-tu'-kan meet and counsel together, representing the interests of the persons of their ato. In other words, the pueblo is a federation made up of seventeen geographical and political units, in each of which the members recognize that their sanest, ripest wisdom dwells with the men who have had the longest experience in life; and the group of old men—sometimes only one man and sometimes a dozen—is known as ĭn-tug-tu'-kan, and its wisdom is respected to the degree that it is regularly sought and is accepted as final judgment, being seldom ignored or dishonored. In matters of a common interest the pueblo customarily acts as a unit. Probably could it not so act, factions would result causing separation from the federation. This state of things is hinted as one of the causes why the ancestors of present Samoki separated from the pueblo of Bontoc. The fact that they did separate is common knowledge, and a cause frequently assigned is lack of space to develop. However, there may have been disagreement.

CRIMES, DETECTION AND PUNISHMENT

Theft, lying to shield oneself in some criminal act, assault and battery, adultery, and murder are the chief crimes against Igorot society.

There [illegible] mine which of several suspects is guilty of a crime [illegible] rice-chewing test. The old men of the

nble, in whose presence each suspect is made to
aw rice, which, when it is thoroughly masticated,
. Each mouthful is examined, and the person
st is considered guilty. It is believed that the
st nervous during the trial, thus checking a nor-

ater test. An egg is placed in an olla of boiling
ect is obliged to pick it out with his hand. When
s out the egg the hot water leaps up and burns the

test said to be the surest one of all. A battle-ax
angle of about 60 degrees, and an egg is placed at
ion to slide down. Just before the egg is freed from
stion is asked "Is Liod (the name of the man under
If the egg slides down the blade to the bottom the
nnocent but if it sticks on the ax he is guilty.
a blood test employed in Bontoc pueblo, and also to the
g, it is said, into Lepanto Province. An instrument
a sharp spike of iron projecting about one-sixteenth of
a handle with broad shoulders is placed against the scalp
cts and the handle struck a sharp blow. The projecting
supposed to prevent the spike from entering the scalp of
r than that of another. The person who bleeds most is
guilty—he is "hot headed."
nce present at an Igorot trial when the question to be decided
her a certain man or a certain woman had lied. The old men
d and cross-questioned both parties for fully a quarter of an
t which time they announced that the woman was the liar.
they brought a test to bear evidence in binding their decision.
killed a chicken and cut it open. The gall was found to be
st entirely exposed on the liver—clearly the woman had lied. She
ed at the all-knowing gall and nodded her acceptance of the verdict.
the gall had been hidden by the upper lobe of the liver, the verdict
uld not have been sustained.

If a person steals palay, the injured party may take a sementera from the offender.

If a man is found stealing pine wood from the forest lands of another, he forfeits not only all the wood he has cut but also his working ax.

The penalty for the above two crimes is common knowledge, and if the crime is proved there is no longer need for the old men to make a decision—the offended party takes the customary retributive action against the offender.

Cases of assault and battery frequently occur. The chief causes are lovers' jealousies, theft of irrigating water during a period of drought,

and dissatisfaction between the heirs of a property at or shortly following the time of inheritance.

It is customary for the old men of the interested ato to consider all except common offenses unless the parties settle their differences without appeal.

A fine of chickens, pigs, sementeras, sometimes even of carabaos, is the usual penalty for assault and battery.

Adultery is not a common crime. I was unable to learn that the punishment for adultery was ever the subject for a council of the old men. It seems rather that the punishment—death of the offenders—is always administered naturally, being prompted by shocked and turbulent emotions rather than by a council of the wise men. In Igorot society the spouse of either criminal may take the lives of both the guilty if they are apprehended in the crime. To-day the group consciousness of the penalty for adultery is so firmly fixed that adulterers are slain, not necessarily on the spur of the moment of a suspected crime but sometimes after carefully laid plans for detection. A case in question occurred in Suyak of Lepanto Province. A man knew that his faithless wife went habitually at dusk with another man to a secluded spot under a fallen tree. One evening the husband preceded them, and lay down with his spear on the tree trunk. When the guilty people arrived he killed them both in their crime, thrusting his spear through them and pinning them to the earth.

Among a primitive people whose warfare consists much in ambushing and murdering a lone person it is not always possible to predict whether the taking of human life will be considered a criminal act or an act of legitimate warfare.

It is considered warfare by the group of the murdered person, and as such to be met by return warfare unless the group of the murderer is a friendly one and at once comes to the offended people to sue for continued peace. This applies to political groups within a pueblo as well as to the people of distinct pueblos.

When murder is considered simply as a crime, its punishment may be one of two classes: First, the murderer may lose his life at the hands of his own group; second, the crime may be compounded for the equivalent of the guilty man's property. In this case the settlement is between the guilty person and the political group of the victim, and the value of the compound is consumed by feastings of the group. No part of the price is paid the family of the deceased as a compensation for the loss of his labor and other assistance.

The three following specific cases of misdemeanors will illustrate somewhat more fully the nature of differences which arise between individuals in pure Igorot society:

In Samoki early in November, 1902, Bisbay pawned an iron pot—a

·o for 4 pesos. In about two months, when sugar
went to redeem his property, but Yagao would
ıney nor give up the boiler. The old men of the
r over the matter, and, as a result, Yagao received
rned the pot, and the matter was thus amicably
vo.

. 1903, Mowigas, of the pueblo of Ganang, cut
grasshopper basket of Dadaag, of the pueblo of
ightly cut Dadaag with his ax, but did not attempt
ause of the assault was this: Mowigas had killed a
ving a ceremonial in his house at the time Dadaag
sket of grasshoppers. According to Igorot custom
e taken grasshoppers past a house in which such a
g performed. The breach made it necessary to hold
, killing another chicken. Old men from Mayinit,
adaag, came to Ganang and told Mowigas he would
esos for his conduct, or Mayinit would come over and
n. He paid the money, whereas the basket was worth
he price. Trouble was thus averted, and the individuals
this case the two pueblos are friends, but Mayinit is
than Ganang, and evidently took advantage of the fact.
, 1903, a woman and her son, of Titipan, stole camotes
tipan family. The old men of the two ato of the interested
l the thieves a hog. The fine was paid, and the hog eaten
nen of the two ato.

en the fine paid by the offender passes promptly down the
the jury. However, it is the only compensation for their
keeping the peace of the pueblo, so they look upon it as
tful share—it is the "lawyer's share" with a vengeance.

CHAPTER VI

WAR AND HEAD-HUNTING

En-fa-lok′-nĕt is the Bontoc word for war, but the expression "na-ma′-ka"—take heads—is used interchangeably with it.

For unknown generations these people have been fierce head-hunters. Nine-tenths of the men in the pueblos of Bontoc and Samoki wear on the breast the indelible tattoo emblem which proclaims them takers of human heads. The fawi of each ato in Bontoc has its basket containing skulls of human heads taken by members of the ato.

There are several different classes of head-hunters among primitive Malayan peoples, but the continuation of the entire practice is believed to be due to the so-called "debt of life"—that is, each group of people losing a head is in duty and honor bound to cancel the score by securing a head from the offenders. In this way the score is never ended or canceled, since one or the other group is always in debt.

It seems not improbable that the heads may have been cut off first as the best way of making sure that a fallen enemy was certainly slain. The head was at all events the best proof to a man's tribesmen of the discharge of the debt of life; it was the trophy of success in defeating the foe. Whatever the cause of taking the head may have been with the first people, it would surely spread to others of a similar culture who warred with a head-taking tribe, as they would wish to appear as cruel, fierce, and courageous as the enemy.

Henry Ling Roth[1] quotes Sir Spencer St. John as follows concerning the Seribas Dyaks of Borneo (p. 142):

> A certain influential man denied that head-hunting is a religious ceremony among them. It is merely to show their bravery and manliness, that it may be said that so-and-so has obtained heads. When they quarrel it is a constant phrase, "How many heads did your father or grandfather get?" If less than his own number, "Well, then, you have no occasion to be proud!" That the possession of heads gives them great considerations as warriors and men of wealth, the skulls being prized as the most valuable of goods.

[1] The Natives of Sarawak and British North Borneo (2 vols., London, 1896); pp. 140–174, vol. II.

Again he quotes St. John (p. 143):

> Feasts in general are: To make their rice grow well, to cause the forest to abound with wild animals, to enable their dogs and snares to be successful in securing game, to have the streams swarm with fish, to give health and activity to the people themselves, and to insure fertility to their women. All these blessings the possessing and feasting of a fresh head are supposed to be the most efficient means of securing.

He quotes Axel. Dalrymple as follows (p. 141):

> The Uru Ais believe that the persons whose heads they take will become their slaves in the next world.

On the same page he quotes others to the same point regarding other tribes of Borneo.

Roth states (p. 163):

> From all accounts there can be little doubt that one of the chief incentives to getting heads is the desire to please the women. It may not always have been so and there may be and probably is the natural blood-thirstiness of the animal in man to account for a great deal of the head-taking.

He quotes Mrs. F. F. McDougall in her statement of a Sakaran legend of the origin of head-taking to the effect that the daughter of their great ancestor residing near the Evening Star "refused to marry until her betrothed brought her a present worth her acceptance." First the young man killed a deer which the girl turned from with disdain; then he killed and brought her one of the great monkeys of the forest, but it did not please her. "Then, in a fit of despair, the lover went abroad and killed the first man he met, and, throwing his victim's head at the maiden's feet, he exclaimed at the cruelty she had made him guilty of; but, to his surprise, she smiled and said that now he had discovered the only gift worthy of herself" (p. 163). In the three following pages of his book the author quotes three or four other writers who cite in detail instances wherein heads were taken simply to advance the slayer's interests with women.

As showing the passion for head-hunting among these people, St. John tells of a young man who, starting alone to get a head from a neighboring tribe, took the head of "an old woman of their own tribe, not very distantly related to the young fellow himself." When the fact was discovered "he was only fined by the chief of the tribe and the head taken from him and buried" (p. 161).

Again (p. 159):

> The maxim of the ruffians (Kayans) is that out of their own country all are fair game. "Were we to meet our father, we would slay him." The head of a child or of a woman is as highly prized as that of a man.

Mr. Roth writes that Mr. F. Witti "found that the latter (Limberan) would not count as against themselves heads obtained on head-hunting excursions, but only those of people who had been making peaceful

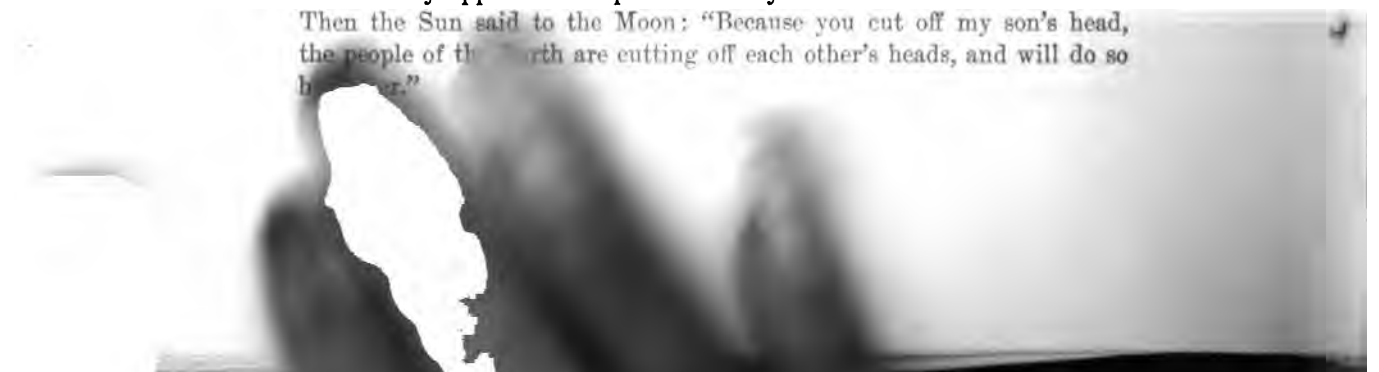
visits, etc. In fact, the sporting head-hunter bags what he can get, his declared friends alone excepted" (p. 160).

The Ibilao of Luzon, near Dupax, of the Province of Nueva Vizcaya, give the name "debt of life" to their head-hunting practice; but they have, in addition, other reasons for head taking. No man may marry who has not first taken a head; and every year after they harvest their palay the men go away for heads, often going journeys requiring a month of time in order to strike a particular group of enemies. The Christians of Dupax claim that in 1899 the Ibilao took the heads of three Dupax women who were working in the rice sementeras close to the pueblo. These same Christians also claim that they have seen a human head above the stacks of harvested Ibilao palay; and they claim the custom is practiced annually, though the Ibilao deny it.

Some dozen causes for head-hunting among primitive Malayan peoples have been here cited. These include the debt of life, requirements for marriage, desire for abundant fruitage and harvest of cultivated products, the desire to be considered brave and manly, desire for exaltation in the minds of descendants, to increase wealth, to secure abundance of wild game and fish, to secure general health and activity of the people, general favor at the hands of the women, fecundity of women, and slaves in the future life.

From long continuance in the practice of head-hunting, many beliefs and superstitions arise to foster it, until in the minds of the people these beliefs are greater factors in its perpetuation than the original one of the debt of life. The possession of a head, with the accompanying honor, feasts, and good omens, seems in many cases to be of first importance rather than the avenging of a life.

The custom of head taking came with the Igorot to Luzon, a custom of their ancestors in some earlier home. The people of Bontoc, however, say that their god, Lumawig, taught them to go to war. When, a very long time ago, he lived in Bontoc, he asked them to accompany him on a war expedition to Lagod, the north country. They said they did not wish to go, but finally yielded to his urgings and followed him. On the return trip the men missed one of their companions, Gu-ma′-nûb. Lumawig told them that Gu-ma′-nûb had been killed by the people of the north. And thus their wars began—Gu-ma′-nûb must be avenged. They have also a legend in regard to head taking: The Moon, a woman called "Kabigat," was sitting one day making a copper pot, and one of the children of the man Chalchal, the Sun, came to watch her. She struck him with her molding paddle, cutting off his head. The Sun immediately appeared and placed the boy's head back on his shoulders. Then the Sun said to the Moon: "Because you cut off my son's head, the people of th[illegible]rth are cutting off each other's heads, and will do so h[illegible]er."



With the Bontoc men the taking of heads is not the passion it seems to be with some of the people of Borneo. It is, however, the almost invariable accompaniment of their interpueblo warfare. They invariably, too, take the heads of all killed on a head-hunting expedition. They have skulls of Spaniards, and also skulls of Igorot, secured when on expeditions of punishment or annihilation with the Spanish soldiers.

But the possession of a head is in no way a requisite to marriage. A head has no part in the ceremonies for palay fruitage and harvest, or in any of the numerous agricultural or health ceremonies of the year. It in no way affects a man's wealth, and, so far as I have been able to learn, it in no way affects in their minds a man's future existence. A beheaded man, far from being a slave, has special honor in the future state, but there seems to be none for the head taker. As shown by the Lumawig legend the debt of life is the primary cause of warfare in the minds of the people of Bontoc, and it is to-day a persistent cause. Moreover, since interpueblo warfare exists and head taking is its form, head-hunting is a necessity with an individual group of people in a state of nature. Without it a people could have no peace, and would be annihilated by some group which believed it a coward and an easy prey.

There is no doubt that the desire to be considered brave and manly has come to be a factor in Bontoc head taking. In my presence an Igorot once told a member of ato Ungkan that the men of his ato were like girls, because they had not taken heads. The statement was false, but the pronounced judgment sincere. In this connection, also, it may be said that although the taking of a head is not a requisite to marriage, and they say that it does not win the men special favor from the women, yet, since it makes them manly and brave in the eyes of their fellows, it must also have its influence on the women.

The desire for exaltation in the minds of descendants also has a certain influence—young men in quarrels sometimes brag of the number of heads taken by their ancestors, and the prowess or success of an ancestor seems to redound to the courage of the descendants; and it is an affront to purposely and seriously belittle the head-hunting results of a man's father.

There can be no doubt that head-hunting expeditions are often made in response to a desire for activity and excitement, with all the feasting, dancing, and rest days that follow a successful foray. The explosive nature of a man's emotional energy demands this bursting of the tension of everyday activities. In other words, the people get to itching for a head, because a head brings them emotional satisfaction.

It is believed that now the people of the two sister pueblos, Bontoc and Samoki, look on war and head-hunting somewhat as a game, as a dangerous, great sport, though not a pastime. It is a test of agility and skill, in which superior courage and brute force are minor factors.

Primarily a pueblo is an enemy of every other pueblo, but it is customary for pueblos to make terms of peace. Neighboring pueblos are usually, but not always, friendly. The second pueblo away is usually an enemy. On most of our trips through northern Luzon cargadors and guides could readily be secured to go to the nearest pueblo, but in most cases they absolutely refused to go on to the second pueblo, and could seldom be driven on by any argument or force. The actual negotiations for peace are generally between some two ato of the two interested pueblos, since the debt of life is most often between two ato.

Bontoc and Samoki claim never to have sued for peace—a statement probably true, as they are by far the largest body of warriors in the culture area, and their war reputation is the worst. When one ato agrees on peace with another the entire pueblo honors the treaty.

The following peace agreements have been sought by outside pueblos in recent years of the following ato of Bontoc: Sakasakan sued for peace from Somowan, and Barlig from Pudpudchog; Tulubin, from Buyayyeng; Bitwagan, from Sipaat; Tukukan sought peace from both Amkawa and Polupo, and Sabangan also from Polupo; Sadanga, from Choko; and Baliwang, from Longfoy.

The relations with two of these pueblos, Barlig and Sadanga, however, are now not peaceful. Bontoc has many kin in Lias, some two days to the east, the trail to which passes Barlig; but communication between these pueblos of kin has ceased, because of the attitude of Barlig. Communication between Bontoc and Tinglayan, northeast of the Bontoc area on the river, has also ceased, because of the enmity of Sadanga, which lies close to the trail between the two pueblos.

The peace ceremonial, to which a hog or carabao is brought by the entreating people and eaten by the two parties to the agreement, is called "pwi-dĭn." The peace is sealed by some exchange, as of a battle-ax for a blanket, the people sued having the better part of the trade.

It now and then happens that of two pueblos at peace one loses a head to the other. If the one taking the head desires continued peace, some of its most influential men hasten to the other pueblo to talk the matter over. Very likely the other pueblo will say, "If you wish war, all right; if not, you bring us two carabaos, and we will still be friends." If no effort for peace is made by the offenders, each from that day considers the other an enemy.

There is a formal way of breaking the peace between two pueblos: Should ato Somowan of Bontoc, for instance, wish to break her peace with Sakasakan she holds a ceremonial meeting, called "měn-pa-kěl'." In this meeting the old men freely speak their minds; and when all matters are settled a messenger departs for Sakasakan bearing a battle-

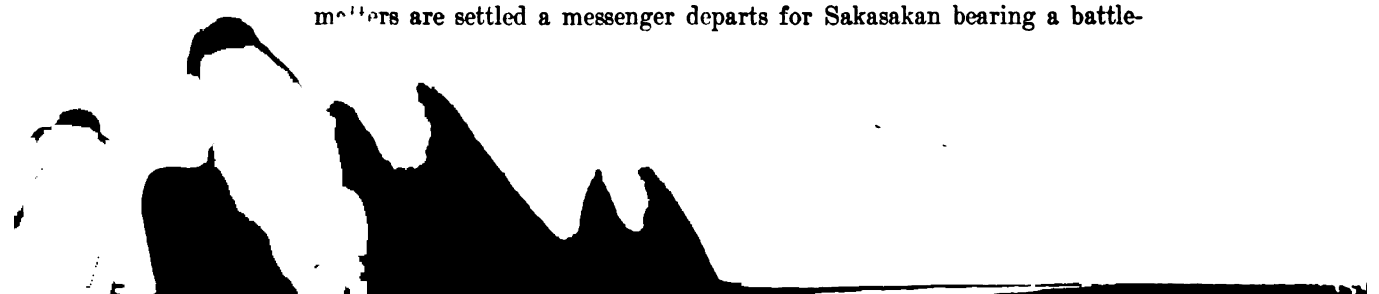


Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXX. MAN'S TRANSPORTATION BASKET (KI-MA'-TA).

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXXI. WOMAN'S TRANSPORTATION BASKETS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXXII. WOMEN BURDEN BEARERS.

Photos by Jenks.

PLATE CXXIII. (*a*) TULUBIN MEN BRINGING HOME SALT: (*b*) SAMOKI POTTERS WITH WARE.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXXIV. MAYINIT WOMEN ON THE TRAIL TO BONTOC TO SELL PALAY.

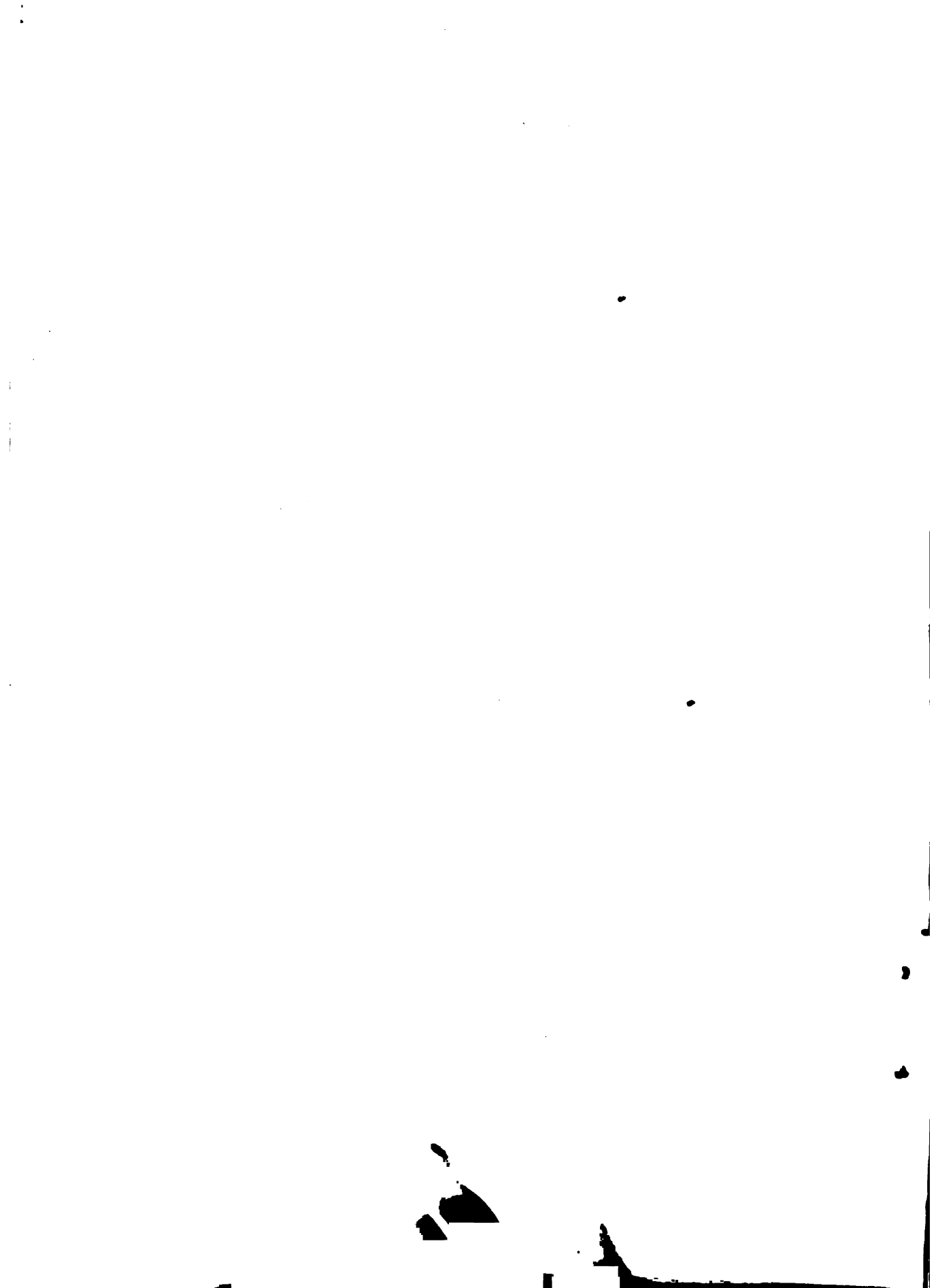


Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXXV. A BA'-SI VENDER.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXXVI. MAK'-LAN, A BONTOC WARRIOR.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXXVII. KO'-MĬS ON WAR TRAIL BETWEEN SAMOKI AND TULUBIN.

ax or spear—the customary token of war with all these Bontoc peoples. The life of the war messenger is secure, but, if possible, he is a close relative of the challenged people. There is no record that such a person was ever killed while on his mission. The messenger presents himself to some old man of the ato or pueblo, and says, "In-ya'-lak nan sud-sud in-fu-sul'-ta-ko," which means, roughly, "I bring the challenge of war."

If the challenge is accepted, as it usually is, an ax or spear is given the messenger, and he hastens home to exclaim to his people, "In-tang-i'-cha měn-fu-sul'-ta-ko"—that is, "They care to contest in war."

A peace thus canceled is followed by a battle between practically all the men of both sides. It is customary for the challenging people, within a few days, to appear before the pueblo of their late friends, and the men at once come out in answer to the challenging cries of the visitors—"Come out if you dare to fight us!" Or it may be that those challenged appear near the other pueblo before it has time to back its challenge.

If the challenged pueblo does not wish to fight, the spokesman tells the messenger that they do not wish war; they desire continued friendship; and the messenger returns tc his people, not with a weapon of war, but with a chicken or a pig; and he repeats to his people the message he received from the old man.

After a peace has been canceled the two pueblos keep up a predatory warfare, with a head lost here and there, and with now and then a more serious battle, until one or the other again sues for peace, and has its prayer granted. In this predatory warfare the entire body of enemies, one or more ato, at times lays in hiding to take a few heads from lone people at their daily toil. Or when the country about a trail is covered with close tropical growth an enemy may hide close above the path and practically pick his man as he passes beneath him. He hurls or thrusts his spear, and almost always escapes with his own life, frequently bursting through a line of people on the trail, and instantly disappearing in the cover below. Should the injured pueblo immediately retaliate, it finds its enemies alert and on guard.

At two places near the mountain trail between Samoki and Tulubin is a trellis-like structure called "ko'-mĭs." It consists of several posts set vertically in the ground, to which horizontal poles are tied. The posts are the stem and root sections of the beautiful tree ferm. They are set root end up, and the fine, matted rootlets present a compact surface which the Igorot has carved in the traditional shape of the "anito." Some of these heads have inlaid eyes and teeth of stone. Hung on the ko'-mĭs are baskets and frames in which chickens and pigs have been carried to the place for ceremonial feasting.

These two ko'-mĭs were built four years ago when Bontoc and Samoki

had their last important head-hunting forays with Tulubin. When Bontoc or Samoki (and usually they fight together) sought Tulubin heads they spent a night at one of the ko′-mĭs, remaining at the first one, if the signs were propitious—but, if not, they passed on to the second, hoping for better success. They killed and ate their fowls and pigs in a ceremony called "fi-kat′," and, if all was well, approached the mountains near Tulubin and watched to waylay a few of her people when they came to the sementeras in the early morning. If a crow flew cawing over the trail, or a snake or rat crossed before the warriors, or a rock rolled down the mountain side, or a clod of earth caved away under their feet, or if the little omen bird, "i′-chu," called, the expedition was abandoned, as these were bad omens.

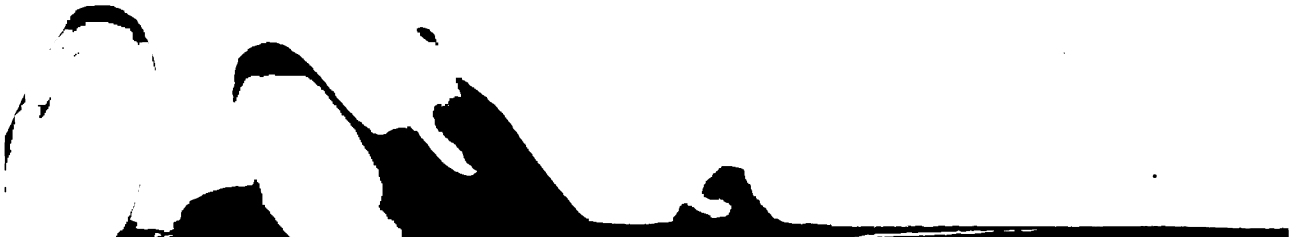
The ceremony of the ko′-mĭs is held before all head-hunting expeditions, except in the unpremeditated outburst of a people to immediately punish the successful foray or ambush of some other. The ko′-mĭs is built along all Bontoc war trails, though no others are known having the "anito" heads. So persistent are the warriors if they have decided to go to a particular pueblo for heads that they often go day after day to the ko′-mĭs for eight or ten days before they are satisfied that no good omens will come to them. If the omens are persistently bad, it is customary for the warriors to return to their ato and hold the mo-gĭng ceremony, during which they bury under the stone pavement of the fawi court one of the skulls then preserved in the ato.

In this way they explode their extra emotions and partially work off their disappointment.

Occasionally a town has a bad strain of blood, and two or three men break away without common knowledge and take heads. The entire body of warriors in the pueblo where those murdered lived promptly rises and pours itself unheralded on the pueblo of the murderers. If these people are not warned the slaughter is terrible—men, women, and children alike being slain. None is spared, except mere babes, unless they belong to the offended pueblo, marriage having taken them away from home. Preceding a known attack on a pueblo it is customary for the women and children to flee to the mountains, taking with them the dogs, pigs, chickens, and valuable household effects. However, Bontoc pueblo, because of her strength, is not so evacuated—she expects no enemy strong enough to burst through and reach the defenseless.

In the Banawi area, where the dwellings are built on prominences frequently a hundred or more feet above the surrounding territory, they say the women often remain and assist in the defense by hurling rocks. They are safer there than they would be elsewhere.

Men go to war armed with a wooden shield, a steel battle-ax, and one to three steel or wooden spears. It is a man's agility and skill in keeping his shield between himself and the enemy that preserves his



life. Their battles are full of quick, incessant springing motion. There are sudden rushes and retreats, sneaking flank movements to cut an enemy off. The body is always in hand, always in motion, that it may respond instantly to every necessity. Spears are thrown with greatest accuracy and fatality up to 30 feet, and after the spears are discharged the contest, if continued, is at arms' length with the battle-axes. In such warfare no attitude or position can safely be maintained except for the shortest possible time.

Challenges and bluffs are sung out from either side, and these bluffs are usually "called." In the last Bontoc-Tulubin foray a fine, strapping Tulubin warrior sung out that he wanted to fight ten men—he was taken at his word so suddenly that his head was a Bontoc prize before his friends could rally to assist him.

In March we were returning from a trip to Banawi of the Quiangan area, and were warned we might be attacked near a certain river. As we approached it coming down a forested mountain side three or four men were seen among the trees on the farther side of the stream. Presently they called their dogs, which began to bark; then our Bontoc Igorot Constabulary escort "joshed" the supposed enemy by loudly calling dogs and hogs. Presently the calls worked themselves into a rhythmic chorus for all like a strong college yell, "A′-su, a′-su, a′-su, a′-su, fu′-tug, fu′-tug, fu′-tug, fu′-tug." It is probable the men across the river were hunting wild hogs, but at the time the Constabulary considered the dog calls simply a bluff, which they "called" in the only way they could as they continued down the mountain trail.

Rocks are often thrown in battle, and not infrequently a man's leg is broken or he is knocked senseless by a rock, whereupon he loses his head to the enemy, unless immediately assisted by his friends.

There is little formality about the head taking. Most heads are cut off with the battle-ax before the wounded man is dead. Not infrequently two or more men have thrown their spears into a man who is disabled. If among the number there is one who has never taken a head, he will generally be allowed to cut this one from the body, and thus be entitled to a head taker's distinct tattoo. However, the head belongs to the man who threw the first disabling spear, and it finds its resting place in his ato. If there is time, men of other ato may cut off the man's hands and feet to be displayed in their ato. Sometimes succeeding sections of the arms and legs are cut and taken away, so only the trunk is left on the field.

Frequently a battle ends when a single head is taken by either side—the victors calling out, "Now you go home, and we will go home; and if you want to fight some other day, all right!" In this way battles are ended in an hour or so, and often in half an hour. However, they have battles lasting half a day, and ten or a dozen heads are taken.

Seven pueblos of the lower Quiangan region went against the scattered groups of dwellings in the Banawi area of the upper Quiangan region in May, 1902. The invaders had seven guns, but the people of Banawi had more than sixty—a fact the invaders did not know until too late. However, they did not retire until they had lost a hundred and fifty heads. They annihilated one of the groups of the enemy, getting about fifty heads, and burned down the dwellings. This is by far the fiercest Igorot battle of which there is any memory, and its ferocity is largely due to firearms.

When a head has been taken the victor usually starts at once for his pueblo, without waiting for the further issue of the battle. He brings the head to his ato and it is put in a small funnel-shaped receptacle, called "sak-o'-long," which is tied on a post in the stone court of the fawi. The entire ato joins in a ceremony for the day and night; it is called "se'-dak." A dog or hog is killed, the greater part of which is eaten by the old men of the ato, while the younger men dance to the rythmic beats of the gangsa. On the next day, "chao'-is," a month's ceremony, begins. About 7 o'clock in the morning the old men take the head to the river. There they build a fire and place the head beside it, while the other men of the ato dance about it for an hour. All then sit down on their haunches facing the river, and, as each throws a small pebble into the water he says, "Man-i'-su, hu! hu! hu! Tukukan!"—or the name of the pueblo from which the head was taken. This is to divert the battle-ax of their enemy from their own necks. The head is washed in the river by sousing it up and down by the hair; and the party returns to the fawi where the lower jaw is cut from the head, boiled to remove the flesh, and becomes a handle for the victor's gangsa. In the evening the head is buried under the stones of the fawi.

In a head ceremony which began in Samoki May 21, 1903, there was a hand, a jaw, and an ear suspended from posts in the courts of ato Nag-pi', Ka'-wa, and Nak-a-wang', respectively. In each of the eight ato of the pueblo the head ceremony was performed. In their dances the men wore about their necks rich strings of native agate beads which at other dances the women usually wear on their heads. Many had boar-tusk armlets, some of which were gay with tassels of human hair. Their breechcloths were bright and long. All wore their battle-axes, two of which were freshly stained halfway up the blade with human blood—they were the axes used in severing the trophies from the body of the slain.

On the second day the dance began about 4 o'clock in the morning, at which time a bright, waning moon flooded the pueblo with light. At every ato the dance circle was started in its swing, and barely ceased for a month. A group of eight or ten men formed, as is shown in Pl. CXXXI, and danced contraclockwise around and around the

small circle. Each dancer beat his blood and emotions into sympathetic rhythm on his gangsa, and each entered intently yet joyfully into the spirit of the occasion—they had defeated an enemy in the way they had been taught for generations.

It was a month of feasting and holidays. Carabaos, hogs, dogs, and chickens were killed and eaten. No work except that absolutely necessary was performed, but all people—men, women, and children—gathered at the ato dance grounds and were joyous together.

Each ato brought a score of loads of palay, and for two days women threshed it out in a long wooden trough for all to eat in a great feast. This ceremonial threshing is shown in Pl. CXXXII. Twenty-four persons, usually all women, lined up along each side of the trough, and, accompanying their own songs by rhythmic beating of their pestles on the planks strung along the sides of the trough, each row of happy toilers alternately swung in and out, toward and from the trough, its long heavy pestles rising and falling with the regular "click, click, thush; click, click, thush!" as they fell rebounding on the plank, and were then raised and thrust into the palay-filled trough.

After heads have been taken by an ato any person of that ato—man, woman, or child—may be tattooed; and in Bontoc pueblo they maintain that tattooing may not occur at any other time, and that no person, unless a member of the successful ato, may be tattooed.

After the captured head has been in the earth under the fawi court of Bontoc about three years it is dug up, washed in the river, and placed in the large basket, the so-lo'-nang, in the fawi, where doubtless it is one of several which have a similar history. At such time there is a three-day's ceremony, called "mĭn-pa-fa'-kal ĭs nan mo'-kĭng." It is a rest period for the entire pueblo, with feasting and dancing, and three or four hogs are killed. The women may then enter the fawi; it is said to be the only occasion they are granted the privilege.

In the fawi of ato Sigichan there are at present three skulls of men from Sagada, one of a man from Balugan, and one of a man and two of women from Baliwang. Probably not more than a dozen skulls are kept in a fawi at one time. The final resting place of the skull is again under the stones of the fawi. Samoki does not keep the skull at all; it remains where buried under the ato court. As was stated before, a skull is generally buried under the stones of the fawi court whenever the omens are such that a proposed head-hunting expedition is given up. They are doubtless, also, buried at other times when the basket in the fawi becomes too full. Sigichan has buried twenty-eight skulls in the memory of her oldest member—making a total of thirty-five heads taken, say, in fifty years. Three of these were men's heads from Ankiling, nine were men's heads from Tukukan, three were men's heads from Barlig, three were men's heads and four women's heads from

Sabangan, and six were men's heads from Sadanga. During this same period Sigichan claims to have lost one man's head each to Sabangan and Sadanga.

No small children's skulls can be found in Bontoc, though some other head-hunters take the heads even of infants. In fact, the men of Bontoc say that babes and children up to about 5 years of age are not killed by the head-hunter. If one should take a child's head he would shortly be called to fate by some watchful pinteng in language as follows: "Why did you take that babe's head? It does not understand war. Pretty soon some pueblo will take your head." And the pinteng is supposed to put it into the mind of some pueblo to get the head of that particularly cruel man.

The friends of a beheaded person take his body home from the scene of death. It remains one day sitting in the dwelling. Sometimes a head is bought back from the victors at the end of a day, the usual price paid being a carabao. After the body has remained one day in the dwelling it is said to be buried without ceremony near the trail leading to the pueblo which took the head. The following day the entire ato has a ceremonial fishing in the river, called "mang-o′-gao" or "tĭd-wĭl." A fish feast follows for the evening meal. The next day the mang-ay′-yu ceremony occurs. At that time the men of the ato go near the place where their companion lost his head and ask the beheaded man's spirit, the pinteng, to return to their pueblo.

Pl. CXXXVI shows the burial of a beheaded corpse in Banawi in April, 1903.[1] After the head-taking the body was set up two days under the dwelling of the dead man, and was then carried to the mountain side in the direction of Kambulo, the pueblo which killed the man. It was tied on a war shield and the whole tied to a pole which was borne by two men, as is shown in Pl. CXXXV. The funeral procession was made up as follows: First, four warriors proceeded, one after the other, along a narrow path on the dike walls, each beating a slow rhythm with a stick on the long, black, Banawi war shield, each shield, however, being striped differently with white-earth paint. The corpse was borne next, after which followed about a dozen more warriors, most of whom carried the white-marked shield—an emblem of mourning.

About half a mile from the dwelling the party left the sementeras and climbed up a short, steep ascent to a spot resembling the entrance to the earth burrow of some giant animal, and there the strange corpse was placed on the ground. A small group of people, including one old woman, was awaiting the funeral party. At the back end of the burrow two men tore away the earth and disclosed a small wall of loose

[1] A [illegible] consisting of the Secretary of the Interior for the Philippine Islands, Hon. Dean C. [illegible] governor and lieutenant-governor of Lepanto-Bontoc, William Dinwiddie and [illegible]unt, respectively; Captain Chas. Nathorst of the Constabulary, and the writer, [illegible] time to witness the procession and burial but not the previous ceremonies

stones. These they removed and revealed a vertical entrance in the earth about 2 feet high and 2½ feet wide. Through this small opening one of the men crawled, and crouching in the narrow sepulcher scraped up and threw out a few handfuls of earth. We were told that the corpse before us was the fifth to be placed in that old tomb, all being victims of the pueblo of Kambulo, and four of whom were descendants of the first man buried at that place—certainly "blood vengeance" with a vengeance.

We were without means of understanding the two or three simple oral ceremonies said over the body, but the woman played a part which it is understood she does not in the Bontoc area. She carried a slender, polished stick, greatly resembling a baton or "swagger stick," and with this stood over the gruesome body, thrusting the stick again and again toward and close to the severed neck, meanwhile repeating a short, low-voiced something. After the body was cut from its shield a blanket was wrapped about it—otherwise it was nude, save for a flayed-bark breechcloth—and it was set up in the cramped sepulcher facing Kambulo, and sitting supported away from the earth walls by four short wooden sticks placed upright about it. An old bamboo-headed spear was broken in the shaft and the two sections placed with the corpse.

The stones were again piled across the entrance, and when all was closed except the place for one small stone a man gave a few farewell thrusts through the opening with a stick, uttering at the same time a short low sentence or two. The final stone was placed and the earth heaped against the wall.

The pole to which the corpse was tied when borne to the burial was placed horizontally before the tomb, supported with both ends resting on the high side walls of the burrow, and on it were hung a dozen white-bark headbands which were worn, evidently, as a mark of mourning, by many of the men who attended the burial.

How long it would be, in a state of nature, before the tomb would be required for another burial is a matter of chance, but a relative, frequently a son, nephew, or brother of the dead man, would be expected to avenge the dead man on the pueblo of Kambulo, with chances in favor of success, but also with equal chances of ultimate loss of the warrior's head and burial where six kinsmen had preceded him.

CHAPTER VII

ÆSTHETIC LIFE

There is relatively little "color" in the life of the Bontoc Igorot. In the preceding chapter reference was made to the belief that this lack of "color," the monotony of everyday life, has to do with the continuation of head-hunting. The life of the Igorot is somber-hued indeed as compared with that of his more advanced neighbor, the Ilokano.

DRESS

The Bontoc Igorot is not much given to dress—under which term are considered the movable adornments of persons. Little effort is made by the man toward dressing the head, though before marriage he at times wears a sprig of flowers or of some green plant tucked in the hat at either side. The young man's suklang is also generally more attractive than that of the married man. With its side ornaments of human-hair tassels, its dog teeth, or mother-of-pearl disks, and its red and yellow colors, it is often very gay.

About one hundred and fifty men in Bontoc and Samoki own and sometimes wear at the girdle a large 7-inch disk of mother-of-pearl shell. It is called "fi-kûm′," and its use is purely ornamental. (See Pls. LXXX and XXX.) It is valued highly, and I have not known half a dozen Igorot to part with one for any price. This shell ornament is widespread through the country east and also south of the Bontoc area, but nowhere is it seen plentifully, except on ceremonial days—probably not a dozen are worn daily in Bontoc.

Other forms of adornment, though only a means to a permanent end, are the ear stretchers and variety of ear plugs which are worn in a slit in the ear lobe preparing it for the earring—the sĭng-sĭng, which all hope to possess. The stretcher consists of two short pieces of bamboo forced apart and so held by two short crosspieces inserted between them. The bamboo ear stretcher is generally ornamented by straight incised lines. The plugs are not all considered decorative. Some are bunches of a vegetable pith (Pl. CXXXVIII), others are wads of sugar-cane

leaves. Some, however, are wooden plugs shaped quite like an ordinary large cork stopper of a bottle (Pl. CXXXVII). The outer end is often ornamented by straight incised lines or with red seeds affixed with wax or with a small piece of a cheap glass mirror roughly inlaid. The long ear slit is not the end sought, because if the owner despairs of owning the coveted earring the stretchers and plugs are eventually removed and the slit contracts from an inch and one-half to a quarter of an inch or less in length. The long slit is desired because the people consider the effect more beautiful when the ring swings and dangles at the bottom of the pendant ear. The gold earring is the most coveted, but a few silver and many copper rings are worn in substitution for the gold.

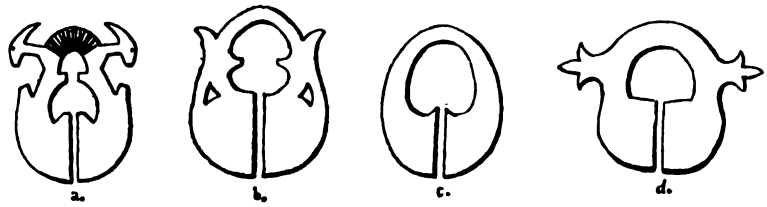


FIG. 8.—Metal earrings. (*a*, gold; *b*, copper (both are two or three generations old and their patterns are no longer made); *c*, copper; *d*, silver.)

This is practically the extent of the everyday adornment worn by the boys and men. Small boys sometimes wear a brass-wire bracelet; but the brass wire, so commonly worn on the wrists, ankles, and necks of the people east, north, and south of the Bontoc area, is not affected by the people of Bontoc.

As has been mentioned, there is an unique display of dress by the man at the head-taking ceremony of the ato, when some of the dancers wear boar-tusk armlets, called "ab-kil'," and a boar-tusk necklace, called "fu-yay'-ya."

The necklace quite resembles the Indian bear-claw necklace, but it is worn with the tusks pointing away from the breast, not toward it, as is the case with the Indian necklace. There are about six of these necklaces in Bontoc, and it is almost impossible to buy one, but the armlets are more plentiful. They are worn above the biceps, and some are adorned with a tuft of hair cut from a captured head.

The movable adornments of the woman are very similar to those of the man.

The unmarried woman wears the flowers or green sprigs in the hair, though less often than does the man. She wears the ear stretchers, ear plugs, and earrings exactly as he does. Probably 60 per cent of men and women in some way dress one ear; probably half as many dress both ears.

The chief adornment of the woman is her hairdress. It consists

of strings of various beads, called "a-pong'." The hair is never combed in its dressing, except with the fingers, but the entire hair is caught at the base of the skull and lightly twisted into a loose roll; a string of beads is put beneath this twist at the back and carried forward across the head. The roll is then brought to the front of the head around the left side; at the front it is tucked forward under the beads, being thus held tightly in place. The twist is carried around the head as far as it will extend, and the end there tucked under the beads and thus secured. One and not infrequently two additional strings of beads are laid over the hair, more completely holding it in place.

The first string of beads placed on the head usually consists of compact, glossy, black seeds. Frequently brass-wire rings are regularly dispersed along the string. These beads are shown in Pl. CXLII. The second string, with its white, lozenge-shaped stone beads (Pl. CXXXIX), is very striking and attractive against the black hair. This string reaches its perfection when it is composed solely of spherical agate beads the size of small marbles and the longer white stone beads placed at regular intervals among the reddish agates. It is practically impossible to purchase these beads, since they are heirlooms. The third string is usually of dog teeth. They are strung alternately with black seeds or with sections of dog rib. This string is worn over the hair, running from the forehead around the back of the head, the white teeth resting low on the back hair, and making a very attractive adornment as they stand, points out, against the black hair. (See Pl. CLII.)

Igorot women dress their hair richly in their important ceremonials. In an in-pug-pug' ceremony of Sipaat ato in Bontoc I saw women wearing seven strings of agate beads on their hair and about their necks. The woman loves to show her friends her accumulated wealth in heirlooms, and the ato or pueblo ceremonies are the most favorable opportunities for such display. All these various hairdress beads are of Igorot manufacture.

I have seen Tukukan women come to Bontoc wearing a solid diadem about the hair. It consisted of a rattan foundation encircling the head, covered with blackened beeswax studded with three parallel rows of encircling bright-red seeds. It made a very striking headdress.

Now and then a woman is seen wearing beads around the neck, but the Bontoc woman almost never has such adornment. They are seen frequently in pueblos to the west, however. The beads for everyday wear are seeds in black, brown, and gray. There is also a small, irregular, cylindrical, wooden bead worn by the women. It is sometimes worn in strings of three or four beads by men. I believe it is considered of talismanic value when so worn.

[illegible]men in Mayinit and some women of Bontoc wear the heir-[illegible]alled "a-ko'-san," made of shells and brass wire encircling [illegible](see Pl. CXL). The cloth is made in the form of a

long, narrow wallet, practically concealed at the back by the encircling wire and shells. Within this wallet the cherished agate and white stone hairdress is often hidden away. In Mayinit this girdle is frequently worn beneath the skirt, when it becomes, in every essential and in the effect produced, a bustle. I have never seen it so worn in Bontoc.

DECORATION

Under this head are classed all the forms of permanent adornment of the person.

First must be cited the cutting and stretching of the ear. Whereas the long, pendant earlobe is not the end in itself, nor is the long slit always permanent, yet the mutilation of the ear is permanent and desired. In a great many cases the lobe breaks, and the two, and even three, long strips of lobe hanging down seem to give their owner certain pride. Often the lower end of one of these strips is pierced and supports a ring. The sexes share alike in the preparation for and the wearing of earrings.

The woman has a permanent decoration of the nature of the "switch" of the civilized woman. The loose hair combed from the head with the fingers is saved, and is eventually rolled with the live hair of the head into long, twisted strings, some of which are an inch in diameter and three feet long; some women have more than a dozen of these twisted strings attached to the scalp. This is a common, though not universal, method of decorating the head, and the mass of lard-soaked, twisted hair stands out prominently around the crown, held more or less in place by the various bead hairdresses. (See Pls. CXLI and CXLII.)

TATTOO

The great permanent decoration of the Igorot is the tattoo. As has been stated in Chapter VI on "War and Head-Hunting," all the members—men, women, and children—of an ato may be tattooed whenever a head is taken by any person of the ato. It is claimed in Bontoc that at no other time is it possible for a person to be tattooed. But Tukukan tattooed some of her women in May, 1903, and this in spite of the fact that no heads had recently been taken there. However, the regulations of one pueblo are not necessarily those of another.

In every pueblo there are one or more men, called "bu-ma-fa'-tĕk," who understand the art of tattooing. There are two such in Bontoc—Toki, of Lowingan, and Finumti, of Longfoy—and each has practiced his art on the other. Finumti has his back and legs tattooed in an almost unique way. I have seen only one other at all tattooed on the back, and then the designs were simple. A large double scallop extends from the hip to the knee on the outside of each of Finumti's legs.

The design is drawn on the skin with ink made of soot and water.

Then the tattooer pricks the skin through the design. The instrument used for tattooing is called "cha-kay'-yum." It consists of from four to ten commercial steel needles inserted in a straight line in the end of a wooden handle; "cha-kay'-yum" is also the word for needle. After the pattern is pricked in, the soot is powdered over it and pressed in the openings; the tattooer prefers the soot gathered from the bottom of ollas.

The finished tattoo is a dull, blue black in color, sometimes having a greenish cast. A man in Tulubin has a tattoo across his throat which is distinctly green, while the remainder of his tattoo is the common blue black. The newly tattooed design stands out in whitish ridges, and these frequently fester and produce a mass of itching sores lasting about one month (see Pl. CXLVII).

The Igorot distinguishes three classes of tattoos: The chak-lag', the breast tattoo of the head taker; pong'-o, the tattoo on the arms of men and women; and fa'-tĕk, under which name all other tattoos of both sexes are classed. Fa'-tĕk is the general word for tattoo, and pong'-o is the name of woman's tattoo.

.It is general for boys under 10 years of age to be tattooed. Their first marks are usually a small, half-inch cross on either cheek or a line or small cross on the nose. One boy in Bontoc, just at the age of puberty, has a tattoo encircling the lower jaw and chin, a wavy line across the forehead, a straight line down the nose, and crosses on the cheeks; but he is the youngest person I have seen wearing the jaw tattoo—a mark quite commonly made in Bontoc when the chak-lag', or head-taker's emblem, is put on.

The chak-lag' is the most important tattoo of the Igorot, since it marks its wearer as a taker of at least one human head. It therefore stands for a successful issue in the most crucial test of the fitness of a person to contribute to the strength of the group of which he is a unit. It no doubt gives its wearer a certain advantage in combat—a confidence and conceit in his own ability, and, likely, it tends to unnerve a combatant who has not the same emblem and experience. No matter what the exact social importance or advantage may be, it seems that every man in Bontoc who has the right to the emblem shows his appreciation of the privilege, since nine-tenths of the men wear the chak-lag'. It consists of a series of geometric markings running upward from the breast near each nipple and curving out on each shoulder, where it ends on the upper arm. The accompanying plates (CXLIII to CXLIX) give an excellent idea of the nature and appearance of the Igorot tattoo—of course, reproductions in color would add to the effect. The distinctness of the markings in the photographs is about normal.

The basis of the designs is apparently geometric. If the straight-line designs originated in animal forms, they have now become so conventional that I have not discovered their original form.

The Bontoc woman is tattooed only on the arms. This tattoo begins close back of the knuckles on the back of the hands, and, as soon as it reaches the wrist, entirely encircles the arms to above the elbows. Still above this there is frequently a separate design on the outside of the arm; it is often the figure of a man with extended arms and sprawled legs.

The chak-lag' design on the man's breast is almost invariably supplemented by two or three sets of horizontal lines on the biceps immediately beneath the outer end of the main design. If the tattoo on the arms of the woman were transferred to the arms of the man, there would seldom be an overlapping—each would supplement the other. On the men the lines are longer and the patterns simpler than those of the women, where the lines are more cross-hatched and the design partakes of the nature of patch-work.

It was not discovered that any tattoo has a special meaning, except the head-taker's emblem; and the Igorot consistently maintains that all the others are put on simply at the whim of the wearer. The face markings, those on the arms, the stomach, and elsewhere on the body, are believed to be purely æsthetic. The people compare their tattoo with the figures of an American's shirt or coat, saying they both look pretty. Often a cross-hatched marking is put over goiter, varicose veins, and other permanent swellings or enlargements. Evidently they are believed to have some therapeutic virtue, but no statement could be obtained to substantiate this opinion.

As is shown by Pls. CXLVIII and CXLIX, the tattoo of both Banawi men and women seems to spring from a different form than does the Bontoc tattoo. It appears to be a leaf, or a fern frond, but I know nothing of its origin or meaning. There is much difference in details between the tattoos of culture areas, and even of pueblos. For instance, in Bontoc pueblo there is no tattoo on a man's hand, while in the pueblos near the south side of the area the hands are frequently marked on the backs. In Benguet there is a design popularly said to represent the sun, which is seen commonly on men's hands. Instances of such differences could be greatly multiplied here, but must be left for a more complete study of the Igorot tattoo.

MUSIC

INSTRUMENTAL MUSIC

The Bontoc Igorot has few musical instruments, and all are very simple. The most common is a gong, a flat metal drum about 1 foot in diameter and 2 inches deep. This drum is commonly said to be "brass," but analyses show it to be bronze.

Two gongs submitted to the Bureau of Government Laboratories, Manila, consisted, in one case, of approximately 80 per cent copper, 15

per cent tin, and 5 per cent zinc; in the other case of approximately 84 per cent copper, 15 per cent tin, 1 per cent zinc, and a trace of iron.

Early Chinese records read that tin was one of the Chinese imports into Manila in the thirteenth century. Copper was mined and wrought by the Igorot when the Spaniards came to the Philippines, and they wrote regarding it that it was then an old and established industry and art. It may possibly be that bronze was made in the Philippines before the arrival of the Spaniard, but there is no proof of such an hypothesis.

The gong to-day enters the Bontoc area in commerce generally from the north—from the Igorot or Tinguian of old Abra Province—and no one in the Provinces of Benguet or Lepanto-Bontoc seems to know its source. Throughout the Archipelago and southward in Borneo there are metal drums or "gongs" apparently of similar material but of varying styles. It is commonly claimed that those of the Moro are made on the Asiatic mainland. It is my opinion that the Bontoc gong, or gang'-sa, originates in China, though perhaps it is not now imported directly from there. It certainly does not enter the Island of Luzon at Manila, or Candon in Ilokos Sur, and, it is said, not at Vigan, also in Ilokos Sur.

In the Bontoc area there are two classes of gang'-sa; one is called ka'-los, and the other co-ong'-an. The co-ong'-an is frequently larger than the other, seems to be always of thicker metal, and has a more bell-like and usually higher-pitched tone. I measured several gang'-sa in Bontoc and Samoki, and find the co-ong'-an about 5 millimeters thick, 52 to 55 millimeters deep, and from 330 to 360 millimeters in diameter; the ka'-los is only about 2 to 3 millimeters thick. The Igorot distinguishes between the two very quickly, and prizes the co-ong'-an at about twice the value of the ka'-los. Either is worth a large price to-day in the central part of the area—or from one to two carabaos—but it is quite impossible to purchase them even at that price.

Gang'-sa music consists of two things—rhythm and crude harmony. Its rhythm is perfect, but though there is an appreciation of harmony as is seen in the recognition of, we may say, the "tenor" and "bass" tones of co-ong'-an and ka'-los, respectively, yet in the actual music the harmony is lost sight of by the American.

In Bontoc the gang'-sa is held vertically in the hand by a cord passing through two holes in the rim, and the cord usually has a human lower jaw attached to facilitate the grip. As the instrument thus hangs free in front of the player (always a man or boy) it is beaten on the outer surface with a short padded stick like a miniature bass-drum stick. There is no gang'-sa music without the accompaying dance, and there is no dance unaccompanied by music. A gang'-sa or a tin can put in the hands of an Igorot boy is always at once productive of music and dance.

The rhythm of Igorot gang'-sa music is different from most primitive music I have heard either in America or Luzon. The player beats 4/4 time, with the accent on the third beat. Though there may be twenty gang'-sa in the dance circle a mile distant, yet the regular pulse and beat of the third count is always the prominent feature of the sound. The music is rapid, there being from fifty-eight to sixty full 4/4 counts per minute.

It is impossible for me to represent Igorot music, instrumental or vocal, in any adequate manner, but I may convey a somewhat clearer impression of the rhythm if I attempt to represent it mathematically. It must be kept in mind that all the gang'-sa are beaten regularly and in perfect time—there is no such thing as half notes.

The gang'-sa is struck at each italicized count, and each unitalicized count represents a rest, the accent represents the accented beat of the gang'-sa. The ka'-los is usually beaten without accent and without rest. Its beats are *1, 2, 3, 4*; *1, 2, 3, 4*; *1, 2, 3, 4*; *1, 2, 3, 4*; etc. The co-ong'-an is usually beaten with both accent and rest. It is generally as follows: *1, 2, 3'*, 4; *1, 2, 3'*, 4; *1, 2, 3'*, 4; *1, 2, 3'*, 4; etc. Sometimes, however, only the first count and again the first and second counts are struck on the individual co-ong'-an, but there is no accent unless the third is struck. Thus it is sometimes as follows: *1*, 2, 3, 4; *1*, 2, 3, 4; *1*, 2, 3, 4; *1*, 2, 3, 4; etc.; and again *1, 2*, 3, 4; *1, 2*, 3, 4; *1, 2*, 3, 4; *1, 2*, 3, 4; *1, 2*, 3, 4; etc. However, the impression the hearer receives from a group of players is always of four rapid beats, the third one being distinctly accented. A considerable volume of sound is produced by the gang'-sa of the central part of the area; it may readily be heard a mile, if beaten in the open air.

In pueblos toward the western part of the area, as in Balili, Alap, and their neighbors, the instrument is played differently and the sound carries only a few rods. Sometimes the player sits in very un-Malayan manner, with legs stretched out before him, and places the gang'-sa bottom up on his lap. He beats it with the flat of both hands, producing the rhythmic pulse by a deadening or smothering of a beat. Again the gang'-sa is held in the air, usually as high as the face, and one or two soft beats, just a tinkle, of the 4/4 time are struck on the inside of the gang'-sa by a small, light stick. Now and then the player, after having thoroughly acquired the rhythm, clutches the instrument under his arm for a half minute while he continues his dance in perfect time and rhythm.

The lover's "jews'-harp," made both of bamboo and of brass, is found throughout the Bontoc area. It is played near to and in the olag wherein the sweetheart of the young man is at the time. The instrument, called in Bontoc "ab-a'-fü," is apparently primitive Malayan, and is found widespread in the south seas and Pacific Ocean.

The brass instrument, the only kind I ever saw in use except as a semitoy in the hands of small boys, is from 2 to 3 inches in length, and has a tongue, attached at one end, cut from the middle of the narrow strip of metal. (The Igorot make the ab-a′-fü of metal cartridges.) A cord is tied to the instrument at the end at which the tongue is attached, and this the player jerks to vibrate the tongue. The instrument is held at the mouth, is lightly clasped between the lips, and, as the tongue vibrates, the player breathes a low, soft tune through the instrument. One must needs get within 2 or 3 feet of the player to catch the music, but I must say after hearing three or four men play by the half hour, that they produce tunes the theme of which seems to me to bespeak a genuine musical taste.

I have seen a few crude bamboo flutes in the hands of young men, but none were able to play them. I believe they are of Ilokano introduction.

A long wooden drum, hollow and cannon-shaped, and often 3 feet and more long and about 8 inches in diameter, is common in Benguet, and is found in Lepanto, but is not found or known in Bontoc. A skin stretched over the large end of the drum is beaten with the flat of the hands to accompany the music of the metal drums or gang′-sa, also played with the flat of the hands, as described, in pueblos near the western border of Bontoc area.

VOCAL MUSIC

The Igorot has vocal music, but in no way can I describe it—to say nothing of writing it. I tried repeatedly to write the words of the songs, but failed even in that. The chief cause of failure is that the words must be sung—even the singers failed to repeat the songs word after word as they repeat the words of their ordinary speech. There are accents, rests, lengthened sounds, sounds suddenly cut short—in fact, all sorts of vocal gymnastics that clearly defeated any effort to "talk" the songs. I believe many of the songs are wordless; they are mere vocalizations—the "tra la la" of modern vocal music; they may be the first efforts to sing.

I was told repeatedly that there are four classes of songs, and only four. The mang-ay-u-wĕng′, the laborer's song, is sung in the field and trail. The mang-ay-yĕng′ is said to be the class of songs rendered at all ceremonies, though I believe the doleful funeral songs are of another class. The mang-ay-lu′-kay and the tĭng-ao′ I know nothing of except in name.

Most of the songs seem serious. I never heard a mother or other person singing to a babe. However, boys and young men, friends with locked arms or with arms over shoulders, often sing happy songs as they walk along together. They often sing in "parts," and the music

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXXVIII. "ANITO HEAD" POST IN A KO'-MĬS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXXIX. A WARRIOR'S ATTACK.

Photos by Jenks.

PLATE CXXX. BATTLE-AXES.

Photo by Martin.

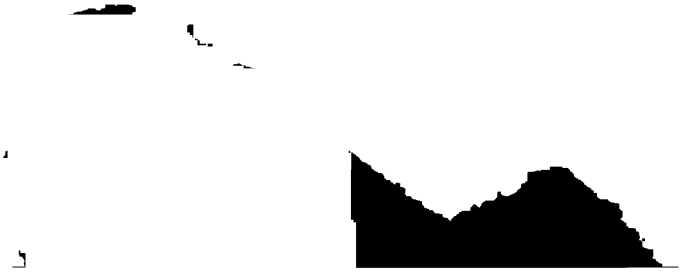
PLATE CXXXI. A HEAD DANCE.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXXXII. CEREMONIAL RICE THRESHING IN SAMOKI PUEBLO DURING THE CELEBRATION OF A CAPTURED HEAD.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXXXIII. A FA'-WI, WHERE SKULLS ARE KEPT.



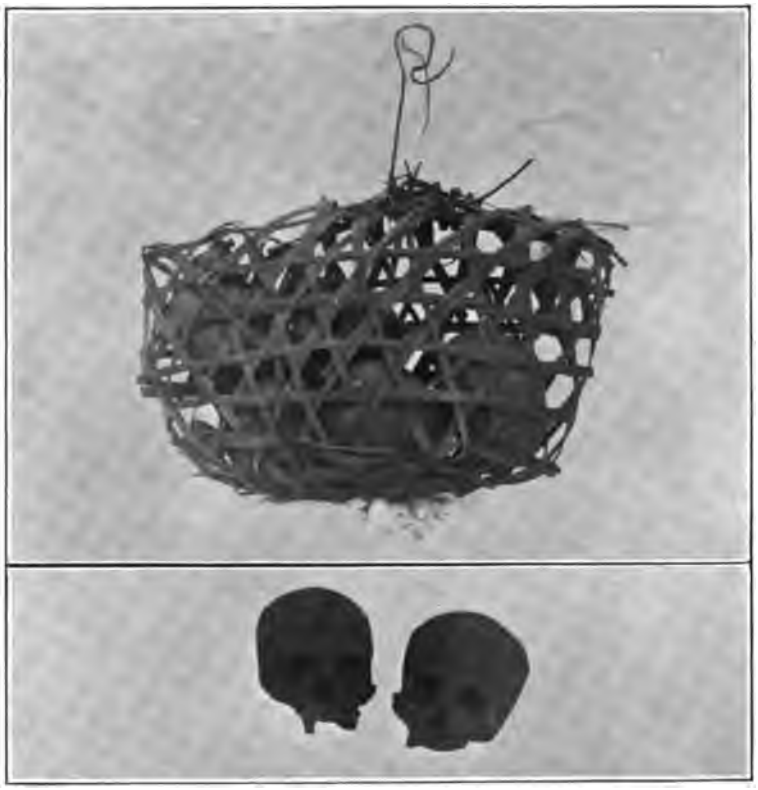


Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXXXIV. SOOT-BLACKENED HUMAN SKULLS FROM ATO SIGICHAN.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXXXV. A BEHEADED HUMAN BODY ON ITS WAY TO BURIAL.

produced by a tenor and a bass voice as they sing their parts in rhythm, and with very apparent appreciation of harmony, is fascinating and often very pleasing.

DANCING

The Bontoc Igorot dances in a circle, and he follows the circle contra-clockwise. There is no dancing without gang'-sa music, and it is seldom that a man dances unless he plays a gang'-sa. The dance step is slower than the beats on the gang'-sa; there is one complete "step" to every full 4/4 count. At times the "step" is simply a high-stepping slow run, really a springing prance. Again it is a hitching movement with both feet close to the earth, and one foot behind the other. The line of dancers, well shown in Pls. CXXXI, CLI, and CLII, passes slowly around the circle, now and again following the leader in a spiral movement toward the center of the circle and then uncoiling backward from the center to the path. Now and again the line moves rapidly for half the distance of the circumference, and then slowly backs a short distance, and again it all but stops while the men stoop forward and crouch stealthily along as though in ambush, creeping on an enemy. In all this dancing there is perfect rhythm in music and movements. There is no singing or even talking—the dance is a serious but pleasurable pastime for those participating.

As is shown also by the illustrations, the women dance. They throw their blankets about them and extend their arms, usually clutching tobacco leaves in either hand—which are offerings to the old men and which some old man frequently passes among them and collects—and they dance with less movement of the feet than do the men. Generally the toes scarcely leave the earth, though a few of the older women invariably dance with a high movement and backward pawing of one foot which throws the dust and gravel over all behind them. I have more than once seen the dance circle a cloud of dust raised by one pawing woman, and the people at the margin of the circle dodging the gravel thrown back, yet they only laughed and left the woman to pursue her peculiar and discomforting "step." The dancing women are generally immediately outside the circle, and from them the rhythm spreads to the spectators until a score of women are dancing on their toes where they stand among the onlookers, and little girls everywhere are imitating their mothers. The rhythmic music is fascinating, and one always feels out of place standing stiff legged in heavy, hobnailed shoes among the pulsating, rhythmic crowd. Now and again a woman dances between two men of the line, forcing her way to the center of the circle. She is usually more spectacular than those about the margin, and frequently holds in her hand her camote stick or a ball of bark-fiber thread which she has spun

for making skirts. I once saw such a dancer carry the long, heavy wooden pestle used in pounding out rice.

A few times I have seen men dance in the center of the circle somewhat as the women do, but with more movement, with a balancing and tilting of the body and especially of the arms, and with rapid trembling and quivering of the hands. The most spectacular dance is that of the man who dances in the circle brandishing a head-ax. He is shown in Pls. CLII and CLIII. At all times his movements are in perfect sympathy and rhythm with the music. He crouches around between the dancers brandishing his ax, he deftly all but cuts off a hand here, an arm or leg there, an ear yonder. He suddenly rushes forward and grinningly feigns cutting off a man's head. He contorts himself in a ludicrous yet often fiendish manner. This dance represents the height of the dramatic as I have seen it in Igorot life. His is truly a mimetic dance. His colleague with the spear and shield, who sometimes dances on the outskirts of the circle, now charging a dancer and again retreating, also produces a true mimetic and dramatic spectacle. This is somewhat more than can be said of the dance of the women with the camote sticks, pestles, and spun thread. The women in no way "act"—they simply purposely present the implements or products of their labors, though in it all we see the real beginning of dramatic art.

Other areas, and other pueblos also, have different dances. In the Benguet area the musicians sit on the earth and play the gang'-sa and wooden drum while the dancers, a man and woman, pass back and forth before them. Each dances independently, though the woman follows the man. He is spectacular with from one to half a dozen blankets swinging from his shoulders, arms, and hands.

Captain Chas. Nathorst, of Cervantes, has told me of a dance in Lepanto, believed by him to be a funeral dance, in which men stand abreast in a long line with arms on each other's shoulders. In this position they drone and sway and occasionally paw the air with one foot. There is little movement, and what there is is sluggish and lifeless.

GAMES

Cockfighting is the Philippine sport. Almost everywhere the natives of the Archipelago have cockfights and horse races on holidays and Sundays. They are also greatly addicted to the sport of gambling. The Bontoc Igorot has none of the common pastimes or games of chance. This fact is remarkable, because the modern Malayan is such a gamester.

Only in toil, war, and numerous ceremonials does the Bontoc man work off his superfluous and emotional energy. One might naturally [illegible] to find Jack a dull boy, but he is not. His daily round of toil [illegible] sufficient to keep the steady accumulation of energy at a [illegible] his head-hunting offers him the greatest game of [illegible] primitive man has invented.

The ta'-ko, the soul of the living man, is a faithful servant of man, and, though accustomed to leave the body at times, it brings to the person the knowledge of the unseen spirit life in which the Igorot constantly lives. In other words, the people, especially the old men, dream dreams and see visions, and these form the meshes of the net which has caught here and there stray or apparently related facts from which the Igorot constructs much of his belief in spirit life.

The immediate surroundings of every Igorot group is the home of the a-ni'-to of departed members of the group, though they do not usually live in the pueblo itself. Their dwellings, sementeras, pigs, chickens, and carabaos—in fact, all the possessions the living had—are scattered about in spirit form, in the neighboring mountains. There the great hosts of the a-ni'-to live, and there they reproduce, in spirit form, the life of the living. They construct and live in dwellings, build and cultivate sementeras, marry, and even bear children; and eventually, some of them, at least, die or change their forms again. The Igorot do not say how long an a-ni'-to lives, and they have not tried to answer the question of the final disposition of a-ni'-to, but in various ceremonials a-ni'-to of several generations of ancestors are invited to the family feast, so the Igorot does not believe that the a-ni'-to ceases, as an a-ni'-to, in what would be the lifetime of a person.

When an a-ni'-to dies or changes its form it may become a snake—and the Igorot never kills a snake, except it bothers about his dwelling; or it may become a rock—there is one such a-ni'-to rock on the mountain horizon north of Bontoc; but the most common form for a dead a-ni'-to to take is li'-fa, the phosphorescent glow in the dead wood of the mountains. Why or how these various changes occur the Igorot does not understand.

In many respects the dreamer has seen the a-ni'to world in great detail. He has seen that a-ni'-to are rich or poor, old or young, as were the persons at death, and yet there is progression, such as birth, marriage, old age, and death. Each man seems to know in what part of the mountains his a-ni'-to will dwell, because some one of his ancestors is known to inhabit a particular place, and where one ancestor is there the children go to be with him. This does not refer to desirability of location, but simply to physical location—as in the mountain north of Bontoc, or in one to the east or south.

As was stated in a previous chapter, with the one exception of toothache, all injuries, diseases, and deaths are caused directly by a-ni'-to. In certain ceremonies the ancestral a-ni'-to are urged to care for living descendants, to protect them from a-ni'-to that seek to harm—and children are named after their dead ancestors, so they may be known and receive protection. In the pueblo, the sementeras, and the mountains one knows he is always surrounded by a-ni'-to. They are ever ready to trip one up, to push him off the high stone sementera dikes,

A common sight in the Igorot pueblo or in the trails leading out is a man or woman, more frequently the latter, carrying the small chicken basket, the tube of basi, and the short stick, going to the river or the mountains to perform this ceremony for the sick.

After either of these ceremonies the person returns to the dwelling, kills, cooks, and, with other members of the family, eats the chicken.

For those very ill and apparently about to die there is another ceremony, called "a′-fat," and it never fails in its object, they affirm—the afflicted always recovers. Property equal to a full year's wages is taken outside the pueblo to the spot where the affliction was received, if it is known, and the departing soul is invited to return in exchange for the articles displayed. They take a large hog which is killed where the ceremony is performed; they take also a large blue-figured blanket—the finest blanket that comes to the pueblo—a battle-ax and spear, a large pot of "preserved" meat, the much-prized woman's bustle-like girdle, and, last, a live chicken. When the hog is killed the person in charge of the ceremony says: "Come back, soul of the afflicted, in trade for these things."

All then return to the sick person's dwelling, taking with them the possessions just offered to the soul. At the house they cook the hog, and all eat of it; as those who assisted in the ceremony go to their own dwellings they carry each a dish of the cooked pork.

The next day, since the afflicted person does not die, they have another ceremony, called "mang-mang," in the house of the sick. A chicken is killed, and the following ceremonial is spoken from the center of the house:

"The sick person is now well. May the food become abundant; may the chickens, pigs, and rice fruit heads be large. Bring the battle-ax to guard the door. Bring the winnowing tray to serve the food; and bring the wisp of palay straw to sweep away the many words spoken near us."

For certain sick persons no ceremony is given for recovery. They are those who are stricken with death, and the Igorot claims to know a fatal affliction when it comes.

LUMAWIG, THE SUPREME BEING

The Igorot has personified the forces of nature. The personification has become a single person, and to-day this person is one god, Lu-ma′-wĭg. Over all, and eternal, so far as the Igorot understands, is Lu-ma′-wĭg—Lu-ma′-wĭg, who had a part in the beginning of all things; who came as a man to help the survivors and perpetuators of Bontoc; who later came as a man to teach the people whom he had befriended, and who still lives to care for them. Lu-ma′-wĭg is the greatest of spirits, dwelling above in chayya, the sky. All prayers for fruitage and increase—of men, of animals, and of crops—all prayers for deliverance

from the fierce forces of the physical world are made to him; and once each month the pa'-tay ceremony, entreating Lu-ma'-wĭg for fruitage and health, is performed for the pueblo group by an hereditary class of men called "pa'-tay—a priesthood in process of development. Throughout the Bontoc culture area Lu-ma'-wĭg, otherwise known but less frequently spoken of as Fu'-ni and Kam-bun'-yan, is the supreme being. Scheerer says the Benguet Igorot call their "god" Ka-bu-ni'-an—the same road as Kam-bun'-yan.

In the beginning of all things Lu-ma'-wĭg had a part. The Igorot does not know how or why it is so, but he says that Lu-ma'-wĭg gave the earth with all its characteristics, the water in its various manifestations, the people, all animals, and all vegetation. To-day he is the force in all these things, as he always has been.

Once, in the early days, the lower lands about Bontoc were covered with water. Lu-ma'-wĭg saw two young people on top of Mount Po'-kis, north of Bontoc. They were Fa-tang'-a and his sister Fu'-kan. They were without fire, as all the fires of Bontoc were put out by the water. Lu-ma'-wĭg told them to wait while he went quickly to Mount Ka-lo-wi'-tan, south of Bontoc, for fire. When he returned Fu'-kan was heavy with child. Lu-ma'-wĭg left them, going above as a bird flies. Soon the child was born, the water subsided in Bontoc pueblo, and Fa-tang'-a with his sister and her babe returned to the pueblo. Children came to the household rapidly and in great numbers. Generation followed generation, and the people increased wonderfully.

After a time Lu-ma'-wĭg decided to come to help and teach the Igorot. He first stopped on Ka-lo-wi'-tan Mountain, and from there looked over the young women of Sabangan, searching for a desirable wife, but he was not pleased with the girls of Sabangan because they had short hair. He next visited Alap, but the young women of that pueblo were sickly; so he came on to Tulubín. There the marriageable girls were afflicted with goiter. He next stopped at Bontoc, where he saw two young women, sisters, in a garden. Lu-ma'-wĭg came to them and sat down. Presently he asked why they did not go to the house. They answered that they must work; they were gathering beans. Lu-ma'-wĭg was pleased with this, so he picked one bean of each variety, tossed them into the baskets—when presently the baskets were filled to the rim. He married Fu'-kan, the younger of the two industrious sisters, and namesake of the mother of the people of Bontoc.

After marriage he lived at Chao'-wi, in the present ato of Sigichan, near the center of Bontoc pueblo. The large, flat stones which were once part of Lu-ma'-wĭg's dwelling are still lying in position, and are shown in Pl. CLIII.

Lu-ma'-wĭg at times exhibited his marvelous powers. They say he could take a small chicken, feed it a few grains of rice, and in an

hour it would be full grown. He could fill a basket with rice in a very few moments, simply by putting in a handful of kernels. He could cut a stick of wood in the mountains, and with one hand toss it to his dwelling in the pueblo. Once when out in I-shil′ Mountains northeast of Bontoc, Fa-tang′-a, the brother-in-law of Lu-ma′-wĭg, said to him, "Oh, you of no value! Here we are without water to drink. Why do you not give us water?" Lu-ma′-wĭg said nothing, but he turned and thrust his spear in the side of the mountain. As he withdrew the weapon a small stream of water issued from the opening. Fa-tang′-a started to drink, but Lu-ma′-wĭg said, "Wait; the others first; you last." When it came Fa-tang′-a's turn to drink, Lu-ma′-wĭg put his hand on him as he drank and pushed him solidly into the mountain. He became a rock, and the water passed through him. Several of the old men of Bontoc have seen this rock, now broken by others fallen on it from above, but the stream of water still flows on the thirsty mountain.

In an isolated garden, called "fĭl-lang′," now in ato Chakong, Lu-ma′-wĭg taught Bontoc how best to plant, cultivate, and garner her various agricultural products. Fĭl-lang′ to-day is a unique little sementera. It is the only garden spot within the pueblo containing water. The pueblo is so situated that irrigating water can not be run into it, but throughout the dry season of 1903—the dryest for years in Bontoc—there was water in at least a fourth of this little garden. There is evidently a very small but perpetual spring within the plat. Taro now occupies the garden and is weeded and gathered by Na-wĭt′, an old man chosen by the old men of the pueblo for this office. Na-wĭt′ maintains and the Igorot believe that the vegetable springs up without planting. As the watering of fĭl-lang′ is through the special dispensation of Lu-ma′-wĭg, so the taro left by him in his garden school received from him a peculiar lease of life—it is perpetual. The people claim that all other taro beds must be planted annually.

Lu-ma′-wĭg showed the people how to build the fawi and pabafunan, and with his help those of Lowingan and Sipaat were constructed. He also told them their purposes and uses. He gave the people names for many of the things about them; he also gave the pueblo its name.

He gave them advice regarding conduct—a crude code of ethics. He told them not to lie, because good men do not care to associate with liars. He said they should not steal, but all people should take care to live good and honest lives. A man should have only one wife; if he had more, his life would soon be required of him. The home should be kept pure; the adulterer should not violate it; all should be as brothers.

As has been previously said, the people of Bontoc claim that they did not go to war or kill before Lu-ma′-wĭg came.

They say no Igorot ever divorced a wife who bore him a child, yet they accuse Lu-ma′-wĭg of such conduct, but apparently seek to excuse the act by saying that at the time he was partially insane. Fu′-kan, Lu-ma′-wĭg's wife, bore him several children. One day she spoke very disrespectfully to him. This change of attitude on her part somewhat unbalanced him, and he put her with two of her little boys in a large coffin, and set them afloat on the river. He securely fastened the cover of the coffin, and on either end tied a dog and a cock. The coffin floated downstream unobserved as far as Tinglayan. There the barking of the dog and the crowing of the cock attracted the attention of a man who rushed out into the river with his ax to secure such a fine lot of pitch-pine wood. When he struck his ax in the wood a voice called from within, "Don't do that; I am here." Then the man opened the coffin and saw the woman and children. The man said his wife was dead, and the woman asked whether he wanted her for a wife. He said he did, so she became his wife.

After a time the children wanted to return to Bontoc to see their father. Before they started their mother instructed them to follow the main river, but when they arrived at the mouth of a tributary stream they became confused, and followed the river leading them to Kanyu. There they asked for their father, but the people killed them and cut them up. Presently they were alive again, and larger than before. They killed them again and again. After they had come to life seven times they were full-grown men; but the eighth time Kanyu killed them they remained dead. Bontoc went for their bodies, and told Kanyu that, because they killed the children of Lu-ma′-wĭg, their children would always be dying—and to-day Bontoc points to the fewness of the houses which make up Kanyu. The bodies were buried close to Bontoc on the west and northwest; scarcely were they interred when trees began to grow upon and about the graves—they were the transformed bodies of Lu-ma′-wĭg's children. The Igorot never cut trees in the two small groves nearby the pueblo, but once a year they gather the fallen branches. They say that a Spaniard once started to cut one of the trees, but he had struck only a few blows when he was suddenly taken sick. His bowels bloated and swelled and he died in a few minutes.

These two groves are called "Pa-pa-tay′" and "Pa-pa-tay′ ad So-kok′," the latter one shown in Pl. CLIV. Each is said to be a man, but among some of the old men the one farthest to the north is now said to be a woman. The reason they assign for now calling one a woman is because it is situated lower down on the mountain than the other. They are held sacred, and the monthly religious ceremonial of patay is observed beneath their trees.

It seems that Lu-ma'-wĭg soon became irritated and jealous, because Fu'-kan was the wife of another man, and he sent word forbidding her to leave her house. About this time the warriors of Tingiayan returned from a head-hunting expedition. When Fu'-kan heard their gongs and knew all the pueblo was dancing, she danced alone in the house. Soon those outside felt the ground trembling. They looked and saw that the house where Fu'-kan lived was trembling and swaying. The women hastened to unfortunate Fu'-kan and brought her out of the house. However, in coming out she had disobeyed Lu-ma'-wĭg, and shortly she died.

Lu-ma'-wĭg's work was ended. He took three of his children with him to Mount Po'-kĭs, on the northern horizon of Bontoc, and from there the four passed above into the sky as birds fly. His two other children wished to accompany him, but he denied them the request; and so they left Bontoc and journeyed westward to Loko (Ilokos Provinces) because, they said, if they remained, they would die. What became of these two children is not known; neither is it known whether those who went above are alive now; but Lu-ma'-wĭg is still alive in the sky and is still the friendly god of the Igorot, and is the force in all the things with which he originally had to do.

Throughout the Bontoc culture area Lu-ma'-wĭg is the one and only god of the people. Many said that he lived in Bontoc, and, so far as known, they hold the main facts of the belief in him substantially as do the people of his own pueblo.

"CHANGERS" IN RELIGION

In the western pueblos of Alap, Balili, Genugan, Takong, and Sagada there has been spreading for the past two years a changing faith. The people allying themselves with the new faith call themselves "Su-pa-la'-do," and those who speak Spanish say they are "guardia de honor."

The Su-pa-la'-do continue to eat meat, but wash and cleanse it thoroughly before cooking. They are said also not to hold any of the ceremonials associated with the old faith. They keep a white flag flying from a pole near their dwelling, or at least one such flag in the section of the pueblo in which they reside. They also believe that Lu-ma'-wĭg will return to them in the near future.

A Tinguian man of the pueblo of Pay-yao', Lepanto, a short journey from Agawa, in Bontoc, is said to be the leading spirit in this faith of the "guardia de honor." It is believed to be a movement taking its rise from the restless Roman Catholic Ilokano of the coast.

In Bontoc pueblo the thought of the return of Lu-ma'-wĭg is laughed at. The people say that if Lu-ma'-wĭg was to return they would know of it. However, two families in Bontoc, one that of Finumti, the tattooer,

and the other that of Kayyad, a neighbor of Finumti, have a touch of a changing faith. They are known in Bontoc as O-lot'.

I was not able to trace any connection between the O-lot' and the Su-pa-la'-do, though I presume there is some connection; but I learned of the O-lot' only during the last few days of my stay in Bontoc. The O-lot' are said not to eat meat, not to kill chickens, not to smoke, and not to perform any of the old ceremonies. However, I do not believe they or in fact the Su-pa-la'-do neglect all ceremonials, because such a turning from a direct, positive, and very active religious life to one of total neglect of the old religious ceremonials would seem to be impossible for an otherwise normal Igorot.

PRIESTHOOD

That the belief in spirits is the basis of Igorot religion is shown in the fact that each person or each household has the necessary power and knowledge to intercede with the anito. No class of persons has been differentiated for this function, excepting the limited one of the dream-appointed insupak or anito exorcists.

That belief in a supreme being is a later development than the belief in spirits is clear when the fact is known that a differentiated class of persons has arisen whose duty it is to intercede with Lumawig for the people as a whole.

This religious intercessor has few of the earmarks of a priest. He teaches no morals or ethics, no idea of future rewards or punishments, and he is not an idle, nonproductive member of the group. He usually receives for the consumption of his family the food employed in the ceremonies to Lumawig, but this would not sustain the family one week in the fifty-two. The term "priesthood" is applied to these people for lack of a better one, and because its use is sufficiently accurate to serve the present purpose.

There are three classes of persons who stand between the people and Lumawig, and to-day all hold an hereditary office. The first class is called "Wa-kü'," of which there are three men, namely, Fug-ku-so', of ato Somowan, Fang-u-wa', of ato Lowingan, and Cho-lûg', of ato Sigichan. The function of these men is to decide and announce the time of all rest days and ceremonials for the pueblo. These Wa-kü' inform the old men of each ato, and they in turn announce the days to the ato. The small boys, however, are the true "criers." They make more noise in the evening before the rest day, crying "Tĕng-ao'! whi! tĕng-ao'!" ("Rest day! hurrah! rest day!"), than I have heard from the pueblo at any other time.

The title of the second class of intercessors is "Pa'-tay," of whom there are two in Bontoc—Kad-lo'-san, of ato Somowan, and Fi'-lûg, of ato Longfoy.

Fı
her
ret a
gon
hou
and
The
the
and
Lu
him
there
childr
and
Provin
became
those
the sky
in all
Throu
god of
known,
do the p

In the
there has
The peop
"Su-pa-la'-
honor."
The Su-p
thoroughly
ceremonials
from a pole
of the pueblo
will return to
A Tinguian
from Agawa, in
the "guardia de
from the restless
In Bontoc pue
at. The people
it. However, two

SACRED DA

... the rest da
... days throu
... regularity in
... Lowingan and Sipaat
... observed by the
... announced in th
... person goes to labor in the field
... the announcement, or in disrega
... the Sabbath." The old men of
... disobeyed the pueblo law by working
... the names to the old men of Lowinga
... from the lawbreaker firewood or rice
... about 10 cents, or the wage of two d

Bontoc, and I saw ten persons fined for working. The fines are ended in buying chickens and pigs for the pa′-tay ceremonies of the blo.

CEREMONIALS

residence of five months among a primitive people about whom no ntific knowledge existed previously is evidently so scant for a study eremonial life that no explanation should be necessary here. How- . I wish to say that no claim is made that the following short ntation is complete—in fact, I know of several ceremonies by about which I can not speak at all with certainty. Time was insufficient to get accurate translations of all ceremonial utterances h are here presented.

ere is great absence of formalism in uttering ceremonies, scarcely ersons speak exactly the same words, though I believe the purport ch ceremony, as uttered by two people, to be the same. This ess may be due in part to the absence of a developed cult having eremonies in charge from generation to generation.

CEREMONIES CONNECTED WITH AGRICULTURE

POCHANG

s ceremony is performed at the close of the period Pa-chog′, the when rice seed is put in the germinating beds.

is claimed there is no special oral ceremony for Po-chang′. roceeding is as follows: On the first day after the completion period Pa-chog′ the regular monthly Pa′-tay ceremony is held. second day the men of ato Sigichan, in which ato Lumawig when he lived in Bontoc, prepare a bunch of runo as large around an's thigh. They call this the "cha-nûg′," and store it away to fawi, and outside the fawi set up in the earth twenty or more alled "pa-chi′-pad—the pûd-i-pûd′ of the harvest field.

bunch of runo is for a constant reminder to Lumawig to make ng rice stalks grow large. The pa-chi′-pad are to prevent from other pueblos entering the fawi and thus seeing the us bundle of runo.

g the ceremony of Lĭs-lĭs, at the close of the annual harvest y, both the cha-nûg′ and the pa-chi′-pad are destroyed by

CHAKA

ebruary 10, 1903, the rice having been practically all trans- in Bontoc, was begun the first of a five-day general ceremony dant and good fruitage of the season's palay. It was at the the period I-na-na′.

remony of the first day is called "Su-yâk′." Each group of

kin—all descendants of one man or woman who has no living ascendants—kills a large hog and makes a feast. This day is said to be passed without oral ceremony.

The ceremony of the second day was a double one. The first was called "Wa-lĭt'" and the second "Mang'-mang." From about 9.30 until 11 in the forenoon a person from each family—usually a woman—passed slowly up the steep mountain side immediately west of Bontoc. These people went singly and in groups of two to four, following trails to points on the mountain's crest. Each woman carried a small earthen pot in which was a piece of pork covered with basi. Each also carried a chicken in an open-work basket, while tucked into the basket was a round stick about 14 inches long and half an inch in diameter. This stick, "lo'-lo," is kept in the family from generation to generation.

When the crest of the mountain was reached, each person in turn voiced an invitation to her departed ancestors to come to the Mang'-mang feast. She placed her olla of basi and pork over a tiny fire, kindled by the first pilgrim to the mountain in the morning and fed by each arrival. Then she took the chicken from her basket and faced the west, pointing before her with the chicken in one hand and the lo'-lo in the other. There she stood, a solitary figure, performing her sacred mission alone. Those preceding her were slowly descending the hot mountain side in groups as they came; those to follow her were awaiting their turn at a distance beneath a shady tree. The fire beside her sent up its thin line of smoke, bearing through the quiet air the fragrance of the basi.

The woman invited the ancestral anito to the feast, saying:

"A-ni'-to ad Lo'-ko, su-ma-a-kay'-yo ta-in-mang-mang'-ta-ko ta-ka-ka'-nĕn si mu'-tĕg." Then she faced the north and addressed the spirit of her ancestors there: "A-ni'-to ad La'-god, su-ma-a-kay'-yo ta-in-mang-mang'-ta-ko ta-ka-ka'-nĕn si mu'-tĕg." She faced the east, gazing over the forested mountain ranges, and called to the spirts of the past generation there: "A-ni'-to ad Bar'-lĭg su-ma-a-kay'-yo ta-in-mang-mang'-ta-ko ta-ka-ka-nĕn si mu-tĕg."

As she brought her sacred objects back down the mountain another woman stood alone by the little fire on the crest.

The returning pilgrim now puts her fowl and her basi olla inside her dwelling, and likely sits in the open air awaiting her husband as he prepares the feast. Outside, directly in front of his door, he builds a fire and sets a cooking olla over it. Then he takes the chicken from its basket, and at his hands it meets a slow and cruel death. It is held by the feet and the hackle feathers, and the wings unfold and droop spreading. While sitting in his doorway holding the fowl in this position the man beats the thin-fleshed bones of the wings with a short, heavy stick as large around as a spear handle. The fowl cries with each of the first dozen blows laid on, but the blows continue until

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXXXVI. BURIAL OF A BEHEADED MAN IN BANAWI.

Photos by Martin.

PLATE CXXXVII. MAN'S HEADDRESS.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXXXVIII. AN EAR PLUG OF SUGAR-CANE LEAVES.

Photos by Martin.

PLATE CXXXIX. BEAD HEADDRESS.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXL. WOMAN'S BUSTLE-LIKE GIRDLE.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXLI. IGOROT WOMAN, SHOWING ROLLS OF HAIR.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXLII. THE "SWITCH" HELD IN PLACE BY BEADS.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXLIII. A TATTOOED BONTOC MAN.

each wing has received fully half a hundred. The injured bird is then laid on its back on a stone, while its head and neck stretch out on the hard surface. Again the stick falls, cruelly, regularly, this time on the neck. Up and down its length it is pummeled, and as many as a hundred blows fall—fall after the cries cease, after the eyes close and open and close again a dozen times, and after the bird is dead. The head receives a few sharp blows, a jet of blood spurts out, and the ceremonial killing is past. The man, still sitting on his haunches, still clasping the feet of the pendent bird, moves over beside his fire, faces his dwelling, and voices the only words of this strangely cruel scene. His eyes are open, his head unbending, and he gazes before him as he earnestly asks a blessing on the people, their pigs, chickens, and crops.

The old men say it is bad to cut off a chicken's head—it is like taking a human head, and, besides, they say that the pummeling makes the flesh on the bony wings and neck larger and more abundant—so all fowls killed are beaten to death.

After the oral part of the ceremony the fowl is held in the flames till all its feathers are burned off. It is cut up and cooked in the olla before the door of the dwelling, and the entire family eats of it.

Each family has the Mang'-mang ceremony, and so also has each broken household if it possesses a sementera—though a lone woman calls in a man, who alone may perform the rite connected with the ceremonial killing, and who must cook the fowl. A lone man needs no woman assistant.

Though the ancestral anito are religiously bidden to the feast, the people eat it all, no part being sacrificed for these invisible guests. Even the small olla of basi is drunk by the man at the beginning of the meal.

The rite of the third day is called "Mang-a-pu'-i." The sementeras of growing palay are visited, and an abundant fruitage asked for. Early in the morning some member of each household goes to the mountains to get small sprigs of a plant named "pa-lo'-ki." Even as early as 7.30 the pa-lo'-ki had been brought to many of the houses, and the people were scattering along the different trails leading to the most distant sementeras. If the family owned many scattered fields, the day was well spent before all were visited.

Men, women, and boys went to the bright-green fields of young palay, each carrying the basket belonging to his sex. In the basket were the sprigs of pa-lo'-ki, a small olla of water, a small wooden dish or a basket of cooked rice, and a bamboo tube of basi or tapui. Many persons had also several small pieces of pork and a chicken. As they passed out of the pueblo each carried a tightly bound club-like torch of burning palay straw; this would smolder slowly for hours.

On the stone dike of each sementera the owner paused to place three small stones to hold the olla. The bundle of smoldering straw was picked open till the breeze fanned a blaze; dry sticks or reeds quickly made a small, smoking fire under the olla, in which was put the pork or the chicken, if food was to be eaten there. Frequently, too, if the smoke was low, a piece of the pork was put on a stick punched into the soil of the sementera beside the fire and the smoke enwrapped the meat and passed on over the growing field.

As soon as all was arranged at the fire a small amount of basi was poured over a sprig of pa-lo'-ki which was stuck in the soil of the sementera, or one or two sprigs were inserted, drooping, in a split in a tall, green runo, and this was pushed into the soil. While the person stood beside the efficacious pa-lo'-ki an invocation was voiced to Lumawig to bless the crop.

The olla and piece of pork were at once put in the basket, and the journey conscientiously continued to the next sementera. Only when food was eaten at the sementera was the halt prolonged.

A-sĭg-ka-cho' is the name of the function of the fourth day. On that day each household owning sementeras has a fish feast.

At that season of the year (February), while the water is low in the river, only the very small, sluggish fish, called "kacho," is commonly caught at Bontoc. Between 200 and 300 pounds of those fish, only one in a hundred of which exceeded 2½ inches in length, were taken from the river during the three hours in the afternoon when the ceremonial fishing was in progress.

Two large scoops, one shown in Pl. XLIX, were used to catch the fish. They were a quarter of a mile apart in the river, and were operated independently.

At the house the fish were cooked and eaten as is described in the section on "Meals and mealtime."

When this fish meal was past the last observance of the fourth day of the Cha'-ka ceremonial was ended.

The rite of the last day is called "Pa'-tay." It is observed by two old Pa'-tay priests. Exactly at high noon Kad-lo'-san left his ato carrying a chicken and a smoldering palay-straw roll in his hand, and the unique basket, tak-fa', on his shoulder. He went unaccompanied and apparently unnoticed to the small grove of trees, called "Pa-pa-tay' ad So-kok'." Under the trees is a space some 8 or 10 feet across, paved with flat rocks, and here the man squatted and put down his basket. From it he took a two-quart olla containing water, a small bowl of cooked rice, a bottle of native cane sugar, and a

He kindled a blaze under the olla in a fireplace of three
up. Then followed the ceremonial killing of the
in the Mang'-mang rite of the second day. With

the scarcely dead fowl held before him the man earnestly addressed a short supplication to Lumawig.

The fowl was then turned over and around in the flame until all its feathers were burned off. Its crop was torn out with the fingers. The ax was struck blade up solid in the ground, and the legs of the chicken cut off from the body by drawing them over the sharp ax blade, and they were put at once into the pot. An incision was cut on each side of the neck, and the body torn quickly and neatly open, with the wings still attached to the breast part. A glad exclamation broke from the man when he saw that the gall of the fowl was dark green. The intestines were then removed, ripped into a long string, and laid in the basket. The back part of the fowl, with liver, heart, and gizzard attached, went into the now boiling pot, and the breast section followed it promptly. Three or four minutes after the bowl of rice was placed immediately in front of the man, and the breast part of the chicken laid in the bowl on the rice. Then followed these words: "Now the gall is good, we shall live in the pueblo invulnerable to disease."

The breast was again put in the pot, and as the basket was packed up in preparation for departure the anito of ancestors were invited to a feast of chicken and rice in order that the ceremony might be blessed.

At the completion of this supplication the Pa'-tay shouldered his basket and hastened homeward by a different route from which he came.

If a chicken is used in this rite it is cooked in the dwelling of the priest and is eaten by the family. If a pig is used the old men of the priest's ato consume it with him.

The performance of the rite of this last day is a critical half hour for the town. If the gall of the fowl is white or whitish the palay fruitage will be more or less of a failure. The crop last year was such—a whitish gall gave the warning. If a crow flies cawing over the path of the Pa'-tay as he returns to his dwelling, or if the dogs bark at him, many people will die in Bontoc. Three years ago a man was killed by a falling bowlder shortly after noon on this last day's ceremonial—a flying crow had foretold the disaster. If an eagle flies over the path, many houses will burn. Two years ago an eagle warned the people, and in the middle of the day fifty or more houses burned in Bontoc in the three ato of Pokisan, Luwakan, and Ungkan.

If none of these calamities are foretold, the anito enemies of Bontoc are not revengeful, and the pueblo rests in contentment.

SUWAT

This ceremony, performed by Som-kad' of ato Sipaat, occurs in the first period of the year, I-na-na'. The usual pig or chicken is killed, and the priest says: "In-fi-kûs'-na ay pa-kü' to-mo-no'-ka ad chay'-ya." This is: "Fruit of the palay, grow up tall, even to the sky."

KEENG

Ke′-ĕng ceremony is for the protection of the palay. Ong-i-yud′, of ato Fatayyan, is the priest for this occasion, and the ceremony occurs when the first fruit heads appear on the growing rice. They claim two good-sized hogs are killed on this day. Then Ong-i-yud′ takes a ki′-lao, the bird-shaped bird scarer, from the pueblo and stealthily ducks along to the sementera where he suddenly erects the scarer. Then he says:

U-mi-chang′-ka Sĭk-a
Ti-lĭn′ ĭn kad La′-god yad Ap′-lay
Sĭk′-a o′-tot in lo-ko-lo′-ka nan fü-i′-mo.

Freely translated, this is—

Ti-lĭn′ [the rice bird], you go away into the north
country and the south country
You, rat, you go into your hole.

TOTOLOD

This ceremony, tot-o-lod′, occurs on the day following ke′-ĕng, and it is also for the protection of the rice crop. Ong-i-yud′ is the priest for both ceremonies.

The usual hog is killed, and then the priest ties up a bundle of palay straw the size of his arm, and walks to the south side of the pueblo "as though stalking deer in the tall grass." He suddenly and boldly throws the bundle southward, suggesting that the birds and rats follow in the same direction, and that all go together quickly.

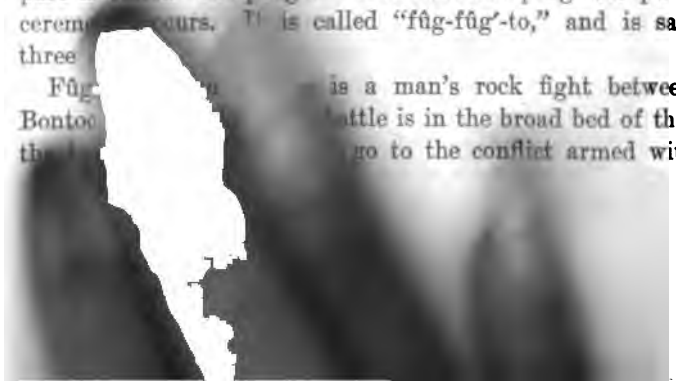
SAFOSAB

This ceremony is recorded in the chapter on "Agriculture" in the section on "Harvesting," page 103. It is simply referred to here in the place where it would logically appear if it were not so intimately connected with the harvesting that it could not be omitted in presenting that phase of agriculture.

LISLIS

At the close of the rice harvest, at the beginning of the season Li′-pas, the lĭs-lĭs ceremony is widely celebrated in the Bontoc area. It consists, in Bontoc pueblo, of two parts. Each family cooks a chicken in the fireplace on the second floor of the dwelling. This part is called "cha-pĕng′." After the cha-pĕng′ the public part of the ceremony occurs. It is called "fûg-fûg′-to," and is said to continue three

Fûg- is a man's rock fight between the men of Bontoc ttle is in the broad bed of the river between th go to the conflict armed with war shields,



and they pelt each other with rocks as seriously as in actual war. There is a man now in Bontoc whose leg was broken in the conflict of 1901, and three of our four Igorot servant boys had scalp wounds received in lĭs-lĭs rock conflicts.

A river cuts in two the pueblo of Alap, and that pueblo is said to celebrate the harvest by a rock fight similar to that of Bontoc and Samoki.

It is said by Igorot that the Sadanga lĭs-lĭs is a conflict with runo (or reed) spears, which are warded off with the war shields.

It is claimed that in Sagada the public part of the ceremony consists of a mud fight in the sementeras, mud being thrown by each contending party.

LOSKOD

This ceremony occurs once each year at the time of planting camotes, in the period of Ba-li′-lĭng.

Som-kad′ of ato Sigichan is the pueblo "priest" who performs the los-kod′ ceremony. He kills a chicken or pig, and then petitions Lumawig as follows: "Lo-mos-kod′-kay to-ki′." This means, "May there be so many camotes that the ground will crack and burst open."

OKIAD

Som-kad′ of ato Sigichan performs the o-ki-ad′ ceremony once each year during the time of planting the black beans, or ba-la′-tong, also in the period of Ba-li′-lĭng.

The petition addressed to Lumawig is said after a pig or chicken has been ceremonially killed; it runs as follows: "Ma-o′-yĕd si ba-la′-tong, Ma-o′-yĕd si fu′-tug, Ma-o′-yĕd nan i-pu-kao′." A free translation is, "May the beans grow rapidly; may the pigs grow rapidly; and may the people [the children] grow rapidly."

KOPUS

Ko′-pus is the name given the three days of rest at the close of the period of Ba-li′-lĭng. They say there is no special ceremony for ko′-pus, but some time during the three days the pa′-tay ceremony is performed.

CEREMONIES CONNECTED WITH CLIMATE

FAKIL

The Fa-kĭl′ ceremony for rain occurs four times each year, on four succeeding days, and is performed by four different priests. The ceremony is simple. There is the usual ceremonial pig killing by the priest, and each night preceding the ceremony all the people cry: "I-tĕng′-ao ta-ko nan fa-kĭl′." This is only an exclamation, meaning, "Rest day! We observe the ceremony for rain!" I was informed that the priest has no separate oral petition or ceremony, though it is probable that he has.

KALOB

Once or twice each year, or maybe once in two years, in January or February, a cold, driving rain pours itself on Bontoc from the north. It often continues for two or three days, and is a miserable storm to be out in.

If this storm continues three or four days, Le-yod′, of ato Lowingan, performs the following ceremony in his dwelling: "Ma-kĭs-kĭs′-kay li-fo′-o min-chi-kang′-ka ay fat-a′-wa ta-a′-yu nan fa′-ki lo-lo′-ta." A very free translation of this is as follows: "You fogs, rise up rolling. Let us have good weather in all the world! All the people are very poor."

Following this ceremony Le-yod′ goes to Chao′-wi, the site of Lumawig's former dwelling in the pueblo, shown in Pl. CLIII, and there he builds a large fire. It is claimed the fierce storm always ceases shortly after the ka-lob′ is performed.

CHINAMWI

Ang′-way of ato Somowan performs the chi-nam′-wi ceremony once or twice each year during the cold and fog of the period Sama, when the people are standing in the water-filled sementeras turning the soil; frequently working entirely naked.

Many times I have seen the people shake—arms, legs, jaw, and body—during those cold days, and admit that I was touched by the ceremony when I saw it.

A hog is killed and each household gives Ang′-way a manojo of palay. He pleads to Lumawig: "Tum-ke′-ka ay li-fo′-o ta-a-ye′-o nan in sa-ma′-mi." This prayer is: "No more cold and fog! Pity those working in the sementera!"

CEREMONIES CONNECTED WITH HEAD TAKING[1]

KAFOKAB

Ka-fo′-kab is the name of a ceremony performed as soon as a party of successful head-hunters returns home. The old man in charge at the fawi says: "Cha-kay′-yo fo′-so-mi ma-pay-ĭng′-an. Cha-kay′-mi ĭn-kĕd-se′-ka-mi nan ka-nĭn′-mi to-kom-ke′-ka." This is an exultant boast—it is the crow of the winning cock. It runs as follows: "You, our enemies, we will always kill you! We are strong; the food we eat makes us strong!"

CHANGTU

T[illegible]uliar [illegible]mony, called "chang′-tü," performed now and then [illegible]ll omen bird, visits the pueblo.

T[illegible]fore each dwelling and each pabafunan in

[illegible]my father's head?" Chapter IX, p 225.

the pueblo. A chicken is killed, and usually both pork and chicken are eaten. The man performing the Chang'-tü says:

Sĭk'-a tan-ang'-a sĭk'-a lu'-fûb ad Sa-dang'-a nan ay-yam' Sĭk'-a ta-lo'-lo ad La'-god nan ay-yam' Sĭk'-a ta-lo'-lo ye'-mod La'-god nan fa-no wat'-mo yad Ap'-lay."

This speech is a petition running as follows:

"You, the anito of a person beheaded by Bontoc, and you, the anito of a person who died in a dwelling, you all go to the pueblo of Sadanga [that is, you destructive spirits, do not visit Bontoc; but we suggest that you carry your mischief to the pueblo of Sadanga, an enemy of ours]. You, the anito of a Bontoc person beheaded by some other pueblo, you go into the north country, and you, the anito of a Bontoc person beheaded by some other pueblo, you carry the palay-straw torch into the north country and the south country [that is, friendly anito, once our fellow-citizens, burn the dwellings of our enemies both north and south of us].

In this petition the purpose of the Chang'-tü is clearly defined. The faithful i'-chu has warned the pueblo that an anito, perhaps an enemy, perhaps a former friend, threatens the pueblo; and the people seek to avert the calamity by making feasts—every dwelling preparing a feast. Each household then calls the names of the classes of malignant anito which destroy life and property, and suggests to them that they spend their fury elsewhere.

CEREMONY CONNECTED WITH ATO

Young men sometimes change their membership from one a'-to to another. It is said that old men never do. There is a ceremony of adoption into a new a'-to when a change is made; it is called "pu-ke'" or "pal-ûg-pĕg'." At the time of the ceremony a feast is made, and some old man welcomes the new member as follows:

If you die first, you must look out for us, since we wish to live long [that is, your spirit must protect us against destructive spirits], do not let other pueblos take our heads. If you do not take this care, your spirit will find no food when it comes to the a'-to, because the a'-to will be empty—we will all be dead.

b

pe
li-f
very
Let u
Fol
wig's
builds
after th

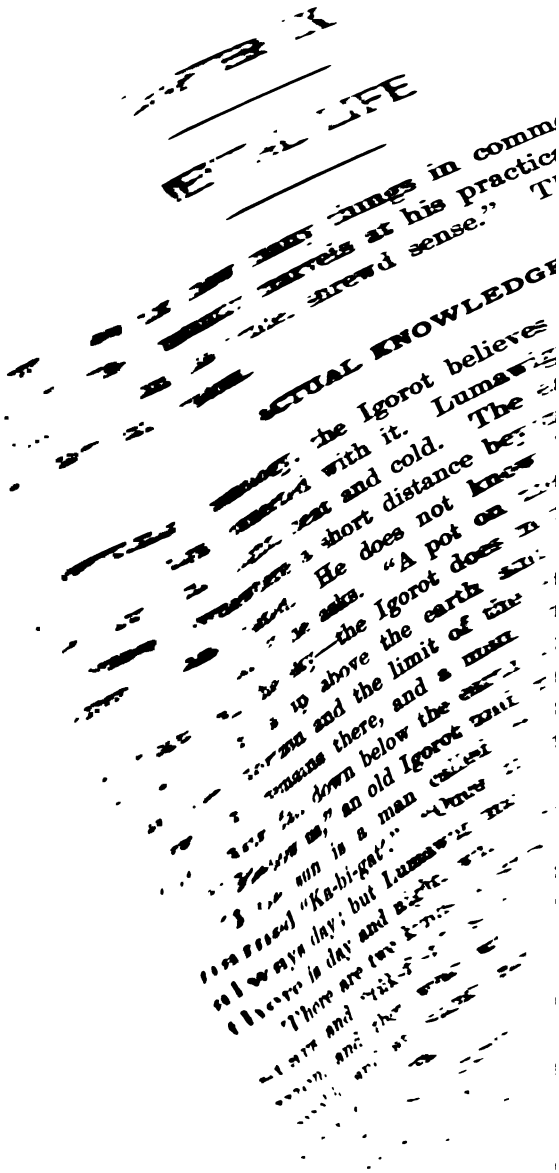
Ang'-wa
or twice e
the people
frequently w
Many tim
body—during
ceremony whe
A hog is kill
He pleads to
sa-ma'-mi." Th
working in the s

CEREM

Ka-fo'-kab is the
of successful head-hu
the fawi says: "Cha
ĭn-kĕd-se'-ka-mi nan
boast—it is the crow o
our enemies, we will alw
makes us strong!"

There is a peculiar cere
then when i'-chu, the sma
This ceremony is held be

[1] See also the story, "Wh



they are smoke. "At night Lumawig has the li-fo'-o come down to the river and get water. Before morning they have carried up a great deal of water; and then they let it come down as rain."

Earthquakes are caused by Lumawig. He places both hands on the edge of the earth and quickly pushes it back and forth. They do not know why he does it.

Regarding man himself the Igorot knows little. He says Lumawig gave man and all man's functionings. He does not know the functioning of blood, brain, stomach, or any other of the primary organs of the body. He says the bladder of men and animals is for holding the water they drink. He knows that a man begets his child and that a woman's breasts are for supplying the infant food, but these two functionings are practically all the facts he knows or even thinks he knows about his body.

MENSURATION

Under this title are considered all forms of measurement used by the Igorot.

NUMBERS

The most common method of enumerating is that of the finger count. The usual method is to count the fingers, beginning with the little finger of the right hand, in succession touching each finger with the forefinger of the other hand. The count of the thumb, li'-ma," five, is one of the words for hand. The sixth count begins with the little finger of the left hand, and the tenth reaches the thumb. The eleventh count begins with the little finger of the right hand again, and so the count continues. The Igorot system is evidently decimal. One man, however, invariably recorded his eleventh count on his toes, from which he returned to the little finger of his right hand for the twenty-first count.

A common method of enumerating is one in which the record is kept with small pebbles placed together one after another on the ground.

Another method in frequent use preserves the record in the number of sections of a slender twig which is bent or broken half across for each count.

When an Igorot works for an American he records each day by a notch in a small stick. A very neat record for the month was made by one of our servants who prepared a three-sided stick less than 2 inches long. Day by day he cut notches in this stick, ten on each edge.

When a record is wanted for a long time—as when one man loans another money for a year or more—he ties a knot in a string for each peso loaned.

The Igorot subtracts by addition. He counts forward in the total of fingers or pebbles the number he wishes to subtract, and then he again counts the remainder forward.

LINEAL MEASURE

The distance between the tips of the thumb and middle finger extended and opposed is the shortest linear measure used by the Igorot, although he may measure by eye with more detail and exactness, as when he notes half the above distance. This span measure is called "chang'-an" or "i'-sa chang'-an," "chu'-wa chang'-an," etc.

Chi-pa' is the measure between the tips of the two middle fingers when the arms are extended full length in opposite directions. Chi-wan' si chi-pa' is half the above measure, or from the tip of the middle finger of one hand, arm extended from side of body, to the sternum.

These three measures are most used in handling timbers and boards in the construction of buildings.

Cloth for breechcloths is measured by the length of the forearm, being wound about the elbow and through the hand, quite as one coils up a rope.

Long distances in the mountains or on the trail are measured by the length of time necessary to walk them, and the length of time is told by pointing to the place of the sun in the heavens at the hour of departure and arrival.

Rice sementeras are measured by the number of cargoes of palay they produce. Besides this relatively exact measure, sementeras producing up to five cargoes are called "small," pay-yo' ay fa-nig'; and those producing more than five are said to be "large," pay-yo' chûk-chûk'-wag.

MEASUREMENT OF ANIMALS

The idea of the size of a carabao, and at the same time a crude estimate of its age and value, is conveyed by representing on the arm the length of the animal's horns.

The size of a hog and, as with the carabao, an estimate of its value is shown by representing the size of the girth of the animal by clasping the hands around one's leg. For instance, a small pig is represented by the size of the speaker's ankle, as he clasps both hands around it; a larger one is the size of his calf; a still larger one is the size of a man's thigh; and one still larger is represented by the thigh and calf together, the calf being bent tightly against the upper leg. To represent a still larger hog, the two hands circle the calf and thigh, but at some distance from them.

The Bontoc Igorot has no system of liquid or dry measure, nor has he any system of weight.

THE CALENDAR

Igorot has no mechanical record of time or events, save as he cuts notches in a stick to mark the flight of days. He is also capable of fixing the name of ancestors, holding them for

half a dozen generations, but he keeps no record of age, and has no adequate conception of such a period as twenty years. He has no conception of a cycle of time greater than one year, and, in fact, it is the rare man who thinks in terms of a year. When one does he speaks of the past year as tĭn-mo-wĭn′, or i-san′ pa-na′-ma.

Prominent Igorot have insisted that a year has only eight moons, and other equally sane and respected men say it has one hundred. But among the old men, who are the wisdom of the people, there are those who know and say it has thirteen moons.

They have noted and named eight phases of the moon, namely: The one-quarter waxing moon, called "fĭs-ka′-na;" the two-quarters waxing moon, "ma-no′-wa," or "ma-lang′-ad;" the three-quarters waxing moon, "kat-no-wa′-na" or "nap-no′;" the full moon, "fĭt-fi-tay′-ĕg;" the three-quarters waning moon, "ka-tol-pa-ka′-na" or "ma-tĭl-pa′-kan;" the two-quarters waning moon, "ki-sul-fi-ka′-na;" the one-quarter waning moon, sĭg-na′-a-na" or "ka-fa-ni-ka′-na;" and the period following the last, when there is but a faint rim of light, is called "li′-mĕng" or "ma-a-mas′."

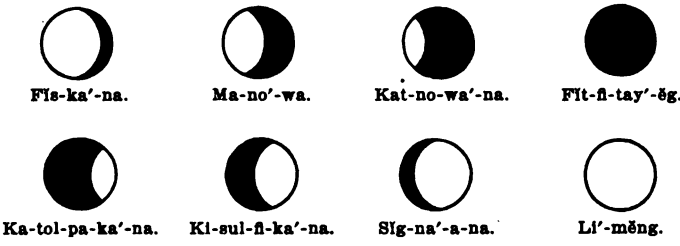


FIG. 9.—Recognized phases of the moon.

However, the Igorot do seldom count time by the phases of the moon, and the only solar period of time they know is that of the day. Their word for day is the same as for sun, a-qu′. They indicate the time of day by pointing to the sky, indicating the position the sun occupied when a particular event occurred.

There are two seasons in a year. One is Cha-kon′, having five moons, and the other is Ka-sĭp′, having eight moons. The seasons do not mark the wet and dry periods, as might be expected in a country having such periods. Cha-kon′ is the season of rice or "palay" growth and harvest, and Ka-sĭp′ is the remainder of the year. These two seasons, and the recognition that there are thirteen moons in one year, and that day follows night, are the only natural divisions of time in the Igorot calendar.

He has made an artificial calendar differing somewhat in all pueblos in name and number and length of periods. In all these calendars the several periods bear the names of the characteristic industrial occupations which follow one another successively each year. Eight of these

periods make up the calendar of Bontoc pueblo, and seven of them have to do with the rice industry. Each period receives its name from that industry which characterizes its beginning, and it retains this name until the beginning of the next period, although the industry which characterized it may have ceased some time before.

I-na-na′ is the first period of the year, and the first period of the season Cha-kon′. It is the period, as they say, of no more work in the rice sementeras—that is, practically all fields are prepared and transplanted. It began in 1903 on February 11. It lasts about three months, continuing until the time of the first harvest of the rice or "palay" crop in May; in 1903 this was until May 2. This period is not a period of "no work"—it has many and varied labors.

The second period is La′-tûb. It is that of the first harvests, and lasts some four weeks, ending about June 1.

Cho′-ok is the third period. It is the time when the bulk of the palay is harvested. It occupies about four weeks, running over in 1903 two days in July.

Li′-pas is the fourth period. It is that of "no more palay harvest," and lasts for about ten or fifteen days, ending probably about July 15. This is the last period of the season Cha-kon′.

The fifth period is Ba-li′-lĭng. It is the first period of the season Ka-sĭp′. It takes its name from the general planting of camotes, and is the only one of the calendar periods not named from the rice industry. It continues about six weeks, or until near the 1st of September.

Sa-gan-ma′ is the sixth period. It is the time when the sementeras to be used as seed beds for rice are put in condition, the earth being turned three different times. It lasts about two months. November 15, 1902, the seed rice was just peeping from the kernels in the beds of Bontoc and Sagada, and the seed is sown immediately after the third turning of the earth, which thus ended early in November.

Pa-chog′ is the seventh period of the annual calendar. It is the period of seed sowing, and begins about November 10. Although the seed sowing does not last many days, the period Pa-chog′ continues five or six weeks.

Sa′-ma is the last period of the calendar. It is the period in which the rice sementeras are prepared for receiving the young plants and in which these seedlings are transplanted from the seed beds. The last Sa′-ma was near seven weeks' duration. It began about December 20, 1903, and ended February 10, 1903. Sa′-ma is the last period of the season Ka-sĭp′, and the last of the year.

The Igorot often says that a certain thing occurred in La′-tub, or will occur in Ba-li′-lĭng, so these periods of the calendar are held in mind as the civilized man thinks of events in time as occurring in some particular month.

The Igorot have a tradition that formerly the moon was also a sun, and at that time it was always day. Lumawig told the moon to be "moon," and then there was night. Such a change was necessary, they say, so the people would know when to work—that is, when was the right time, the right moon, to take up a particular kind of labor.

FOLK TALES

The paucity of the pure mental life of the Igorot is nowhere more clearly shown than in the scarcity of folk tales.

I group here seven tales which are quite commonly known among the people of Bontoc. The second, third, fourth, and fifth are frequently related by the parents to their children, and I heard all of them the first time from boys about a dozen years old. I believe these tales are nearly all the pure fiction the Igorot has created and perpetuated from generation to generation, except the Lumawig stories.

The Igorot story-tellers, with one or two exceptions, present the bare facts in a colorless and lifeless manner. I have, therefore, taken the liberty of adding slightly to the tales by giving them some local coloring, but I have neither added to nor detracted from the facts related.

THE SUN MAN AND MOON WOMAN; OR, ORIGIN OF HEAD-HUNTING

The Moon, a woman called "Ka-bi-gat'," was one day making a large copper cooking pot. The copper was soft and plastic like potter's clay. Ka-bi-gat' held the heavy sagging pot on her knees and leaned the hardened rim against her naked breasts. As she squatted there—turning, patting, shaping, the huge vessel—a son of the man Chal-chal,' the Sun, came to watch her. This is what he saw: The Moon dipped her paddle, called "pĭp-i'," in the water, and rubbed it dripping over a smooth, rounded stone, an agate with ribbons of colors wound about in it. Then she stretched one long arm inside the pot as far as she could. "Tub, tub, tub," said the ribbons of colors as Ka-bi-gat' pounded up against the molten copper with the stone in her extended hand. "Slip, slip, slip, slip," quickly answered pĭp-i', because the Moon was spanking back the many little rounded domes which the stone bulged forth on the outer surface of the vessel. Thus the huge bowl grew larger, more symmetrical, and smooth.

Suddenly the Moon looked up and saw the boy intently watching the swelling pot and the rapid playing of the paddle. Instantly the Moon struck him, cutting off his head.

Chal-chal' was not there. He did not see it, but he knew Ka-bi-gat' cut off his son's head by striking with her pĭp-i'.

He hastened to the spot, picked the lad up, and put his head where it belonged—and the boy was alive.

Then the Sun said to the Moon:

"See, because you cut off my son's head, the people of the Earth are cutting off each other's heads, and will do so hereafter."

"And it is so," the story-tellers continue; "they do cut off each other's heads."

ORIGIN OF COLING, THE SERPENT EAGLE [1]

A man and woman had two boys. Every day the mother sent them into the mountains for wood to cook her food. Each morning as she sent them out she complained about the last wood they brought home.

One day they brought tree limbs; the mother complained, saying:

"This wood is bad. It smokes so much that I can not see, and soon I shall be blind." And then she added, as was her custom:

"If you do not work well, you can have only food for dogs and pigs."

That day, as usual, the boys had in their topil for dinner only boiled camote vines, such as the hogs eat, and a small allowance of rice, just as much as a dog is fed. At night the boys brought some very good wood—wood of the pitch-pine tree. In the morning the mother complained that such wood blackened the house. She gave them pig food in their topil, saying:

"Pig food is good enough for you because you do not work well."

That night each boy brought in a large bundle of runo. The mother was angry, and scolded, saying:

"This is not good wood; it leaves too many ashes and it dirties the house."

In the morning she gave them dog food for dinner, and the boys again went away to the mountains. They were now very thin and poor because they had no meat to eat. By and by the older one said:

"You wait here while I climb up this tree and cut off some branches." So he climbed the tree, and presently called down:

"Here is some wood"—and the bones of an arm dropped to the ground.

"Oh, oh," exclaimed the younger brother, "it is your arm!"

Again the older boy called, "Here is some more wood"—and the bones of his other arm fell at the foot of the tree.

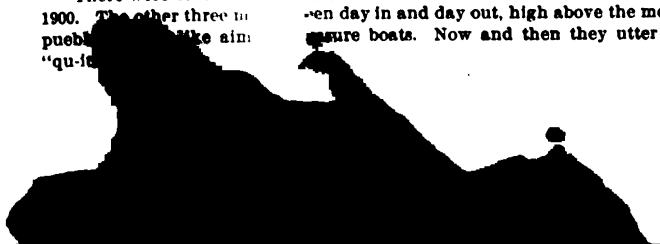
Again he called, and the bones of a leg dropped; then his other leg fell. The next time he called, down came the right half of his ribs; and then, next, the left half of his ribs; and immediately thereafter his spinal column. Then he called again, and down fell his hair.

The last time he called, "Here is some wood," his skull dropped on the earth under the tree.

---

[1] The bird called "co-ling'" by the Bontoc Igorot is the serpent eagle (*Spilornis holospilus* Vigors). It seems to be found in no section of Bontoc Province except near Bontoc pueblo.

There were four of [illegible]urge, tireless creatures near the pueblo, but an American shot one in 1900. The other three [illegible]-en day in and day out, high above the mountain range west of the pueblo [illegible]ke aim[illegible]sure boats. Now and then they utter their penetrating cry of "qu-i[illegible]



"Here, take those things home," said he. "Tell the woman that this is her wood; she only wanted my bones."

"But there is no one to go with me down the mountains," said the younger boy.

"Yes; I will go with you, brother," quickly came the answer from the tree top.

So the boy tied up his bundle, and, putting it on his shoulder, started for the pueblo. As he did so the other—he was now Co-lĭng'—soared from the tree top, always flying directly above the boy.

When the younger brother reached home he put his bundle down, and said to the woman:

"Here is the wood you wanted."

The woman and the husband, frightened, ran out of the house; they heard something in the air above them.

"Qu-iu'-kok! qu-iu'-kok! qu-iu'-kok!" said Co-lĭng', as he circled around and around above the house. "Qu-iu'-kok! qu-iu'-kok!" he screamed, "now camotes and palay are your son. I do not need your food any longer."

ORIGIN OF TILIN, THE RICEBIRD[1]

As the mother was pounding out rice to cook for supper, her little girl said:

"Give me some mo'-tĭng to eat."

"No," answered the mother, "mo'-tĭng is not good to eat; wait until it is cooked."

"No, I want to eat mo'-tĭng," said the little girl, and for a long time she kept asking her mother for raw rice.

At last her mother interrupted, "It is bad to talk so much."

The rice was then all pounded out. The mother winnowed it clean, and put it in her basket, covering it up with the winnowing tray. She placed an empty olla on her head and went to the spring for water.

The anxious little girl reached quickly for the basket to get some rice, but the tray slipped from her grasp and fell, covering her beneath it in the basket.

The mother returned with the water to cook supper. She heard a bird crying, "King! king! nik! nik! nik!" When the woman uncovered the basket, Tilin, the little brown ricebird, flew away, calling:

"Good-bye, mother; good-bye, mother; you would not give me mo'-tĭng!"

ORIGIN OF KAAG, THE MONKEY

The palay was in the milk and maturing rapidly. Many kinds of birds that knew how delicious juicy palay is were on hand to get their share, so the boys were sent to stay all day in the sementeras to frighten these little robbers away.

---

[1] *Munia jagori* (Martens).

Every day a father sent out his two boys to watch his palay in a narrow gash in the mountain; and every day they carried their small basket full of cooked rice, white and delicious, but their mother put no meat in the basket.

Finally one of the boys said:

"It is bad not to have meat to eat; every day we have only rice."

"Yes, it is bad," said his brother. "We can not keep fat without meat; we are getting poor and thin, and pretty soon we shall die."

"That is true," answered the other boy; "pretty soon we shall die. I believe I shall be ka'-ag."

And during the day thick hair came on this boy's arms; and then he became hairy all over; and then it was so—he was ka'-ag, and he vanished in the mountains.

Then soon the other boy was ka'-ag, too. At night he went home and told the father:

"Your boy is ka'-ag; he is in the mountains."

The boy ran out of the house quickly. The father went to the mountains to get his boy, but ka'-ag ran up a tall tree; at the foot of the tree was a pile of bones. The father called his son, and ka'-ag came down the tree, and, as the father went toward him, ka'-ag stood up clawing and striking at the man with his hands, and breathing a rough throat cry like this:

"Haa! haa! haa!"

Then the man ran home crying, and he never got his boys.

Pretty soon there was a-sa'-wan nan ka'-ag[1] with a babe. Then there were many little children; and then, pretty soon, the mountains were full of monkeys.

ORIGIN OF GAYYANG, THE CROW, AND FANIAS, THE LARGE LIZARD

There were two young men who were the very greatest of friends.

One tattooed the other beautifully. He tattooed his arms and his legs, his breast and his belly, and also his back and face. He marked him beautifully all over, and he rubbed soot from the bottom of an olla into the marks, and he was then very beautiful.

When the tattooer finished his work he turned to his friend, and said: "Now you tattoo me beautifully, too."

So the young men scraped together a great pile of black, greasy soot from pitch-pine wood; and before the other knew what the tattooed one was doing he rubbed soot over him from finger tip to finger tip. Then the black one asked:

"Why do you tattoo me so badly?"

Without waiting for an answer they began a terrible combat. When,

[1] "A wife monkey."

Photos by Worcester.

PLATE CXLIV. TWO WELL-DONE TATTOOS. (ONE MAN BEARS THE JAW BAND AND THE OTHER THE CHEEK CROSSES.)

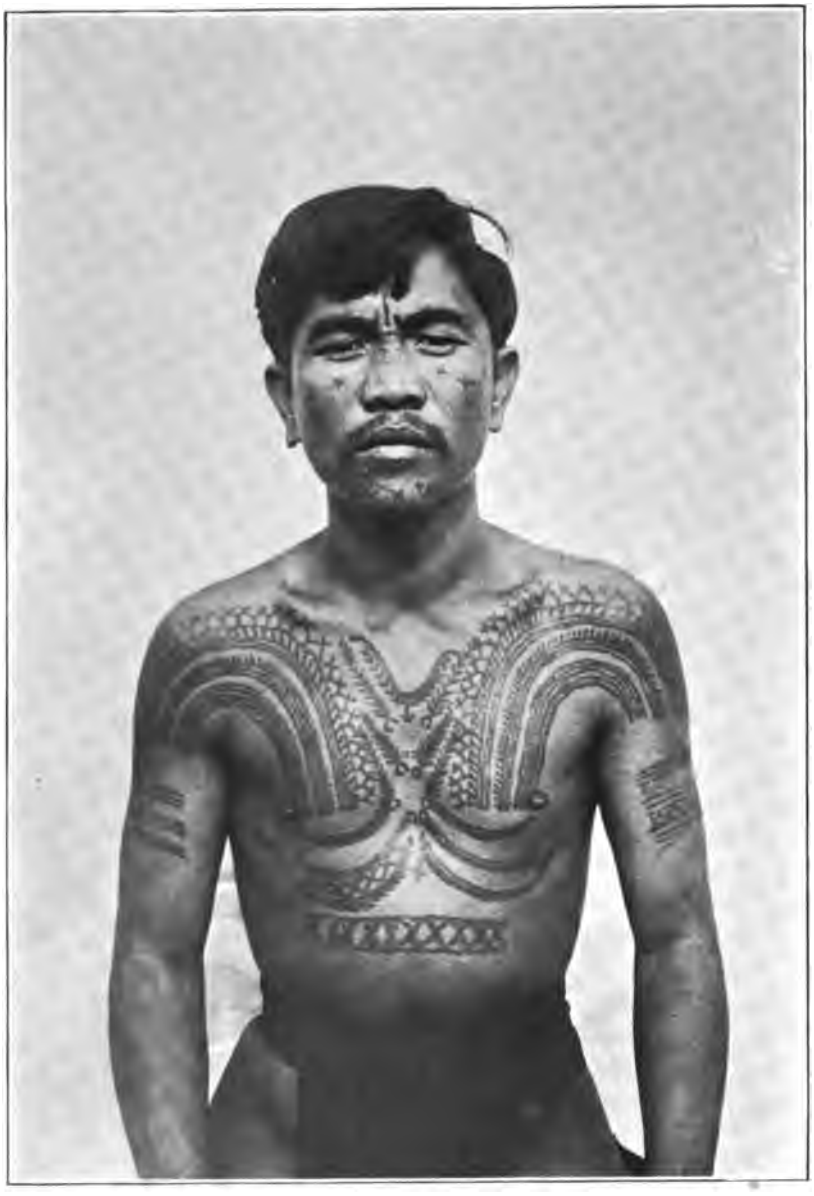


Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXLV. AN ELABORATE TATTOO.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CXLVI. A SIMPLE TATTOO.

Photo by Worcester.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CXLVII. BONTOC WOMAN'S TATTOO. (*a*) OLD; (*b*) NEW.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXLVIII. AN ELABORATE BANAWI TATTOO.

Photo by Worcester.

PLATE CXLIX. TATTOO OF A BANAWI WOMAN.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CL. GANG'-SA, SHOWING HUMAN-JAW HANDLE.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CLI. A DANCE, WITH CONTORTING HEAD-AX DANCER IN THE CENTER.

Photo by Martin.

PLATE CLII. A DANCE, WITH HEAD-AX DANCER AT THE RIGHT.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CLIII. THE FOUNDATION OF LU-MA-WIG'S HOUSE IN BONTOC.

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CLIV. SACRED GROVE (PA-PA-TAY' AD SO-KOK').

Photo by Jenks.

PLATE CLIV. SACRED GROVE (PA-PA-TAY' AD SO-KOK').

suddenly, the tattooed one was a large lizard, fa-ni'-as,[1] and he ran away and hid in the tall grass; and the sooty black one was gay-yang, the crow,[2] and he flew away and up over Bontoc, because he was ashamed to enter the pueblo after quarreling with his old friend.

OWUG, THE SNAKE

The old men say that a man of Mayinit came to live in Bontoc, as he had married a Bontoc woman and she wished to live in her own town.

After a while the man died. His friends came to the funeral, and a snake, o-wûg', also came. When the people wept, o-wûg' cried also. When they put the dead man in the grave, and when they stood there looking, o-wûg' came to the grave and looked upon the man, and then went away.

Later, when the friends observed the death ceremony, o-wûg' also came.

"O-wûg' thus showed himself to be a friend and companion of the Igorot. Sometime in the past he was an Igorot, but we have not heard," the old men say, "when or how he was o-wûg'."

"We never kill o-wûg'; he is our friend. If he crosses our path on a journey, we stop and talk. If he crosses our path three or four times, we return home, because, if we continue our journey then, some of us will die. O-wûg' thus comes to tell us not to proceed; he knows the bad anito on every trail."

WHO TOOK MY FATHER'S HEAD?

The Bontoc people have another folk tale regarding head taking. In it Lumawig, their god, taught them how to discover which pueblo had taken the head of one of their members. They repeat this story as a ceremony in the pabafunan after every head lost, though almost always they know what pueblo took it. It is as follows:

"A very great time ago a man and woman had two sons. Far up in the mountains they owned some garden patches. One day they told the boys to go and see whether the stone wall about the garden needed repair; but the boys said they did not wish to go, so the father went alone. As he did not return at nightfall, his sons started into the mountains to find him. They bound together two small bunches of runo for torches to light up the steep, rough, twisting trail. One torch was burning when they went out, and they carried the other to light them home again. Nowhere along the trail did they find their father; he had not been injured in the path, nor could they find where he had fallen over a cliff. So they passed on to the garden; there they found their father's headless body. They searched for blood in

[1] An iguana some two feet long.

[2] *Corone philippa* (Bonap.).

the bushes and grass, but they found nothing—no blood, no enemies' tracks.

"They carried the strange corpse down the mountain trail to their home in Bontoc. Then they hastened to the pabafunan, and there they told the men what had befallen their father. The old men counseled together, and at last one of them said: 'Lumawig told the old men of the past, so the old men last dead told me, that should any son find his father beheaded, he should do this: He should ask, "Who took my father's head? Did Tukukan take it? Did Sakasakan take it?" and Lumawig said, 'He shall know who took his father's head.'"

"So the boys took a basket, the fangao, to represent Lumawig, and stuck it full of chicken feathers. Before the fangao they placed a small cup of basi. Then squatting in front with the cup at their feet they put a small piece of pork on a stick and held it over the cup. 'Who took my father's head?—did Tukukan?' they asked. But the pork and the cup and the basket all remained still. 'Did Sakasakan?' asked the boys—all was as before. They went over a list of towns at enmity with Bontoc, but there was no answer given them. At last they asked, 'Did the Moon?'—but still there was no answer. 'Did the Sun?' the boys asked, and suddenly the piece of pork slid from the stick into the basi. And this was the way Lumawig had said a person should know who took his father's head.

"The Sun, then, was the guilty person. The two boys took some dogs and hastened to the mountains where their father was killed. There the dogs took up the scent of the enemy, and followed it in a straight line to a very large spring where the water boiled up, as at Mayinit where the salt springs are. The scent passed into this bubbling, tumbling water, but the dogs could not get down. When the dogs returned to land the elder brother tried to enter, but he failed also. Then the younger brother tried to get down; he succeeded in going beneath the water, and there he saw the head of his father, and young men in a circle were dancing around it—they were the children of the Sun. The brother struck off the head of one of these young men, caught up his father's head, and, with the two heads, escaped. When he reached his elder brother the two hastened home to their pueblo."

CHAPTER X

LANGUAGE

INTRODUCTION

iage of the Bontoc Igorot is sufficiently distinct from all
e classed as a separate dialect. However, it is originally
rent stock which to-day survives more or less noticeably over
a much larger part of the surface of the earth than the
f any other primitive people.

anguage of every group of primitive people in the Philippine
elago, except the Negrito, is from that same old tongue. Mr.
r B. Hulbert[1] has recorded vocabularies of ten groups of people
rmosa; and those vocabularies show that the people belong to the
great linguistic family as the Bontoc Igorot. Mr. Hulbert
eves that the language of Korea is originally of the same stock as
it of Formosa. In concluding his article he says:

We find therefore that out of a vocabulary of fifty words there are fifteen in which a distinct similarity [between Korean and Formosan] can be traced, and in not a few of the fifteen the similarity amounts to practical identity.

The Malay language of Malay Peninsula, Java, and Sumatra is from the same stock language. So are many, perhaps all, the languages of Borneo, Celebes, and New Zealand. This same primitive tongue is spread across the Pacific and shows unmistakably in Fiji, New Hebrides, Samoa, and Hawaii. It is also found in Madagascar.

ALPHABET

The Bontoc man has not begun even the simplest form of permanent mechanical record in the line of a written language, and no vocabulary of the language has before been published.

[1] The Korean Review, July, 1903, pp. 289-294.

he bushes and grass, b
racks.

"They carried the st
ome in Bontoc. The
hey told the men wh
ounseled together, and
ld men of the past, so t
on find his father behe
ook my father's head?
?" and Lumawig said,

"So the boys took a b
tuck it full of chicken fe
up of basi. Then squat
ut a small piece of pork
ook my father's head?—
he cup and the basket al
oys—all was as before.
Bontoc, but there was n
Did the Moon?'—but sti
oys asked, and suddenly
asi. And this was the w
who took his father's hea

"The Sun, then, was t
ogs and hastened to the
There the dogs took up t
traight line to a very lar
Mayinit where the salt sp
ling, tumbling water, but t
eturned to land the elder br
he younger brother tried t
he water, and there he saw
circle were dancing around
rother struck off the head
ather's head, and, with t
is elder brother the two has

in writing Bontoc words in this study:

ramo
French *or*
Spanish *hay*
in Spanish *auto*
bajar
chico
dar
hallé
comen
firmar
gozar
hay
hijo

lente
menos
jabon
lengua
nosotros

pero

ordo
ench *charmer*
nar

rench *oui*

the unmarked vowels *a, e,*
Malay Dictionary represent
The sound which I have
ions will be noted.
d, has not always the
closed syllable and the

oc Igorot language.
pronounced Igolot.
it is noted that
that in modern
now have that

293.

LINGUISTIC INCONSISTENCIES

The language of the Bontoc area is not stable, but is greatly shifting. In pueblos only a few hours apart there are not only variations in pronunciation but in some cases entirely different words are used, and in a single pueblo there is great inconsistency in pronunciation.

It is often impossible to determine the exact sound of vowels, even in going over common words a score of times with as many people. The accent seems very shifting and it is often difficult to tell where it belongs.

Several initial consonants of words and syllables are commonly interchanged, even by the same speaker if he uses a word more than once during a conversation. That this fickleness is a permanency in the language rather than the result of the present building of new words is proved by ato names, words in use for many years—probably many hundred years.

One of the most frequent interchanges is that of *b* and *f*. This is shown in the following ato names: Bu-yay′-yĕng or Fu-yay′-yĕng; Ba-tay′-yan or Fa-tay′-yan; Bi′-lĭg or Fi′-lĭg; and Long-boi′ or Long-foi′. It is also shown in two other words where one would naturally expect to find permanency—the names of the men's public buildings in the ato, namely, ba′-wi or fa′-wi, and pa-ba-bu′-nan or pa-ba-fu′-nan. Other common illustrations are found in the words ba-to or fa-to (stone) and ba-bay′-i or fa-fay′-i (woman).

Another constant interchange is that of *ch* and *d*. This also is shown well in names of ato, as follows: Cha-kong′ or Da-kong′; Pud-pud-chog′ or Pud-pud-dog′; and Si-gi-chan′ or Si-gi-dan′. It is shown also in chi′-la or di′-la (tongue).

The interchange of initial *k* and *g* is constant. These letters are interchanged in the following names of ato: Am-ka′-wa or Am-ga′-wa; Lu-wa′-kan or Lu-wa′-gan; and Ung-kan′ or Ung-gan′. Other illustrations are ku′-lĭd or gu′-lĭd (itch) and ye′-ka or ye′-ga (earthquake).

The following three words illustrate both the last two interchanges: Cho′-ko or Do′-go (name of an ato); pag-pa-ga′-da or pag-pa-ka′-cha (heel); and ka-cho′ or ga-de′-o (fish).

NOUNS

The nouns appear to undergo slight change to indicate gender, number, or case. To indicate sex the noun is followed by the word for woman or man—as, a′-su fa-fay′-i (female dog), or a′-su la-la′-ki (male dog). The same method is employed to indicate sex in the use of the third personal pronoun Si′-a or Si-to-di′. Si′-a la-la′-ki or Si-to-di′ la-la′-ki is used to indicate the masculine gender, and Si′-a fa-fay′-i or Si-to-di′ fa-fay′-i the feminine.

The plural form of the noun is sometimes the same as the singular. Plural number may also be expressed by use of the word ang-san (many) or am-in′ (all) in addition to the noun. It is sometimes expressed by repetition of syllables, as la-la′-ki (man), la-la-la′-ki (men); sometimes, also, by the prefix ka together with repetition of syllables, as li-fo′-o (cloud), ka-li′-fo-li-fo′-o (clouds). There seems to be no definite law in accordance with which these several plural forms are made. When in need of plurals in this study the singular form has always been used largely for simplicity.

PRONOUNS

The personal pronouns are:

I	Sak-in′
You	Sik-a′
He, she	Si′-a and Si-to-di′
We	Cha-ta′-ko and Cha-ka′-mi
You	Cha-kay′-yo
They	Cha-i-cha and Cha-to-di′

Examples of the possessive as indicated in the first person are given below:

My father	A-mak′
My dog	A-suk′
My hand	Li-mak′
Our father	A-ma′-ta
Our dog	A-su′-ta
Our house	A-fong′-ta

Other examples of the possessive are not at hand, but these given indicate that, as in most Malay dialects, a noun with a possessive suffix is one form of the possessive.

Scheerer[1] gives the possessive suffixes of the Benguet Igorot as follows:

My	*k*, after *a*, *i*, *o*, and *u*, otherwise *'ko*
Thy Your	*m*, after *a*, *i*, *o*, and *u*, otherwise *'mo*
His Her	*io*
Our (inc.)	*'tayo*
Our (exc.)	*'me*
Your	*'dio*
Their	*'cha* or *'ra*

These possessive suffixes in the Benguet Igorot language are the same, according to Scheerer, as the suffixes used in verbal formation.

The verbal suffixes of the Bontoc Igorot are very similar to those of the Benguet. It is therefore probable that the possessive suffixes are also very similar.

[1] Otto Scheerer (MS.), The Ibaloi Igorot, MS. Coll., Ethnological Survey for the Philippine Islands.)

It is interesting to note that in the Chamorro language of Guam the possessive suffixes for the first person correspond to those of the Igorot—*my* is *ko* and *our* is *ta*.

VERBS

Mention has been made of the verbal suffixes. Their use is shown in the following paradigms:

I eat	Sak-ın′ mang-an-ak′
You eat	Sık-a′ mang-an-ka′
He eats	Si-to-di′ mang-an′
We eat	Cha-ka′-mi mang-an-ka-mi′
You eat	Cha-kay′-yo mang-an-kay′-o
They eat	Cha-to-di′ mang-an-cha′
I go	Sak-ın′ u-mi-ak′
You go	Sık-a′ u-mi-ka′
He goes	Si-to-di′ u-mi′
We go	Cha-ka-mi′ u-mi-ka-mi′
You go	Cha-kay′-yo u-mi-kay′-yo
They go	Cha-to-di′ u-mi-cha′

The suffixes are given below, and the relation they bear to the personal pronouns is also shown by heavy-faced type:

I	'ak	**Sak-ın′**
You (sing)	'ka	**Sık-a′**
He	. . .	Si′-a or Si-to-di′
We	kami or tako	Cha-**ka′-mi** or Cha-**ta′-ko**
You	kayo	Cha-**kay′-yo**
They	cha	Cha-to-di′ or cha-i′-**cha**

The Benguet suffixes as given by Scheerer are:

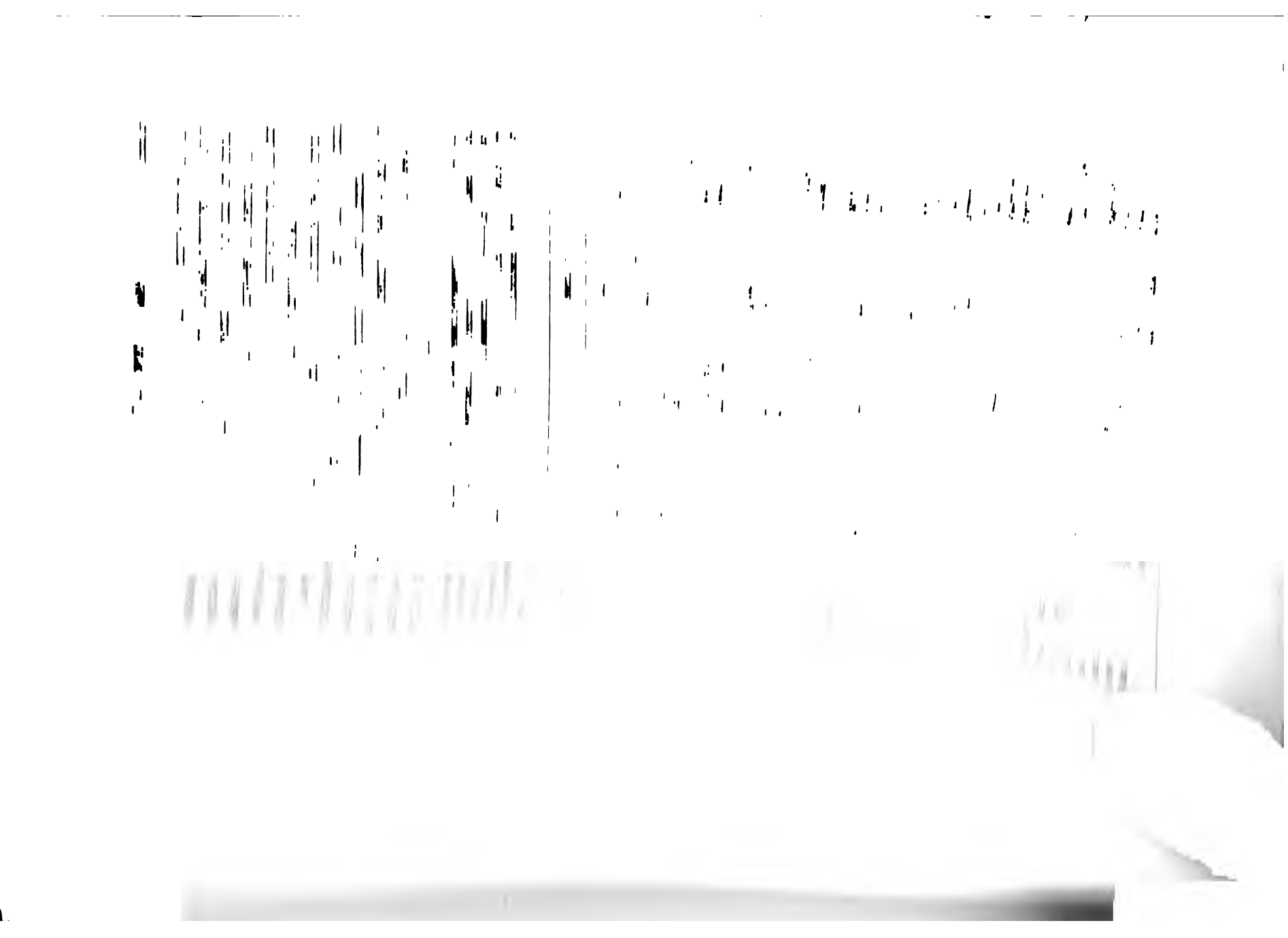
I	'ko or 'ak
You	'mo or 'ka
He	'to
We	{me {tayo
You	'kayo or 'dio
They	'ra or 'cha

The verbal suffixes seem to be commonly used by the Bontoc Igorot in verbal formations. The tense of a verb standing alone seems always indefinite; the context alone tells whether the present, past, or future is indicated.

COMPARATIVE VOCABULARIES

About eighty-five words have been selected expressing simple ideas. These are given in the Bontoc Igorot language and as far as possible in the Benguet Igorot; they are also given in the Malay and the Sulu languages.

Of eighty-six words in both Malay and Bontoc 32 per cent are clearly



English	Malay	Sulu	Benguet Igorot	Bontoc Igorot
Kill, to	Bûnoh	Bûnoh	Bunu'-in	Na-fa'-kûg
Knife	Pisau	Lâding	Ta'-ad	Kĭ-pan'
Large	Bĕsar	Dâkolah	Abatek	Chûk-chûk'-i
Lightning	Kĭlat	Kĭlat	Ba-gi'-dat	Yûp-yûp
Louse	Kutu	Kûtu	Ku-to	Ko'-to
Man	Ôrang	Tâu	Da'-gi	La-la'-ki
Monkey	Mûnyit, Kra	Amok	Ba-ges	Ka-ag'
Moon	Bûlan	Bûlan	Bu'-lan	Fu-an'
Mortar (for rice)	Lĕsong	Lûsong	. . .	Lu-song'
Mother	Mak, ĭbu	Ĭnah	I-na	I'-na
Night	Mâlam	Dûm	Kal-leian A-da'-wi	Mas-chim, la-fi'
Nine	S'ambilan	Siam	Dsi'-am	Si-am'
No	Tĭdak	Wâi, di	. . .	A-di'
Nose	Hĭdong	Ilong	A-dĕng	I-lĭng'
One	Sâtu, suâtu, sa	Ĭsa	Sa-gei'	I-sa'
Rain	Hûjan	Ûlan	U'-ran	O-chan'
Red	Mêrah	Pûla, lâg	Am-ba'-laŋg-a	Lang-at'
Rice (threshed)	Padi	Pâi	. . .	Pa-kû'
Rice (boiled)	Nasi	K'aun-an	I-na-pui	Mak-an'
River	Sungei	Sôbah	Pa'-dok	Wang'-a
Run, to	Lâri	Dâg-an	. . .	In-tûg'-tug
Salt	Gâram	Âsin	A-sin	Si'-mut
Seven	Tûjoh	Pĕto	Pit'-to	Pi-to'
Sit, to	Dûdok	Lingkûd	. . .	Tu-muck'-chu
Six	Anam	Ûnom	An-nim	I-nĭm'
Sky	Langit	Lângit	Dang-it	Chay'-ya
Sleep, to	Tĭdor	Ma-tôg	. . .	Ma-si-yĭp'
Small	Kĕchil	Asĭvĭ	O-o'-tik	Fan-ig'
Smoke	Âsap	Aso	A-sok	A-sok'
Steal, to	Mĕn-chûri	Takau	Magibat	Mang-a-qu'
Stone	Bâtu	Bâtu	Ba-to	Ba-to
Sun	Mâta-Hâri	Mâta sûga	A-kou, Si-kit	A-qu'
Talk, to	Bĕr-châkap	Nûg-pâmong	. . .	Ên-ka-li'
Ten	Sa'pûloh	Hangpoh	Sam-pu'-lo	Sĭm po'-o
There	Di-sĭtu, Di-sâna	Ha ietu, dûn	Chitan, Chiman	Is'-chi
Three	Tĭga	Tô	Tad'-do	To-lo'
To-morrow	Êsok, Besok	Kin-shûm	Ka-bua-san	A-swa'-kus
Tree	Pôko'kâyu	Kâhôi	Po-on	Cha-pon', Kay'-o
Two	Dûa	Rûa, Dûa	Chu'-a	Chu'-wa
Walk, to	Bĕr-jâlan	Panau	. . .	Ma-na'-lûn
Water	Âyer	Tûbig	Cha-num	Chĕ-num'
White	Pûteh	Ma-pûtih	Am-pu-ti'	Im-po'-kan
Wind	Angin	Hangin	Cha-gŏm	Cha-kĭm
Woman	Prĕmpûan	Babai	Bi-i, a-ko'-dau	Fa-fay'-i
Wood	Kâyu	Kâhôi	Ki'-u	Kay'-o
Yellow	Kûning	. . .	Chu-yao [2]	Fa-kĭng'-i
Yes	Ya	. . .	. . .	Ay
You (singular)	Angkau	Êkau	Sikam	Sĭk'-a

[1] One blind.

[2] From Ilokano.

BONTOC VOCABULARY

The following vocabulary is presented in groups with the purpose of throwing additional light on the grade of culture the Igorot has attained.

No words follow which represent ideas borrowed of a modern culture; for instance, I do not record what the Igorot calls shoes, pantaloons, umbrellas, chairs, or books, no one of which objects he naturally possesses.

Whereas it is not claimed that all the words spoken by the Igorot

follow under the various headings, yet it is believed that the man's vocabulary is nearly exhausted under such headings as "Cosmology," "Clothing, dress, and adornment," and "Weapons, utensils, etc.:"

English, with Bontoc equivalent

COSMOLOGY

English	Bontoc Igorot
Afternoon	Mûg-a-qû'
Afternoon, middle of	Mak-sip'
Air	Si'-yâk
Ashes	Cha-pu'
Blaze	Lang-lang
Cloud, rain	Li-fo'-o
Creek	Ki-nan'-wan
Dawn	Wi-wi-it'
Day	A-qu'
Day after to-morrow	Ka-sin' wa'-kus
Day before yesterday	Ka-sin' ug'-ka
Dust	Cha'-pog
Earthquake	Ye'-ga
East	Fa-la'-an si a-qu'
Evening	Ni-su'-yao
Fire	A-pu'-i
Ground (earth)	Lu'-ta
Hill	Chun'-tug
Horizon	Nang'-ab si chay'-ya
Island	Pa'-na
Lightning	Yûp-yûp
Midnight	Tĕng-ang si la-fi'
Milky way	Ang'-san nan tûk-fi'-fi [1]
Moon	Fu-an'
Moon, eclipse of	Ping-mang'-ĕt nan fu-an'
Moon, full	Fit-fi-tay'-ĕg
Moon, waxing, one-quarter	Fis-ka'-na
Moon, waxing, two-quarters	Ma-no'-wa
Moon, waxing, three-quarters	Kat-no-wa'-na
Moon, waning, three-quarters	Ka-tol-pa-ka'-na
Moon, waning, two-quarters	Ki-sul-fi-ka'-na
Moon, waning, one-quarter	Sig-na'-a-na
Moon, period following	Li'-mĕng
Morning	Fib-i-kût'
Morning, mid	Ma-a-qu'
Mountain	Fi'-lig
Mud	Pi'-tĕk
Nadir	Ad-cha'-im
Night	La-fi' or mas-chim
Noon	Nen-ting'-a or tĕng-ang si a-qu'
Periods of time in a year	I-na-na' La'-tûb Cho'-ok Li'-pas Ba-li'-ling Sa-gan-ma' Pa-chog' Sa'-ma
Plain	Cha'-ta
Pond	Tab-lak'
Precipice	Ki-chay'
Rain	O-chan'
Rainbow	Fung-a'-kan

[1] Many small stars.

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

COSMOLOGY—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
River	Wang'-a
River, down the river [1]	La'-god
River, mouth of	Sa-fang-ni'-na
River, up the river [2]	Ap'-lay
Sand	O-fod'
Sea	Po'-sâng
Season, rice culture	Cha-kon'
Season, remainder of year	Ka-sĭp'
Sky	Chay'-ya
Smoke	A-sok'
Spring	Ib-ĭb
Spring, hot	Lu-ag'
Stars, large	Fat-ta-ka'-kan
Stars, small	Tŭk-fi'-fi
Stone	Ba-to
Storm, heavy (rain and winds)	O-chan' ya cha-kĭm
Storm, heavy prolonged (baguio)	LĬm-lĭm
Sun	A-qu'
Sun, eclipse of	PĬng-mang'-ĕt
Sunrise	Lap-lap-on'-a
Sunset	Le-nun-nĕk' nan a-qu'
Thunder	Ki-cho'
To-day	Ad-wa'-ni
To-morrow	A-swa'-kus
Valley, or cañon	Cha-lu'-lug
Water	Chĕ-num'
Waterfall	Pa-lup-o'
West	Lum-na-kan' si a-qu'
Whirlwind	Al-li-pos'-pos or fa-no'-on
Wind	Cha-kĭm
Year	Ta'-wĭn
Year, past	TĬn-mo-wĭn
Yesterday	A-dug-ka'
Zenith	Ad-tong'-cho

[1] The country northward. [2] The country southward.

HUMAN BODY

Ankle	Ung-ĕt'
Ankle bone	KĬng-kĭng-i'
Arm	Li'-ma
Arm, left	I-kĭd'
Arm, right	A-wan'
Arm, upper	Pong'-o
Arm, upper, near shoulder	Tak-lay'
Armpit	Yĕk-yĕk'
Back	I-chug'
Beard, side of face	Sap-ki'
Belly	Fo'-to
Bladder	Fi-chung'
Blood	Cha'-la
Body	A'-wak
Bone	Ung-ĕt' or tung-al'
Brain	U'-tĕk
Breast	So'-so
Breath	Ing-ga'-ĕs
Cheek	Ta-mong' or i-pĭng'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

HUMAN BODY—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Chest	Ta'-kib
Chin	Pang'-a
Ear	Ko-wĕng'
Elbow	Si'-ko
Excreta	Tay-i
Eye	Ma-ta'
Eyebrow	Ki-chi'
Eyelash	Ki-chi'
Eyelid	Ta-nĭb si ma'-ya
Finger	Li-chĕng'
Finger, index or first	Mĕs-nĕd' si am-am'-a
Finger, little	Ik-ik-kĭng'
Finger, second	Ka-wa'-an
Finger, third	Mĕs-nĕd si nan ka-wa'-an
Finger nail	Ko-ko'
Foot	Cha-pan'
Foot, instep of	O'-son si cha-pan'
Forehead	Ki'-tong
Gall	A-ku'
Groin	Lĭp-yak'
Hair in armpit	Ki-lĕm' si yĕk-yĕk'
Hair on crown of head	Tug-tug'-o
Hair on head	Fo-ok'
Hair, pubic, man's	Ki-lĕm' si o'-ti
Hand	Ad-pa' or li'-ma
Hand, inside of	Ta'-lad
Head	O'-lo
Heart	Po'-so
Heel	Pag-pa-ga'-da
Hip	Tĭp-ay
Intestine	Fu-ang'
Jaw	Pang'-a
Kidney	Fa-tin'
Knee	Gung-gung'-o
Leg	Si-ki'
Leg, calf of	Fit'-kin
Lip, lower	So'-fil ay nin-gub'
Lip, upper	So'-fil
Liver	A-tu'-i
Lung	Fa'-la
Mouth	To-puk'
Navel	Pu'-sĭg
Neck	Fûk-kang'
Neck, back of	Tûng-ĕd'
Nipple	So'-so
Nose	I-lĭng'
Nostril	Pa-nang'-e-tan
Palate	A-lang-a-ang'
Penis	O'-ti
Rib	Tag-lang'
Rump	U-fit
Saliva	Tuv'-fa
Shoulder	Po-ke'
Shoulder blade	Gang-gang'-sa
Skin	Ko-chil'
Spinal cord	U'-tuk si ung-ĕt'
Spine	Ka-ung-e-ung-ĕt'
Spirit of living person	Lĕng-ag'
Spirit of dead person	A-ni'-to

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

HUMAN BODY—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Spirit of beheaded dead	Pin-těng'
Sternum	Los-los-it'
Stomach	Fa'-sag
Sweat (perspiration)	Ling-ět
Testicle	Lûg-lûg'-ong
Thigh	U'-po
Throat	A-lo-go'-og
Thumb	Am-am'-a
Toe	Go-mot'
Toe, first	Měs-něd si am-am'-a si cha-pan'
Toe, fourth	Ik-ik-king' si cha-pan'
Toe, third	Měs-něd si nan ka-wa'-an si cha-pan'
Toe, great	Am-am'-a si cha-pan'
Toe nail	Ko-ko' si go-mot'
Toe, second	Ka-wa'-an si cha-pan'
Tongue	Chi'-la
Tooth	Fob-a'
Urine	Is-fo
Vagina	Ti'-li
Vein	Wath
Vertebræ	Ung-ět' si i-chug'
Wrist	Pang-at si'-nang
Wrist joint	Ung-ět'

BODILY CONDITIONS

Ague	Wug-wug
Beri-beri	Fu-tut
Blindness, eyelids closed	Na-ki'-mit
Blindness, eyelids open	Fu-lug
Blood, passage of	In-is'-fo cha'-la, or In-tay'-es cha'-la
Boil, a	Fu-yu-i'
Burn, a	Ma-la-fûb-chong'
Childbirth	In-sa'-cha
Cholera	Pish-ti'
Circumcision	Sig-i-at'
Cold, a	Mo-tug'
Consumption	O'-kat
Corpse	A'-wak
Cut, a	Na-fa'-kag
Deafness	Tu'-wing
Diarrhea	O-gi'-âk
Dumbness	Gna-nak
Eyes, crossed	Li'-i
Eyes, sore	In-o'-ki
Feet, cracked from wading in rice paddies	Fung-as'
Fever	Im-po'-os nan a'-wak
Goiter	Fin-to'-kěl or fi-kěk'
Headache	Sa-kit' si o'-lo or pa-tug' si o'-lo
Health	Ka-wis' nan a'-wak
Itch or mange	Ku'-lid
Itch, first stage of small sores	Ka'-ti

[illegible] with *Bontoc equivalent*—Continued

[illegible] CONDITIONS—Continued

[illegible]	Bontoc Igorot
[illegible]	In-sa-kĭt'
[illegible]	Ga-la'-ga
[illegible]	Fĭg-fĭg
[illegible]	Sap-lŭk
[illegible]	Nay-yu' nan a'-wak
[illegible]	Ful-tâng'
[illegible]	Nay-am-an' or kĭn-may-yon'
[illegible]	Na-na
[illegible]	Fa'-wĭng
[illegible]	Pa-tug' nan fob-a'
[illegible] disease of	Lang-ĭng'-i
[illegible]	O'-pat

CONSANGUINEAL AND SOCIAL RELATIONSHIPS

[illegible]	A-ki-na
[illegible]	Kĭl-lang'
[illegible]	Gna-an'
[illegible]	U'-na
[illegible]	Ong-ong'-a
[illegible] consanguineal group and family	Sĭm-pang' a-nak' Sĭm-pang' a-po' Sĭm-pang' a'-fong
[illegible]	A'-ma
[illegible]	La-la'-ki
[illegible] old	Am-a'-ma
[illegible] poor	Pu'-chi
[illegible] rich	Ka-chan-a-yan'
[illegible]	I'-na
[illegible]	Nang-o'-so
[illegible], father dead	Nan-a-ma'-na
[illegible], mother dead	Nan-i-na'-na
[illegible]	I-pu-kao'
[illegible], of another pueblo	Mang-i'-li
[illegible], of one's own pueblo	Kay-il-yan'
Person, one	Ta'-ku
Relative	I-ba'
Sister	A-no'-chi
Twins	Na-a-pĭk'
Wife	A-sa'-wa
Woman	Fa-fay'-i
Woman, old	In-i'-na

CLOTHING, DRESS, AND ADORNMENT

Armlet, bejuco	Sung-ŭb'
Armlet, boar tusk	Ab-kil'
Bag, flint and steel	Pal-ma-ting'-ŭn
Bag, tobacco, cloth	Cho'-kao
Bag, tobacco, bladder carabao or hog	Fi-chong'
Bag, tobacco, bladder deer	Ka'-tat
Beads, string of	A-pong'
Beads, dog tooth	Sa-ong
Beads, seed, black	Gu-sao'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

CLOTHING, DRESS, AND ADORNMENT—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Beads, seed, blue gray	At-lok-ku'-i
Beads, red agate	Si'-lûng
Beads, white, large	Fo'-kûs
Blanket	E-wis' or pi'-tay
Blanket, girl's	Kûd-pas'
Blanket, black, white stripes	Fa-yi-ong'
Blanket, blue	Pi-nag-pa'-gan
Blanket, used to carry baby on back	I-fan'
Blanket, white, blue stripes	Fan-cha'-la
Blanket, white, wide blue stripes	Ti-na'-pi
Breechcloth	Wa'-nis
Breechcloth, bark, red	Ti-nan'-ag
Breechcloth, bark, white	So'-put
Breechcloth, bark, white, burial	Chi-nang-ta'
Breechcloth, blue	Fa'-a
Breechcloth, blue, small stripes	Bi-no-slun'
Breechcloth, woman's menstruation	Fa'-la
Ear plug or ear stretcher	Su-wip'
Earring, three varieties	Sing-sing, i-pit, sing-ut'
Girdle, man's, chain	Ka'-ching
Girdle, man's, bejuco rope	Ka'-kot
Girdle, man's, bejuco string	I-kit'
Girdle, man's, fiber	Song-kit-an'
Girdle, woman's	Wa'-kis
Girdle, woman's, bustle-like	A-ko'-san
Hair, false	Fo-bo-ok'
Hat, man's	Suk'-lâng
Hat, man's fez-shaped, of Bontoc pueblo	Ti-no-od'
Hat, man's rain	Sŏg-fi'
Hat, sleeping	Kut'-lao
Headcloth, burial	To-chong'
Jacket, woman's	La-ma
Necklace, boar tusk	Fu-yay'-ya
Neck ring, brass	Bang-gŭ
Pipe	Fo-bang'-a
Pipe, clay	Ki-na-lo'-sab
Pipe, brass "anito"	Tin-ak-ta'-go
Pipe, smooth cast metal	Pin-e-po-yong'
Rain protector, woman's	Tûg-wi'
Rain protector, camote leaf	Ang-ĕl'
Shell, mother-of-pearl, worn at waist by men	Fi-kûm'
Shirt, man's blue burial	Los-a'-dan
Shirt, man's blue burial, red and yellow threads	A-ni'-wis
Skirt, woman's burial	Kay-in'
Skirt, cotton	Lu-fid i kad-pas
Skirt, cotton, Bognen	Qa'-bou
Skirt, fiber	Pi-tay'
Skirt, made of falatong	Lu-fid'
Skirt, twine of	Mi-no'-kan
Tattoo	Fa'-tŏk
Tattoo, arm	Pong'-o
Tattoo, breast	Chak-lag'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

FOODS AND BEVERAGES

English	Bontoc Igorot
Beverage, fermented rice	Ta-pu'-i
Beverage, fermented rice, ferment of	Fu-fud
Beverage, fermented sugar cane	Ba'-si
Beverage fermented sugar cane, ferment of	Tub-fĭg'
Beverage, fermented vegetables and meats	Sa-fu-ĕng'
Food, beans and rice	Sĭb-fan'
Food, camotes and rice	Ke-le'-ke
Food, locusts and rice	Pi-na-lat'
Food, preserved meat	It-tag'
Salt	Si'-mut
Salt, cake of	Luk'-sa

WEAPONS, UTENSILS, ETC.

Ax, battle	Pi'-nong
Ax, cutting edge of	To-pek'
Ax, handle of	Pa-lĭk'
Ax, handle, bejuco ferrule of	Tok'-no
Ax, handle, iron ferrule of	Ka-lo'-lot
Ax, handle, top point of blade of	Pow-wit'
Ax, working tool	Wa'-say
Ax, working tool, blade turned as adz	Sa'-ka
Ax, working tool, handle of	Pa-ka'-cha
Basket, baby's food bottle	Tuk-to'-pĭl
Basket, ceremonial, chicken	Fi-ki'
Basket, dinner	To'-pĭl
Basket, fish	Kot-ten'
Basket, fish, small	Fak-kĭng'
Basket, gan-sa	Fa'-i si gang'-sa
Basket, grasshopper	I-wûs'
Basket, house, holding about a peck	Fa-lo'-ko
Basket, men's carrying	Ka-lu'-pĭt
Basket, man's dirt	Ko-chuk-kod'
Basket, man's dirt scoop	Tak-o-chûg'
Basket, man's transportation	Ki-ma'-ta
Basket, man's transportation, handle of	Pa'-tang
Basket, man's traveling	Sang'-i
Basket, man's traveling, with rain-proof covering (so-called "head basket")	Fang'-ao
Basket, salt	Fa-ni'-tan
Basket, side, small, for tobacco	A-ku'-pan
Basket, spoon	So'-long
Basket, threshed rice	Ko'-lug
Basket, tobacco, small	Ka-lu'-pĭt
Basket, woman's rump	Ag-ka-win'
Basket, woman's transportation	Lu'-wa
Basket, woman's transportation, large	Tay-ya-an'
Basket, woman's vegetable	A-to-fang
Basket, woman's vegetable scoop	Sûg-fi'
Bellows	Op-op'
Bellows, piston of	Dot-dot'
Bellows, tube of, to fire	To-bong'
Bird scarer, carabao horn	Kong-ok'
Box, small wooden, for hair grease	Tug-tug'-no
Chair, for corpse	Sung-a'-chil
Coffin	A-lo'-ang
Deadfall, for wild hogs	Il-tĭb'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

WEAPONS, UTENSILS, ETC.—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Dish, small wooden	Chu'-yu
Dish, small wooden, bowl-shaped	Suk-ong'
Drumstick	Pat-tong'
Fire machine, bamboo	Co-li'-li
Fire machine, flint and steel	Pal-ting'
Fire machine, flint and steel, cotton used with as tinder	A-měk'
Gong, bronze	Gang'-sa
Gong, bronze (two varieties)	Ka'-los, Co-ong'-an
Gourd, large bejuco-bound, for meat	Fa'-lay
Head pad, woman's, for supporting load on head	Ki'-kan
Jews-harp, wooden	Ab-a'-fü
Jug, gourd, for basi	Tak-ing
Knife, man's small	Ki-pan'
Ladle, common wooden, for rice	Fa'-nu
Ladle, gourd	Ki-ud
Ladle, narrow wooden	Fak-ong'
Loom	In-a-fu'-i
Mortar, double, for threshing rice	Lu-song'
Needle	Cha-kay'-yum
Net, grasshopper	Se-chok'
Olla, roughly spherical jar	Fang'-a
Olla, more paralleled-sided jar	Fu-o-foy'
Olla, preserved meat	Tu-u'-nan
Paddle, olla-molding	Pip-i
Pail, wooden, for feeding pigs	Kak-wan'
Pestle, rice	Al'-o
Pit-fall, for hogs	Fi'-to
Plate, eating, of braided bamboo	Ki'-ûg
Scarecrows	Pa-chěk', ki'-lao
Scarecrows, water power, line of	Pi-chug'
Scarecrows, water power, wood in rapids	Pit-ug'
Sieve, rice	A-ka'-ûg
Snare, wild chicken	Shi'-ay
Snare, spring, bird	Si-sim' and Ling-an'
Snare, spring, wild chicken and cat	Kok-o'-lâng
Spear	Fal-fěg'
Spear, blade of	Tu'-fay
Spear, blade, barbless	Fang'-kao
Spear, blade, many-barbed	Si-na-la-wi'-tan
Spear, blade, single-barbed	Fal-fěg'
Spear, blade	Kay-yan'
Spoon, large wooden, for drinking	Tûg-on'
Spoon, large wooden, for pig's feed	Ka-od'
Spoon, small wooden, for eating	I-chûs'
Stick, soil-turning	Kay-kay
Stick, woman's camote	Su-wan'
Sweep runo, for catching birds	Ka-lîb'
Tattooing instrument	Cha-kay'-yum
Torch	Si-lu'
Trap, fish, funnel, large	O-kat'
Trap, fish, funnel, small	Ob-o'-fü
Trap, fish, scoop	Ko-yûg'
Trap, wild-cat	Fa-wang'
Tray, winnowing	Lig-o'
Trough, for salt at Mayinit	Ko-long'-ko
Tube, for basi	Fu-ûs
Whetstone	A-san'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

HOME AND FIELD

English	Bontoc Igorot
Canal, irrigating	A'-lak
Council house for men	Fa'-wi
Council house, open court of	Chi-la'
Council house, open court of, posts in	Po-si'
Council house, roofed portion of	Tung-fub'
Council house, closed room of	A'-fo
Council house, closed room, doorway of	Pan-tu
Council house, closed room, fireplace of	A-ni-chu'-an
Council house, closed room, floor of	Chap-ay'
Council house, wall of	To-pĭng
Dam, in river	Lung-ud'
Dormitory, boys'	Pa-ba-fu'-nan
Dormitory, girls'	O'-lâg
Dwelling	A'-fong
Dwelling, better class of	Fay'-û
Dwelling, better class, aisle in	Cha-la'-nan
Dwelling, better class, door of	Tang-ĭb
Dwelling, better class, first room on left of aisle	Chap-an'
Dwelling, better class, second room on left of aisle	Cha-le-ka-nan' si mo-o'-to
Dwelling, better class, sleeping room of	Ang-an'
Dwelling, better class, small recesses at ends of sleeping room	Kûb-kûb
Dwelling, better class, stationary shelf in	Chûk'-so
Dwelling, poorer class	Kat-yu'-fong
Fence, garden	A'-lad
Granary	A-lang'
Lands, public	Pag-pag'
Sementera, rice	Pay-yo'
Sementera, abandoned	Nud-yun a pay-yo'
Sementera, large, producing more than five cargoes	Pay-yo' chûk-chûk'-wag
Sementera, small, producing less than five cargoes	Pay-yo' ay fa-nĭg
Sementera, irrigated by hand	Pay-yo' a kao-u'-chan
Sementera, unirrigated mountain	Fo-ag'
Sementera, used as seed bed	Pad-cho-kan'
Stones, groups of in pueblo, said to be places to rest and talk	O-bub-fu'-nan
Troughs, irrigation	Ta-la'-kan
Troughs, irrigation, scaffolding of	To-kod'
Walls, sementera	Fa-nĭng'

ANIMALS

Ant, large black	Ku'-sĭm
Ant, large red	A-lala-sang'
Ant, large red, pincers of	Kĕn'-ang
Ant, small red	Fu'-wĭs
Bedbug	Ki'-tĕb
Bee	Yu'-kan
Bee, wax of	A-tĭd'
Bird	Ay-ay'-am
Butterfly, large	Fi-no-lo-fo'-lo
Butterfly, small	Ak-a'-kop
Carabao	No-ang'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

ANIMALS—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Carabao, backbone of	Tĭg-tĭg-i'
Carabao, body of	Po'-to
Carabao bull	Tot'-o
Carabao calf	I-na-nak' ay no-ang'
Carabao cow	Kam-bat'-yan
Carabao cow, udder of	So'-so
Carabao, dew claw of	Pa-king-i'
Carabao, foot of	Ko'-kod
Carabao, fore leg of	Kong-kong'-o ay pang-u-lo
Carabao, forequarters of	Pang-u-lo
Carabao, hair of	Tot-chut'
Carabao, hind leg of	Kong-kong'-o ay o-chi-chi'
Carabao, horn of	Sa-kod'
Carabao, white mark on neck of	La-fang'
Carabao, point of shoulder of	Mok-mok-ling pang-u-lo
Carabao, rear quarters of	O-chi-chi'
Carabao, rump of	Ba-long'-a
Carabao, tail of	I'-pus
Carabao, wild	Ay-ya-wan'
Caterpillar	Ge'-chĕng
Chicken	Mo-nok'
Chicken, cock	Kao-wi'-tan
Chicken, cock, spur of	Pa-ging-i'
Chicken, cock, wild	Sa'-fûg
Chicken, comb of	Ba-long-a-bing'
Chicken, crop of	Fi-chong'
Chicken, ear lobe of, white	Ko-wĕng'
Chicken, egg	Ĕt-log'
Chicken, foot of	Go-mot'
Chicken, gall of	Ak-ko'
Chicken, gizzard of	Fit-li'
Chicken, heart of	Leng-ag'
Chicken, hen	Mang-a'-lak
Chicken, leg of	Pu-yong' or o-po'
Chicken, liver of	A'-ti
Chicken, mandible of	To-kay'
Chicken, pullet	Chi'-sak
Chicken, stomach of	Fu-ang'
Chicken, tail of	Ga-tod'
Chicken, toe of	Ga'-wa
Chicken, toe nail of	Ko-ko'
Chicken, wattles of	Ba-long-a-bing'
Chicken, wing of	Pay-yok'
Chicken, young	Im'-pas
Crab	Ag-ka'-ma
Crab (found in rice sementeras)	Song'-an
Cricket	Fil-fil'-ting
Crow	Gay-yang
Deer	Og'-sa
Dog	A'-su
Dog, male	La-la'-ki ay a'-su
Dog, female	Fa-fay'-i ay a'-su
Dog, puppy	O-kĕn'
Dragon fly	Lang-fay'-an
Fish, large, 3 to 5 feet long	Cha-lit'
Fish, 6 to 10 inches long	Li'-ling

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

ANIMALS—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Fish, small	Ka-cho'
Flea	Tĭ'-lang
Fly (house fly)	La'-lug
Hawk	La-fa'-an
Hog	Fu-tug'
Hog, barrow	Na-ĭt-lĭ'-an
Hog, boar	Bu'-a
Hog, boar, tusk of	Tang-o'-fu
Hog, sow	O-go'
Hog, wild	La'-man or fang'-o
Hog, young	A-mug'
Horse	Ka-fay-o
Horse, colt	I-na-nak' ay ka-fay'-o
Horse, mare	Fa-fay'-i ay ka-fay'-o
Horse, stallion	La-la'-ki ay ka-fay'-o
Lizard	Fa-ni'-as
Locust	Cho'-chon
Locust, young, without wings	O-non
Louse	Ko'-to
Louse, nit	I'-lĭt
Maggot	Fĭ'-kĭs
Monkey	Ka-ag'
Mosquito	Tĭp'-kan
Mouse	Cho-cho'
Owl	Ko-op'
Rat	O-tot'
Snail, in river	Ko'-ti
Snail, in sementera (three mollusks)	Kĭt-an', Fĭng'-a, Lĭs'-chûg
Snake	O-wûg'
Spider	Ka-wa'
Wasp	A-tĭn-fa-u'-kan
Wild-cat	In'-yao
Wild-cat (so called)	Sĭ'-le, co'-lang
Worm	Ka-lang'

VEGETAL LIFE

Bamboo	Ka-way'-gan
Bamboo, used for baskets	A'-nĭs
Bamboo, used to tie bunches of palay	Fĭ'-ka
Bamboo, used to tie bunches of palay, fiber of	Pĭng-ĕl
Banana	Fa'-lat
Banana, green variety	Sa-gĭng
Banana, yellow variety	Mĭ-nay'-ang
Bark	Sĭp-sĭp
Bark, from which brown fiber is made	Lay-ĭ'
Bark, inner, for spinning	Ko-pa'-nĭt
Bean, black and gray	I'-tab
Bean, black, small	Ba-la'-tong
Bean, pale green, small	Ka'-lap
Bejuco (rattan)	Wu-e
Bud	Fo'-a
Camote	To-ki'

English, with Bontoc equivalent—Continued

VEGETAL LIFE—Continued

English	Bontoc Igorot
Camote, blossom of	Tup-kao′
Camote, red, two varieties	Sĭ′-sĭg Pĭt-tĭ′-kan
Camote vine	Fi-na-lĭ′-lĭng Li-no′-ko
Camote, white, six varieties	Pa-to′-ki Ki′-nûb fa-fay′-i Pi-i-nĭt′ Ki-wĕng′ Tang-tang-lab′
Flower	Fĕng′-a
Forest	Pag-pag
Fruit	Fi-kûs′-na
Leaf	To-fo′-na
Limb, tree	Pang′-a
Maize	Pi′-ki
Millet	Sa′-fug
Millet, dark grain, "black"	Pi-tĭng′-an
Millet, white, three varieties	Mo-di′ Poy-nĕd′ Si-nang′-a
Plant, cultivated for spinning fiber	Pŭ-tĭg′
Plant, wild, fiber gathered for spinning	A-pas
Plant, wild, fiber of above	Las-las′
Rice	Pa-kŭ′
Rice, beard of	Fo-ok′
Rice, boiled	Mak-an′
Rice, head of	Sĭn-lu′-wi
Rice, kernel of	I-ta′
Rice, leaf of	To′-fûn
Rice, red varieties, smooth	Chay-yĕt′-ĭt Gu-mĭk′-i
Rice, red variety, bearded	Fo-o′-kan
Rice, roots of	Tad-lang′
Rice, shelled grain	Fi-na-u′
Rice, stalk of	Pang-ti-i′
Rice, white, four varieties	Ti′-pa Ga′-sang Pu-i-a-pu′-i Tu′-pĕng
Root, of plant	La-mot′
Runo	Lu′-lo
Squash	Ka-lĭb-as′
Tree	Kay′-o, cha-pon′
Tree, dead	Na-lu′-yao
Tree, knot on	Pĭng-i′
Tree, stump of	Tung-ĕd′
Vine, wild, from which fiber for spinning is gathered	Fa-ay′-I
Wood, from which pipes are made, three varieties	Ga-sa′-tan La-no′-ti Gi-gat′
Wood, fire	May-i-su′-wo
Wood, fire, pitch pine	Kay′-o
Wood, fire, from all other trees	Cha′-pung

—Continued

VERBS

	Bontoc Igorot
	Fin-mi'-chan
	A-li-ka'
	Kû-ke'-chun
	Ma-ti'
	U-mi-num'
	Mang-an'; ka-kan'
	Na-ma'-kĭl
	Fo-ma-ong'
	Um-i-ak'
	Chûng-nĕn'
	Na-fa'-kûg
	In-tûg'-tûg
	Tu-muck'-chu
	Ma-si-yĭp'
	Mang-a-qu'
	En-ka-li'
	Fu-mang-un'
	Ma-na'-lûn

ADJECTIVES

	Am-in'
	An-an-a-lut' or ngag
	In-ni'-tit
	Cûg-a-wis'
	Chûk-chûk'-i
	Sang-a-an'
	An-cho'
	Ang-san
	Lang-at'
	Fan-ig'
	Im-po'-kan
	Fa-kĭng'-i

ADVERBS

	Is'-na
	A-di'
	Is'-chi
	Ay

Cardinal, ordinal, and distributive numerals

CARDINAL NUMERALS

1	I-sa'	201	Chu'-wan la-sot' ya i-sa'
2	Chu'-wa	300	To-lon' la-sot'
3	To-lo'	301	To-lon' la-sot' ya i-sa'
4	I-pat'	400	I-pat' la-sot'
5	Li-ma'	401	I-pat' la-sot' ya i-sa'
6	I-nim'	500	Li-man' la-sot'
7	Pi-to'	501	Li-man' la-sot' ya i-sa'
8	Wa-lo'	600	I-nim' la-sot'
9	Si-am'	601	I-nim la-sot' ya i-sa'
10	Sim po'-o	700	Pi-ton' la-sot'
11	Sim po'-o ya i-sa'	701	Pi-ton' la-sot' ya i-sa'
12	Sim po'-o ya chu'-wa	800	Wa-lon' la-sot'
13	Sim po'-o ya to-lo'	801	Wa-lon' la-sot' ya i-sa'
14	Sim po'-o ya i-pat'	900	Si-am' ay la-sot'
15	Sim po'-o ya li-ma'	901	Si-am' ay la-sot' ya i-sa'
16	Sim po'-o ya i-nim'	1,000	Sin li'-fo
17	Sim po'-o ya pi-to'	1,001	Sin li'-fo ya i-sa'
18	Sim po'-o ya wa-lo'	1,100	Sin li'-fo ya sin la-sot'
19	Sim po'-o ya si-am'	1,200	Sin li' fo ya chu'-wan la-sot'
20	Chu-wan po'-o	1,300	Sin li'-fo ya to-lon' la-sot'
21	Chu-wan po'-o ya i-sa'	1,400	Sin li'-fo ya i-pat' la-sot'
30	To-lon' po'-o	1,500	Sin li'-fo ya li-man' la-sot'
31	To-lon' po'-o ya i-sa'	1,600	Sin li'-fo ya i-nim' la-sot'
40	I-pat' po'-o	1,700	Sin li'-fo ya pi-ton' la-sot'
41	I-pat' po'-o ya i-sa'	1,800	Sin li'-fo ya wa-lon' la-sot'
50	Li-man' po'-o	1,900	Sin li'-fo ya si-am' la-sot'
51	Li-man' po'-o ya i-sa'	2,000	Chu'-wa ay li'-fo
60	I-nim' po'-o	3,000	To-loy' li'-fo
61	I-nim' po'-o ya i-sa'	4,000	I-pat' li'-fo
70	Pi-ton' po'-o	5,000	Li-may' li'-fo
71	Pi-ton' po'-o ya i-sa'	6,000	I-nim' li'-fo
80	Wa-lon' po'-o	7,000	Pi-ton' li'-fo
81	Wa-lon' po'-o ya i-sa'	8,000	Wa-lon' li'-fo
90	Si-am' ay po'-o	9,000	Si-am' ay li'-fo
91	Si-am' ay-po'-o ya i-sa'	10,000	Sin po'-oy li'-fo
100	La-sot' or Sin la-sot'	11,000	Sin po'-o ya i-sang' ay li'-fo
101	Sin la-sot' ya i-sa'	12,000	Sin po'-o ya nan chu'-wa li'-fo
102	Sin la-sot' ya chu'-wa	[1] 13,000	Sin po'-o ya nan to'-lo li'-fo
200	Chu'-wan la-sot'		

[1] It is probable they seldom count as high as 13,000.

ORDINAL NUMERALS[2]

English	Bontoc Igorot
First	Ma-ming'-san
Second	Ma-mid-du'-a
Third	Ma-mit-lo'
Fourth	Mang-i-pat'
Fifth	Mang-a-li-ma'
Sixth	Mang-a-nim'
Seventh	Mang-a-pi-to'
Eighth	Mang-a-wa-lo'
Ninth	Mang-nin-si-am'
Tenth	Mang-a-po'-o
Eleventh	Mang-a-po'-o ya i-sa'

[2] These people say they have no separate adverbs denoting repetition of action—as, once, twice, thrice, four times, ten times, etc. They use the ordinal numerals for this purpose also.

—Continued

	Bontoc Igorot
	[illegible]-po'-o ya chu'-wa
	[illegible]-po'-o ya to'-lo
	[illegible]-du'-a' po'-o
	[illegible]-du'-a' po'-o ya i-sa'
	[illegible]-lo'-i po'-o
	[illegible]-lo'-i po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-i-pat' ay po'-o
	Mang-i-pat' ay po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-a-li-ma' ay po -o
	Mang-a-li-ma' ay po'-o ay i-sa'
	Mang-a-nim ay po'-o
	Mang-a-nim ay po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-a-pi-to' ay po'-o
	Mang-a-pi-to' ay po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-a-wa-lo' ay po'-o
	Mang-a-wa-lo' ay po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-a-si-am ay po'-o
	Mang-a-si-am ay po'-o ya i-sa'
	Mang-a-po'-o ya po'-o
	Mang-a-po'-o ya po'-o ya i-sa'
[illegible]	Ma-mid-dua' la-sot'
[illegible]	Ma-mid-dua' la-sot' ya i-sa'
[illegible]	Ma-mit-lo'-i la-sot'
[illegible]	Ma-mit-lo'-i la-sot' ya i-sa'
[illegible]	Mang-i-pat' ay la-sot'
[illegible]	Mang-a-pat' ay la-sot' ya i-sa'
[illegible]	Ka-la-so la-sot' or ka-li-fo-li'-fo
[illegible]	A-nong-os'-na

DISTRIBUTIVE NUMERALS

One to each	I-sas' nan i-sa'
Two to each	Chu-was' nan i-sa'
Three to each	To-los' nan i-sa'
Ten to each	Po-os' nan i-sa'
Eleven to each	Sim po-o' ya i-sas' nan i-sa'
Twelve to each	Sim po-o' ya chu'-wa Is nan i-sa'
Twenty to each	Chu-wan' po-o' is nan i-sa'

INDEX TO VOLUME I

	Page
ABORTION	60
ABRA PROVINCE, Tinguian people of, employ bow	123
ACCENTS, irregular placing of	229
ACORN, south of Bontoc, probably not food	81
ADDITION, numerical, how made	217
ADJECTIVES, vocabulary of	246
ADULTERY, a crime	168
—, punishment for	170
ADVERBS, vocabulary of	246
ADZ, primitive	116
ÆSTHETIC LIFE	184–195
AFONG, family dwellings	55–59
AGAWA, clay pipes made in	131
—, description of woman's wear in the pueblo of	114
—, flayed tree-bark breechcloth made in	112
AGE of Bontoc pueblo	50
—, size, and value of carabao, how shown	218
AGED, care of	70, 71
AGRICULTURAL implement used by women of Bontoc	116
AGRICULTURE	88–107
—, Ceremonies connected with	207–213
—, CEREMONY, CHAKA, at close of period when rice is transplanted from seed bed	207–211
—, KEENG, for protection of growing rice against birds and rats	212
—, KOPUS, three days' rest at close of period of camote planting; palay ceremony held in period	213
—, LISLIS, close of rice harvest	212, 213
—, first part, each family kills chicken and cooks it on second floor of dwelling	212
—, second part, rock fight in river between men of Bontoc and Samoki	212, 213
—, LOSKOD, at beginning of camote planting for abundant crop	213
—, OKIAD, at time of planting black beans for abundant crop	213
—, POCHANG, at close of period when rice seed is planted	207
—, SAFOSAB, harvest ceremony	212
—, SUWAT, for tall rice stalks with fruit	201
—, TOTOLOD, for protection of grown rice against birds and rats	212
—, Lumawig taught	202
AGRICULTURIST, primitive	138
ALAMIT, a dialect group of Igorot	28
ALAP village girls sickly, in Lumawig tradition	201
ALGUÉ, Rev. Fr. JOSÉ, S. J., quoted on temperature and rainfall	26, 27
ALPHABET, Bontoc, no *r* sound	14, 228
— used in writing native words	14, 228
— used to write Bontoc vocabulary	14, 227, 228
AMBAWAN, bolo of Sapao used in	130
—, hat barter of	111
—, woman's rain protector made in	122
AMERICAN ANTHROPOLOGIST, Edward Safford quoted from	228
AMERICAN army meets Bontoc Igorot in battle of Caloocan, February, 1899	37
— civilians called to Bontoc village by Igorot and insurrecto officials	38
—, influence of, on trade language	158
AMUSEMENTS	64, 65
— of children	64, 65
ANALYSIS of pottery clays	120
ANGELS, Captain, insurrecto who burned historical records of Bontoc village	35
ANIMALS, measurement of	218
—, vocabulary of names of	242–244
ANIMISM, widespread nature of	196–198
ANITO, all but one disease caused by	197
—, all deaths caused by	197, 198
—, cause of human ills, driven away by insupak	198
—, destructive, ceremony to ward, from village	214, 215
—, driving out	135
—, frightened by a particular spear	198
—, how considered by Igorot	196, 198
— metal pipes made in Sabangan, Genugan, and Takong	131
—, presence of, felt by Igorot	197, 198
—, protector of relatives	197
—, *see* PERSON; SPIRIT.	
—, spear used to scare away	128
—, spirit of the dead	60, 70, 71, 74, 75, 79, 196–198
ANTEDAO and Titipan villages, ax and bolo of	130
ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND, referred to	Footnotes 52, 53, 55, 126

Page

ANTS, eggs, of, gathered, cooked and eaten 143
ANVILS, stone 115, 126
APRON, breechcloth as an 112
—, of braided bark-fiber strings 111
ARMLETS, boar-tusk 185
ARMS, tattoo on man's 188, 189
—, tattoo on woman's 188, 189
—, warriors', or weapons 178, 179
ASIN DISTRICT, Igorot of, as slave captors 138
ASSAM, bellows used in ..... Footnote 126
ASSAULT AND BATTERY, a crime 168
—, punishment for 169, 170
ATA PEOPLE, location of ..... 19, footnote 20
ATO 49-59
— ceremonial 51
—, ceremony connected with 215
—, ceremony of adoption 215
— has governing council or intugtukan 167, 168
—, key to study of village 49
—, Lowingan and Sipaat were built in part by Lumawig 202
—, not village, makes peace 176
—, political and geographic divisions of Bontoc 49, 50
—, *see* DAPAY.
AX and bolo of Antedao and Titipan villages 130
—, Balbelasan village, when used 130
—, battle, used to cut off heads 179
— handle decorated with brass and tin 130
— made in Balbelasan village 129
—, primitive 116
— used as a knife 129
AYANGAN, a dialect group of Igorot 28

BABES, care of, by children 61, 62
—, food of 143
BAG worn in lieu of breechcloth 112
BAGNEN SHIELD, description of 124
BAGOBO PEOPLE, location of ..... 19, footnote 20
—, tradition of, regarding migration 18, 19
BALBELASAN, battle-ax made at 129
— battle-ax, where used 130
BALIWANG, battle-ax made at 129
—, metal spear blades made at 125
— spear, steel of 128
—, tubular iron pipes made at 132
—, varieties of spear blades made at 127
—, welding iron at 127
BAMBOO knife 115
— knife-blade machine 128
— spear blade used in Bontoc area 125
— spikes 125
— transportation basket 121
BANANA leaf sometimes used as a rain protector 122
—, now wild in Bontoc 81
BANAWI DISTRICT, description of the shield used in 124
—, high terraces in 90
BANAWI VILLAGES, battle at, in 1902 180
—, burial of beheaded body in 182, 183

Page

BANAWI VILLAGES, capons in 110
—, tattoos of 189
—, women do not leave, in war time 178
BARK, BEATEN, clothing of 154
—, headband, worn by short-haired men 111
BARK-FIBER blankets made in Kambulo 113
— girdle, woman's 113
— skirt, woman's weave 113
— strings used for girdles 111
— thread, spinning of 137
BARLIG, description of woman's clothing in 114
—, flayed tree-bark breechcloth made in 112
— village, hats of 111
— sought peace of Bontoc, now enemy 176
—, woman's rain protector made in 122
BARONG, Sulu Moro 130
BARTER 151-153
— of articles immediately about Bontoc village 152
—, IMPORTANCE OF, in commerce 151, 152
—, to Mayinit village 153
—, to Samoki village 152, 153
BASI, a beverage, prepared and consumed 144
—, fermented drink used at funerals 75
BASKET, of bejuco 122
— for conveying vegetables and cereals 122, 123
—, locust 123
— made in Tulubin 122
—, TRANSPORTATION, bamboo 121
—, made in Samoki and Bontoc 121, 122
—, of Benguet 121
BASKET-WORK 121-123
—, barter of 152
— hats 121
—, production and use of 121-123
BASKET workers, men as 121
BATAK people, location of ..... Footnote 20
BATANES ISLANDS, probability of rice terraces in 89
BATHING among Igorot 61
BATTLE, how it frequently ends 179, 180
—, severest known, at Banawi 180
BATTLE-AX, Bontoc 129
— made at Baliwang 129
BEAD hairdress, woman's 186
— necklace 186
BEANS, ceremony for abundant crop of 213
—, cooked and eaten 140
—, preparation of, for storing 106
—, storing 106
—, varieties of, grown 98
BEARERS, woman burden, in Kiapa area of Benguet Province 134
BEESWAX used for making pipe models 131
BEHEADED PERSON, future life of 198
—, spirit of, name of 196
BEJUCO, barter of 152

	Page
BEJUCO basket	122
— belt, woman's braided string	113
— GIRDLE WORN in Mayinit	112
— in Tukukan, Kanyu, and Tulubin	111
— lacing on shields	124
BELLOWS, Malayan, used in Assam, Salwin, Sumatra, Java, Philippines, and Madagascar ..... Footnote 126, 126, 127,	131
BELT, woman's braided string bejuco	113
BENGUET IGOROT, referred to	34
— vocabulary 232,	233
BENGUET IGOROT LANGUAGE, relation of, to Malay, Sulu, and Bontoc Igorot 231-	233
—, suffixes of personal pronouns	230
—, verbal suffixes of	231
BENGUET PROVINCE, dance in	194
—, dog eating in	111
—, tattoo in	189
—, women burden bearers in	134
BENGUET transportation basket	121
BEQUEST of property 164,	165
BERI-BERI	72
BESAO, near Sagada, whetstones of	129
BEVERAGE, fermented, made from various meat and vegetable juices	145
BEVERAGES 143-	145
— consumed 143-	145
— seldom drunk at meals 143,	144
BIKOL people, location of ..... Footnote	19
BILAN people, location of ..... Footnote	20
BIRD catching with a broom	85
— SCARER, acoustic	102
—, water power 101,	102
BIRD, RICE, once a scolded daughter, folk tale of	223
BIRDS, omen, called ichu, warn Igorot of pending evil	198
—, protection of rice from	100
BIRTH, absence of Igorot celebration of 59,	60
BITWAGAN, village of, competitor in pottery with Samoki	117
BLADDER of the hog used in lieu of breechcloth	112
BLANKET worn only by old men and women	112
BLINDNESS among Igorot	46
BLOWGUN in Paragua	123
—, weapon of the Malayans	123
BLUMENTRITT quoted on institution to preserve chastity of the Igorot	67
BOAR-TUSK armlets	185
— necklace	185
BODY, HUMAN, life after death of	196
—, vocabulary of 235-	237
BOILERS, Chinese iron	117
BOILS and swellings	73
BOLO, as a tool	116
—, Bontoc, where it comes from	130
— of Ilokano	130
—, Sapao, used in Ambawan and the Quiangan area	130
BOLO scabbard of the Quiangan area	130
BONTOC CULTURE 30-	35
—, cause of limit of	33
—, distinguishing marks of 32,	33
BONTOC CULTURE AREA, breechcloth worn as apron in	112
— group 30-	47
—, people surrounding	34
—, spear used in	125
BONTOC GIRLS industrious, in Lumawig tradition	201
BONTOC IGOROT, designation of self	33
—, ethnological knowledge of	34
—, history of 35-	39
— language, relation of, to Malay, Sulu, and Benguet Igorot 231-	233
— meet Americans in battle of Caloocan, February, 1899	37
— persecuted by insurrectos	37
— shoot insurrecto officials in their village, causing crisis	38
— vocabulary 232-	248
BONTOC man 33-	47
—, meaning of word	33
— pueblo, trails to 30,	31
—, Samoki, a sister pueblo of	117
— shield, description of the	124
— to Lias, migration of people of	49
— VILLAGE, age of	50
—, buildings in	50
—, location of	48
—, political divisions of	49
—, population of	49
—, skulls buried by ato Sigichan of 181,	182
—, skulls now in ato Sigichan of	181
BORNEO, ceremonial buildings in Footnote	53
—, origin of head hunting in 171-	174
BOW and arrow	123
— employed by the Ibilao of southeastern Nueva Vizcaya	123
— employed by the Tinguian group of Abra	123
BOY, when and how usually first tattooed 181-	188
BOYS' basket-work hat	111
— girdle	111
— wear the breechcloth at 15 years of age	112
BRASS or tin, ax handle decorated with	130
— wire and cartridge metal used for making pipes	131
BREAKFAST, prepared by the man	148
—, time of	148
BREECHCLOTH, bag, worn in lieu of	112
—, commonly worn as an apron in Bontoc and Samoki	112
—, flayed tree bark, made in Barlig, Tulubin, Titipan, Agawa, and other pueblos	112
—, measuring, method of	218
—, trade in, cotton	112
—, varieties of	112
— worn during menstruation	118
— worn by boys at the age of 15	112

Page

BRONZE gongs 189
BUILDING the sementera 89–93
BUILDINGS in Bontoc village 50
BUKIDNON people, location of ..... Footnote 20
BUNAYAN, a dialect group of Igorot 28
BURIAL 74–80
— of beheaded man 80
— of unmarried people 80
—, separate, for old and rich men 78
BURNS, flesh, cure for 73

CAGAYAN people, location of ..... Footnote 19
CALENDAR 218–221
CAMOTE beds, how prepared 95, 96
—, ceremony for abundant crop of 213
—, cooked and eaten 140
—, harvesting of 105
—, red, varieties of 98
— sementeras or garden plats, burials in 79
— stick, used by women 116
— storing 106
—, white, varieties of 98
CARABAO 107, 108
— eaten at funeral feast 75–77
— eaten both ceremonially and merely as food 140
—, killed, cooked, and eaten 142
— meat, "dried" 142
— obtained by Igorot from Tinguian people of Abra 108
—, size, age, and value of, how shown 218
—, WILD 81, 82, 108
—, ceremony to attract to Bontoc 81, 82
—, method of hunting 82
—, number recently killed 82
CARE of child in parents' dwelling 61, 62
CARTRIDGES, metal, used for making pipes 131
CASE, of nouns, how represented 229
CAST IRON POTS, Chinese, used for making weapons 126
CAT, wild 84, 85
CATTLE in Benguet Province 107
CENSUS of an Igorot village 42
CEREALS, basket for conveying 122, 123
CEREMONIAL songs 152
CEREMONIALS, absence of formalism in uttering 207
—, religious, in Bontoc 48
— connected with agriculture 207–213
— connected with climate 213, 214
— connected with head taking 214, 215, 222
— for the sick 195–200
—, method of working off superfluous energy 154
CEREMONY, CHAKA, first day, each family kills hog 207, 208
—, second day, first part, woman invites ancestral anito to feast 208, 209
—, second day, second part, man kills chicken and petitions blessing 208, 209

Page

CEREMONY, CHAKA, third day, each rice sementera is visited and invocation asked for abundance 209, 210
—, fourth day, each family has a feast of fish 210
—, fifth day, Patay ceremony for whole village in sacred grove 210, 211
CEREMONY connected with ato 215
— for propitious head-hunting, places for 177, 178
—, head 180, 181
— of breaking peace 176, 177
— of head taking, folk tale, part of 225, 226
— of peace 176
— over body of beheaded man 182
CERVANTES, capital of Lepanto-Bontoc Province 31
CHAKON, first season of year 215–220
— season, periods of 220
CHAMORRO language of Guam, cited 228–231
CHAOWI, home of Lumawig in Bontoc 201
CHARACTERISTICS of Igorot people, brief summary of 14, 15
CHARCOAL, pine, fuel of 126
CHARITABLE views of the Igorot 71
CHASTITY of the Igorot 67
CHICKEN 109, 110
—, eaten only ceremonially 140
—, eaten at funerals 77
—, markings of 109, 110
—, mentioned 81, 85, 107, 109, 110
CHICKEN POX 71
CHILD 45, 46, 61–66
—, care of 61, 62
—, mortality of 43, 45
—, pathology of 46, 47
—, somatology of 45, 46
CHILDBIRTH 59, 60
— of spirit people 197
CHILDREN, age when, leave home to sleep in olag or pabafunan 62
—, care of babes by 61, 62
—, guarding palay sementeras from birds by 134
—, heads of, not taken by Bontoc village 182
—, how address parents 155
—, parent's love of 59, 60
CHINAMWI ceremony 214
CHINESE bar iron used for making weapons 126
—, early imports to Manila 190
— merchants in Philippines, 1250 A. D. 190
CHOLERA, rice 71
CHRISTIAN Filipinos, former politeness of 155
— named and located ..... Footnote 19
CIRCUMCISION 63, 64
— done by men 134
CLAY, analysis of pottery 120
—, grass used for firing 119, 120
—, pipes of, made in Agawa 131

	Page
CLAY pits near Samoki village	114
— used in making Samoki pottery	117
CLIMATE, ceremonies connected with	213, 214
—, CEREMONY, chinamwi, to stop cold	214
—, Fakil, for rain	213
—, Kalob, to stop cold, windy rains	214
CLOTH, native woven, bartered	153
CLOTHING, dress, and adornment, vocabulary of	238, 239
—, production and use of	111–114
CLOUDS are smoke	216, 217
COCKFIGHTING, Philippine sport	194
COFFEE berries eaten by wild-cats	84
COFFINS, pine	77–80
COINS, their use in sales	155
COLD and fog, ceremony to stop	214
COLDS	73
COMMERCE	151–159
—, Continued Free	159
—, Fortuitous	158
—, instinct for	151
—, Irregular Intrusive	158
—, Irregular Invited	158
—, peace important factor in developing	154
—, Periodic Free	158, 159
—, stages of	158, 159
CONQUEST	138
CONSANGUINEAL and social relationships, vocabulary of	238
CONSONANTS, initial, interchange of	220
CONSUMPTION, a disease	72
CONSUMPTION of foods and beverages	139–148
CONSTABULARY building near Bontoc village	49
CONTENTS, table of	5–8
COOK, Captain, referred to, by Ellis	Footnote 18
COPPER, mined by Igorot in present Benguet and Lepanto Provinces when Spaniards came	190
— earrings	185
— pot, making of, in folk tale	221, 222
CORDILLERA CENTRAL	23–27
COSMOLOGY and physical forces, Lumawig gave and controls	216, 217
—, vocabulary of	234, 235
COTTON, tree, used for making fire	133
—, woman's clothing made by Ilokano	114
COUNCILS of old men	51
COUNTERFEIT money, made by Igorot	155
COURTSHIP among the Igorot	66, 67
COWIE, ANDSON, quoted on Sulu language	232, 233
CRABS, eaten	141, 142
CRIME, DETECTION OF	168, 169
—, blood test	169
—, chicken-gall test	169
—, egg test	169
—, hot-water test	169
—, rice-chewing test	168, 169
—, PUNISHMENT OF, for adultery	170
—, for assault and battery	169, 170
—, for stealing	169

	Page
CRIMES cited, three definite, in detail	170, 171
—, detection and punishment for	168–171
— named	168
CROW, origin of, folk tale of	224, 225
—, superstition in regard to	79
—, warns Igorot of pending evil	198
CRUSTACEANS, eaten	87, 141, 142
CULTIVATING crops	99, 100
CULTURE, diversity of, among Igorot peoples	28, 29
— grade of primitive people better determined by economic standard than by any other single standard	81
CULTURAL movements, historical direction of	89
— production	88, 137
CURRENCY, palay	156
—, denominations of	156
DALRYMPLE, ALEX, quoted by Roth on head-hunting in Borneo	173
DANCE, always accompanied by gong music	150
—, funeral	194
—, instinct to	65
—, man's war	194
— movements	193
— of men	193
— of women, nature of	193
DANCERS, almost always play gong	193
DANCING	193, 194
DAPAY in villages of Sagada, Agawa, Takong, Balili, and Alap, same as ato in Bontoc	49
DATA, village of, pottery of	117
DAYS, REST OR SACRED, by whom determined and announced	205
—, occur about every ten days	206, 207
—, fine for working in field on	206, 207
DEAF and dumb dead person, spirit of, name of	196
DEATH	74–80
— and burial	74–80
—, cause of	74
—, life after, of all things	196
—, naturalness of	75, 76
— not taken sorrowfully	74, 75
—, philosophy of	74, 78
—, or transformation of spirit people	193
DEBT OF LIFE, cause for continuation of head-hunting	172
— illustrated	183
DECORATION	187–189
—, the permanent adornment of the person	187–189
DEER, methods of hunting	82
DEMOCRACY, government of Bontoc	167
DESERTION of husband or wife	70
DEVELOPMENT of Igorot, future, some reasons for believing in	151
DIALECT, separate, Bontoc language	227
DIARRHEA	72
DIAZ, Friar CASIMIRO, cited	123
DIKES, STONE, OF SEMENTERAS	134

Page

DIKES, STONE, OF SEMENTERAS, weeding of ... 114
DINWIDDIE, Governor WILLIAM, referred to ... Footnote 182
DIPPER, wooden ... 116
DISEASE ... 71–74
—, cause of ... 71
DISTRIBUTION, economic ... 137–138
—, of wealth, natural ... 137
DIVISION of labor ... 134–136
DIVISIONS of Bontoc village, political ... 49
DIVORCE ... 69–70
—, cause for ... 69–70
— of Lumawig ... 203
—, ownership of property in case of ... 69
—, when no ... 203
DOG ... 110–111
— eaten only ceremonially ... 140
— eaten in Benguet Province ... 111
— killed, cooked, and eaten ... 142, 143
—, peculiarities of ... 110
—, superstition regarding ... 79
—, trained hunting ... 82
DORMITORIES in Bontoc pueblo, married man's and visitor's ... 51
DREAMS, sources of belief in spirit world ... 197
DRESS ... 184–187
—, adornments, movable, of people 184–187
—, head, man's ... 184, 185
—, worn on girdle ... 184
DRUNKENNESS at funeral ... 76
DRUM, wooden, Igorot, where found ... 192
DWELLING, family ... 55–59
—, family, described ... 55–59
— in Bontoc pueblo, construction and description of ... 55
—, value of ... 161
DYSENTERY, acute ... 72

EAR, mutilation of, permanent decoration ... 187
— plugs ... 184, 185
— slit ... 184, 185
— stretchers ... 184, 185
EARRINGS, copper ... 185
—, gold ... 185
—, gold, bartered ... 153
—, silver ... 185
EARTH, all bones ... 216
—, crumbling, warn Igorot of pending evil ... 198
EARTHQUAKES, Lumawig makes by shoving earth back and forth ... 217
EATING trays ... 128
ECKMAN, Capt. ELMER A., referred to 13
—, with Lieutenant Powles organized Igorot Constabulary ... 38
ECONOMIC life ... 81–166
— standard better than any other single standard to determine culture grade of primitive people ... 81
EGGS, hard boiled, fed to babes ... 143
—, stale, eaten ... 143

Page

ELLIS' POLYNESIAN RESEARCHES quoted on migrations of Pacific peoples ... Footnote 18
ELTON, Lieut. F., quoted on tribes in Solomon Islands ... Footnote 53
ENEMY, each village an ... 175
ENERGY, method of working off superfluous ... 194
ENGINEERING skill of Igorot irrigators ... 92, 93
ENGLISH-SULU-MALAY vocabulary, etc., quoted ... 232, 233
EPIDEMICS, absence of ... 71
ESTATE of Somkad, amicable division of ... 76
"ETHICS LOCK" on an Igorot dwelling in Bontoc pueblo ... 59
ETIQUETTE, almost no ... 195
EVIL, Igorot warned of pending ... 198
EXCHANGE, and wages of labor ... 136, 137
—, the medium of ... 154, 155
EXORCIST, functions of ... 198–200
—, household, functions of ... 199, 200
—, insupak ... 198–200
EXPENSE and profit in agriculture ... 107
EYES, sore ... 73

FAKIL ceremony ... 218
FAMILY ... 59–71
— breakfasts together at dwelling ... 148
— exorcists ... 199, 200
—, love foundation of ... 68
— of spirit people ... 197
— sups together in dwelling ... 148, 149
FATALISM in disease ... 73
FATANGA, brother-in-law of Lumawig, turned to a rock for doubting Lumawig's power ... 202
—, male ancestor of present people in Bontoc village ... 201
—, namesake of ancestor, brother-in-law of Lumawig ... 202
FAWI, man's ceremonial building among Bontoc Igorot ... 50–52
—, public ceremonial building ... 50–52
FAYU, dwelling of wealthier family ... 55–58
FEAST, marriage ... 82
FEASTING among the Igorot ... 79
FEET, abnormal, among Igorot ... 46, 47
FERTILIZER, ash as a ... 97
—, hog manure as ... 97
FERTILIZING the soil ... 97
FERRULE, bejuco, used on spear shaft ... 128
—, iron, used on spear shaft ... 128
— used on ax ... 130
FEVERS ... 71
FIGHT, annual rock, between men of Bontoc and Samoki ... 212
FILIPINOS, Christian, former politeness of ... 195
FINLEY, FRANK, goes to settle disagreement between Igorot and insurrecto officials in Bontoc village in 1901 ... 38
FIRE, friction machine for making ... 133

	Page
FIRE making, with percussion machine	133
—, primitive making of	133, 134
—, Sagada flint for making	133
—, tree cotton, used for igniting	133
FIRE SYRINGE of the Tinguian people	134
FISH, eaten both ceremonially and merely as food	140
— not plentiful	81
—, preparation, cooking, and eating of	141
— trap	86–87
FISHING	85–87
FLESH, ceremonial eating of	140
—, nonceremonial eating of	140
—, "preserved"	142
FLINT, for making fire	133
FLOOD, Bontoc story of	201
FLUTES, bamboo, scarcity of	192
FOG, and cold, ceremony to stop	214
FOLK TALE	221–226
—, coling, the serpent eagle, origin of	222, 223
—, crow, the, and large lizard, origin of	224, 225
—, eagle, serpent, or coling, once an abused son	222, 223
—, head, my father's, who took	225, 226
—, head-hunting, origin of	221, 222
—, kaag, the monkey, origin of	223, 224
—, snake, the, origin of	225
—, sun man and moon woman	174
—, sun, the man, and woman, the moon; or, origin of head-hunting	221, 222
—, sun, the, took head of Bontoc man	225, 226
—, tilin, the rice bird, origin of	223
— teaches penalty to parents who abuse their children	222-224
FOODS	139–143
— and beverages, vocabulary of	240
— eaten by Igorot	139-143
—, flesh, preferences for	180
—, practically all animals are eaten	139
—, vegetable, preferences for	139
FORBES, H. O., quoted on tribes in Timor Island	Footnote 53
FORESTS, ownership of	162
FORMALITIES, almost no	195
FORMOSA, probability of rice terraces in	89
FORMOSAN languages similar to those of Korea	227
— people, same parent stock as Bontoc Igorot	227
FOWL, wild, domesticated by Ibilao people	110
—, wild, snaring of	83-85
FRICTION machine for making fire	133
FUEL of pine charcoal	126
FUKAN, adventures of	203
— becomes wife of man in Tinglayan	203
—, children of, killed eight times by village of Kanyu	203
FUKAN, dead children of, buried in Bontoc, become groves of sacred trees	203
—, female ancestor of present people in Bontoc village	201
— leaves house in Tinglayan and dies	204
—, wife of Lumawig, divorced	203
—, wife of Lumawig, namesake of her ancestor	201
FUNERAL, part played by corpse in	75
FUTURE LIFE, all things have	196
GADDAN, a dialect group of Igorot	28
— people, location of	Footnote 19
GALL, chicken's, warns Igorot of pending evil	198
GAMBLING, Philippine sport	194
GAME, greatest, of chance and skill	194
GAMES	194, 195
— of boys	65
— of chance, common, Bontoc Igorot has none	194
—, fewness of	64–68
GENDER of nouns, how represented	229
GENERAL social life	48–80
GEOMETRIC basic of tattoo	188
GESTURES	195
GHOST, belief in	196
GIRDLE, woman's heirloom	186, 187
—, bark-fiber strings used for	111
— of metal chain	112
— used as an apron	111
—, varieties of	111
—, woman's, of woven bark fiber	113
GIRLS, nudity of, until 8 or 10 years of age	113
GLAZING POTTERY	117
—, resin gum used for	120
GOD, Igorot, Lumawig	200–204
GODDEN, GERTRUDE M., quoted on Nāgā hill tribes of India	Footnote 53
GODWIN-AUSTEN, Major, quoted on Gāro hill tribes of India	Footnote 52
GOESSMANN, CHAS. A., quoted on composition of salt	147
GOITER	73
GOLD EARRINGS	185
—, bartered	153
GONG, bronze	189
—, by whom played	190
—, how played	190
—, how played in Balili and Alap villages	191
—, music of	190
—, music of, always accompanied by dance	190
—, music of, rhythm of	190, 191
—, size of	190
—, two classes	190
—, where made	190
GOVERNMENT, Bontoc, mainly aboriginal	167
—, simplest democracy	167

	Page
GOVERNMENT buildings near Bontoc pueblo, Spanish	48, 49
GOVERNMENT LABORATORY, Manila, quoted on composition of salt	147
GRANARY, Bontoc rice	48
— for storing rice	106
— value of	161
GRATITUDE, almost never expression	195
"GREENS" cooked and eaten	140
GROUP LABOR, meaning of term	136
GROVES, religious	48
GUNS in recent battles	180
HAIR, curly, prevalence of	41
—, facial	41, 42
HAIR DRESS of beads, woman's	185, 186
HAMMER, steel, used for finishing weapons	126
—, stone	115, 126, 127
HARVEST, rice, ceremony for	212
HARVESTERS, difficulty in photographing	104
HARVESTING	103-105
HAT, basket-work	111-121
—, rain, of Bontoc area	111
—, sleeping	80
— of Barlig village	111
— trade, in Ambawan	111
HEAD, ceremony to determine who took	214, 222
HEADACHE	73
HEADBAND, of beaten bark	111
HEAD CEREMONY	180, 181
— at Samoki village	180, 181
HEADDRESS, man's	184, 185
—, woman's	185, 186
HEAD-HUNTERS, people have been, for untold generations	171
HEAD-HUNTING, greatest game of chance and skill	194
—, war and	171-183
—, beliefs arise to support	174
—, causes for, summarized	174
—, causes assigned for	174
— ceremony, for propitious event	177, 178
— due to desire for emotional activity	175
— fostered by Spaniards	36, 37
— in Borneo, causes for	172-174
— in Borneo, passion for	173
—, origin of folk tale	221, 222
—, probable cause for continuation of	172
— tendency of Igorot strengthened by Spaniards	39
HEADMAN, no, in Bontoc	166, 167
HEADS, number taken in Borneo by ancestor matter of boast by descendent	172
HEAD TAKER, tattoo of	188, 189
HEAD TAKER'S TATTOO, importance of and probable influence of	188
—, meaning of	189
HEAD TAKING, causes of, continued	175
HEAD TAKING ceremony, Changtu, to ward off from village destructive anito	214, 215
—, Kafokab, to determine who took the head	214, 222
—, ceremonies connected with	214, 215, 222
— folk tale, part of head-taking ceremony	225, 226
— in Bontoc village, not largely due to superstition	175
—, little formality about	179
—, possible first cause	172
—, story about origin of	174
HEALING of sores and bruises, slow	73
HEALTH of Igorot	71
HEIRLOOM girdle, woman's	186, 187
HISTORICAL SKETCH of the Bontoc man	35-39
HISTORY of Bontoc Igorot	35-39
HOG	108, 109
—, castration of	109
—, ceremonial killing of, by Benguet Igorot	141
— ceremonial killing of, by Bontoc Igorot	140, 141
— culture in Bontoc	108, 109
—, domestic, eaten only ceremonially	140
—, eaten at funeral	77
—, "farming" of	109
—, half wild	108, 109
— manure a fertilizer	97
—, preparation, cooking, and eating of	141
—, size of, how shown	218
—, wild, eaten merely as food	140
—, wild, method of hunting	82, 83
—, wild, protection of growing rice from	102
HOME and field, vocabulary of	242
— life in Bontoc, absence of	62
HORSE racing, Philippine sport	194
HORSES in Benguet, Lepanto-Bontoc, and Abra Provinces	107
HOSTILITY of the people, interferes with trade	117
HULBERT, HOMER B., quoted on Formosan languages	227
HUMAN being, place of defecation of	109
— being, life of, after death	190
— body, conditions of, vocabulary of	237, 238
— being's spirit, speech	196
HUMOR of Igorot	105
HUNT, Dr. TRUMAN K., appointed lieutenant-governor Bontoc subprovince	38
—, goes to settle disagreement between Igorot and insurrecto officials in Bontoc village in 1901	38
—, lieutenant-governor, referred to	13, footnote 182
HUNTING	81-85
IBILAO PEOPLE, "debt of life" the cause of head taking given by	174
— domesticate wild fowl	110

	Page
IBILAO PEOPLE employ the bow	123
—, location of	19, footnote 20
IGOROT agriculture	88
— basket work	114
— clothing, production of	114
— culture group	23–29
— has natural money	117
— land	23–27
— loom	114
—, meaning of word	27
— night clothing, absence of	113
— pottery	114
—, "stone age" of	115
— weapons	123
IGOROT PEOPLE	27–29
—, brief summary of general characteristics of	14, 15
—, dialect groups of	28
—, diversity of culture of	28, 29
—, habitat of	24–26
—, location of	27–29, footnote 20
—, numbers of	27, 28
ILLUSTRATIONS, credit for	13
—, list of	9–12
ILOKANO cotton, woman's clothing made of	114
—, influence of, on trade language	157
— men in Bontoc village	48
— people in Bontoc village	38, 39
— people, location of	Footnote 19
— presidentes	167
— weapon used in Agawa, Sagada, Balili, Alap, etc	130
ILONGOT people, same as Ibilao	Footnote 20
IMBECILITY among Igorot	47
IMMORTALITY of spirit of all things	196
IMPLEMENT and utensil production	114–123
— and utensil, metal, production and uses of	116, 117
— and utensil, wooden, production and uses of	115, 116
— used by women of Bontoc	116
INDUSTRY of certain period in year gives its name to period	220
— of Igorot	89, 90
INFANTICIDE of twin, custom breaking down	60
INFANTS, care of Igorot	61
—, Igorot method of feeding	61
INHERITANCE and bequest	164, 165
— by children at marriage	164
— by children seldom before marriage	164
—, law of	164, 165
— of salt houses	145, 146
— of property	164, 165
—, usually on day of funeral of deceased	165
INJURED people, killing of	47
INSANE dead person, spirit of, name of	196
INSANITY among Igorot	47
INSTRUMENTAL music	189–192
INSUPAK, benefits to sick by	199
—, compared to healers of other primitive peoples	199
INSUPAK, exorcist	198–200
—, how a person becomes an	199
—, methods of	198, 199
—, treatment by	198, 199
INSURRECTO officials in Bontoc village shot by Igorot	38
INSURRECTOS drive Spaniards from Bontoc	36, 37
— persecute Igorot	37
INTEREST on loans	163
INTRODUCTION to study of Bontoc man	33–35
INTUGTUKAN, council of old men	167, 168
—, functions of	167, 168
—, governing body in Bontoc village	32, 33
IPUKAO, Bontoc Igorot name of self	33
—, dialect group of Igorot	28
—, meaning of word	33
IRON boilers, Chinese	117
—, Chinese bar, used for making weapons	126
—, Chinese, cast, used for making weapons	126
— implements, utensils, and weapons	115
— smiths	127
— spears	125
—, tempering of	127
—, tubular pipes made in Baliwang	132
— welding, in Baliwang	127
IRRIGATING, agricultural	91–93
— dams, built at Bontoc	91–93
—, methods of	91–93
— rice lands	91–93
ISANAY, a dialect group of Igorot	28
ITCH	72
JACKETS not generally worn	114
JAVA, bellows used in	Footnote 126
—, rice terraces in	89
JAW, human, handle of gong	190
— of captured head, used on victor's gong	180
JENKS, Dr. ALBERT ERNEST, Chief, The Ethnological Survey, letter of transmittal of	3
—, photographs by	13
JEW'S-HARP, music of	191, 192
—, widespread among primitive Malayan peoples	191
JOURNAL OF THE ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND, referred to	Footnote 52, 53
KALINGA, a dialect group of Igorot	28
— shield, description of	124
KALOB ceremony	214
KAMBULO VILLAGE, woven bark-fiber blankets made in	113
KANYU VILLAGE, winnowing tray made in	123
KASIP, last season of year	219, 220
— season, periods of	220
KATYUFONG, dwelling of poor family	58
KAYKAY or common agricultural implement	115, 116

[illegible]
— [illegible] 229
— [illegible] 227
— [illegible] 229
— [illegible] 227
Lip gesture in Philippines ... 195
Liquor, fermented ... 116
Lizard, large, origin of folk tale ... 224, 225
[illegible]
— [illegible] 201
— [illegible] 204
— [illegible] 202
— [illegible] 205
— [illegible] 204
[illegible] 218
[illegible] 123
— [illegible] types of [illegible] 23–26
— [illegible] description [illegible] 23–27
— [illegible] Footnote 20
[illegible] 168

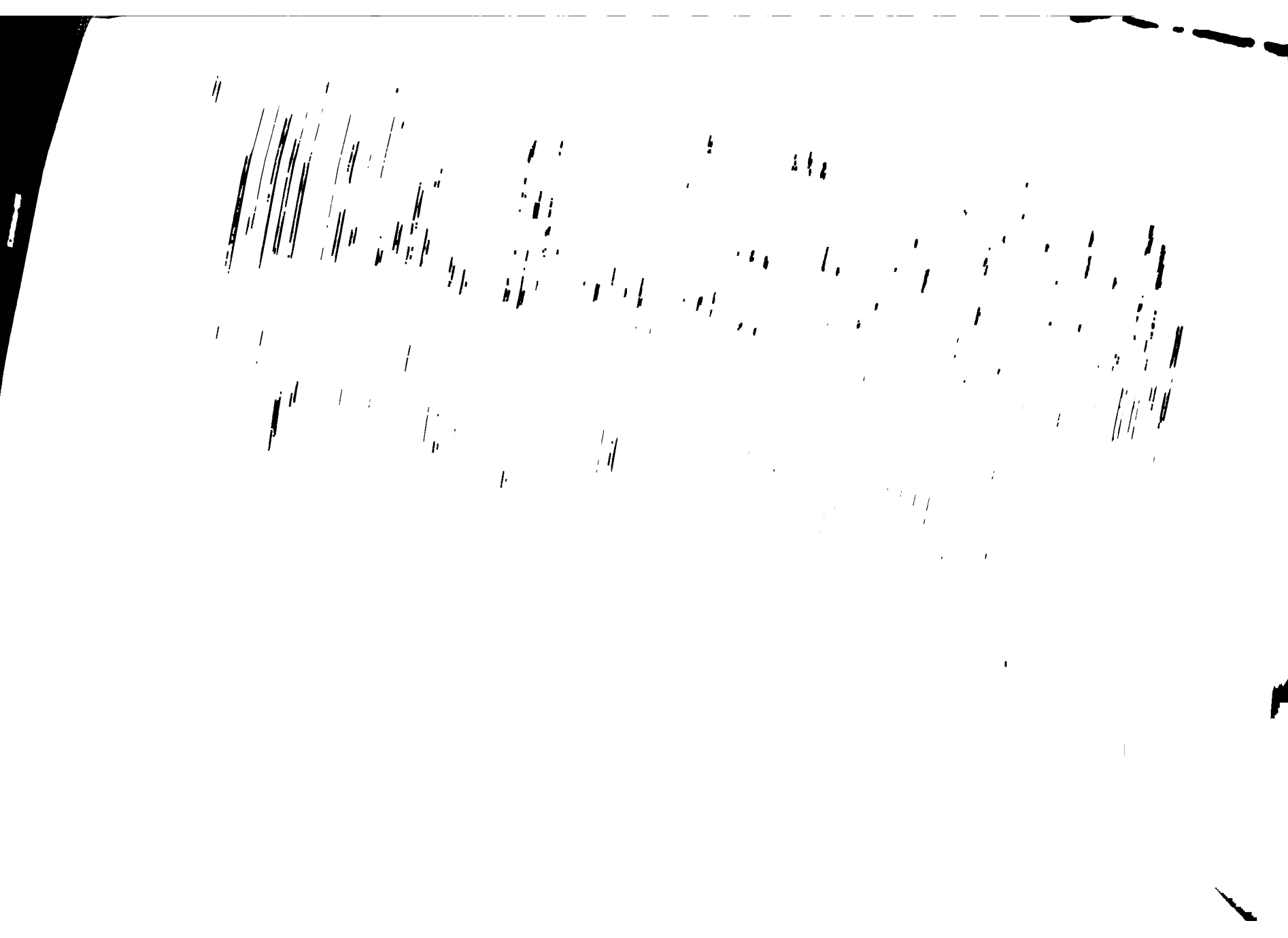
McDougall, Mrs. F. F., quoted by Roth on origin of head-hunting in Borneo ... 173
Madagascar, bellows used in.. Footnote 126
Maguindanao Moro people, location of ... Footnote 20
Maize, cooked and eaten ... 140
—, harvesting of ... 105
—, storing of ... 106

Page

MALAY dictionary, quoted 232, 233
— language, relation of, to Sulu, Benguet and Bontoc Igorot 231-238
— vocabulary 232, 233
MALAYAN bellows 125, 126, 131, 132
—, blowgun natural weapon of 123
—, modern, great gamester 194
— never created national organization 167
—, primitive, language of, widespread 227
—, primitive, not naturally polite 195
—, primitive, supposed birthplace of .. 18
—, primitive, widespread early movements of 52-55
—, ravages of southern 138
—, spear of 123
MAN 39-43
—, athletic development of 40, 41
—, basket worker 121
—, beheaded, burial of, in Banawi .. 182, 183
—, beheaded, ceremony over body of .. 182
—, beheaded, future life of 175
—, brachycephalic 40
—, clothing of 111-113
—, clothing of, production and use of 111-113
—, dance of 191
—, dolichocephalic, decidedly not 40
—, Igorot has little knowledge of 217
—, measurements of 40
—, mortality of 42, 43
—, natural pedestrian 40, 41
—, occupation of 134, 135
—, pathology of 46, 47
—, prehistoric, in Malay Archipelago 17, 18
—, somatology of 39-43
—, tattoo of 188, 189
—, young, invited by young woman to olag 68
MANDAYA people, location of ..... Footnote 20
MANGILOT, Igorot man, real property of 161
MANGIYAN people, location of .. 19, footnote 20
MANOBO people, location of .... 19, footnote 20
MAO, a tribe in India ..... Footnote 53
MARKET, the 158, 159
MARKS of Bontoc culture 32, 33
MARRIAGE 68, 70
— among the Igorot 66-68
—, ceremonies of, among the Igorot .. 69
—, children's inheritance before and after 164
— of children, rich, frequently pledged early 68
—, Lumawig entreated at 69
— of spirit people 197
— trial 69
— union in Bontoc, productiveness of 59
—, what unions forbidden 68
MARRIED women in Bontoc village, social life of 58
MARSH, Major, follows Aguinaldo through Bontoc 37, 38

Page

MARSH, Major, leaves few American soldiers in Bontoc village under volunteer lieutenant 38
—, lieutenant of, appoints insurrecto officials in Bontoc 38
MARTIN, CHARLES, Government photographer, photographs by 13
MAYINIT VILLAGE, importance of barter to 153
— seat of salt manufacture 145
—, spear shafts made in 128
MEALS and mealtime 148, 149
MEASLES 71
MEASURE, dry, no 218
—, linear 217
—, linear, span and half span 218
—, linear, spread of arms and half-spread arms 218
— of breechcloth 218
— of distance on trail 218
— of exchange value 155, 156
— of liquids, no 218
— of rice sementeras 218
MEDIUM of exchange 154, 155
MELANESIANS, men's hall of ..... Footnote 53
MEN, rulers of the village 135
MENSTRUATION, breechcloth worn during 113
MENSURATION 217-221
MENTAL LIFE 216-226
—, paucity of, shown 221
MERRILL, ELMER D., botanist Government Laboratories, quoted 120
METAL implements and utensils 116, 117
— pipes 130
— spear blades made in Baliwang 125
— weapons, production and uses of 125-130
—, when used 115
METALLURGY, Igorot has some practical knowledge of 126
MIGRATION of Bontoc people before advent of Spaniards 49
— of Pacific people ..... Footnote 18
MILLET, cooked and eaten 140
—, harvesting of 105
—, storing of 106
—, varieties of 98
MIMETIC DANCE of man 194
— of woman, beginning of 193, 194
MINDANAO, peoples of ..... 19, footnote 20
MINDORO, people of ..... 19, footnote 20
MODESTY among Igorot, modern, absence of 67
MOHAMMEDAN Filipinos named and located ..... Footnote 20
—, *same as* MORO.
MOLLUSKS eaten 141, 142
MONOGAMY in Bontoc 59
MONEY, a natural, Igorot has 117
—, medium of exchange often characteristic product of a community 155
—, native, seems unique in Philippines 154
—, primitive, fully developed 154-156



Page

PHILIPPINE ARCHIPELAGO, peopling of ... 18-20
PIGS, feeding of ... 116
—, food for ... 134
PINEAPPLE now wild in Bontoc ... 81
PINTENG, function of ... 198
—, spirit of all beheaded people ... 196
PIPE, beeswax used for making models of ... 131
—, cast metal, smoking, made in Tukukan ... 132
—, casting of metal ... 132
—, clay, made in Agawa ... 131
—, clay, wood, and metal ... 130
—, color of ... 131
— made in Titipan, Ankiling, Sagada, Bontoc, and Samoki ... 132
—, making "anito" ... 132
—, making of, with brass wire and cartridge metal ... 131
—, metal "anito," made in Sabangan, Genugan, and Takong ... 131
— production, and smoking ... 130-133
—, varieties of wood used in ... 130
PIRATES, Malayan ... 18
POLITICAL divisions of Bontoc village ... 49
— life and control ... 167, 168
POPULATION of Bontoc village ... 49
POTS used for making sugar ... 126
POTTERS, women ... 117-120
POTTERY ... 117-121
—, barter of ... 152
—, Bitwagan as a competitor with Samoki in ... 117
—, glazing of ... 117
—, Igorot ... 114
— of Samoki ... 117-121
— of the pueblo of Data ... 117
—, production and uses of ... 117-121
—, resin used for glazing ... 120
—, Samoki, as medium of exchange ... 155
— sold to Antedao, Fidelisan, Sagada, Titipan, and other nearby pueblos ... 117
POWLESS, Lieut. LOUIS A., with Lieutenant (now Captain) Eckman, organized Igorot Constabulary ... 38
PRAYERS to Lumawig ... 200, 201
PREFACE to Bontoc Igorot study ... 13-15
PREGNANCY before marriage, frequent 66-68
PRESIDENTE, institution of, established by Spaniard ... 39, 167
PROVINCE of Lepanto, woman's clothing in ... 114
PRIESTS, called Patay, petition Lumawig for general well-being 205, 206
—, called Waku, decide ceremonial and rest days ... 205
—, earmarks of, scarcely shown by Igorot so-called priesthood ... 205
—, one class of, drives away storms and petitions for good crops ... 206
—, only men are public ... 135
PRIESTHOOD, a developing ... 205, 206
PRIMITIVE agriculturist ... 138
— fire making ... 133, 134

Page

PRIMOGENITURE recognized ... 165
PRODUCTION, economic ... 81-137
— and uses of basket work ... 121-123
— and uses of clothing ... 111-114
— and uses of metal weapons ... 125-130
— and uses of weapons ... 123-130
— and uses of wooden weapons ... 124, 125
—, cultural ... 88
—, natural ... 81-88
— of metal implements and utensils ... 116, 117
— of pipes, and smoking ... 130-133
— of utensils and implements ... 114-123
—, vegetal ... 81-88
PRONOUNS ... 230, 231
—, personal ... 230
—, personal, possessive suffixes of ... 230
—, possessive ... 230
PROPERTY, bequest of ... 164, 165
—, idea of, clear ... 159
—, inheritance of ... 164, 165
—, lease of ... 163
—, loan of ... 163
—, modern disputes regarding ... 159
—, personal, of group ... 160
—, personal, of group, giving way to personal property of individual 160
—, personal, of individual, of what it may consist ... 159, 160
—, personal, of richest man in Bontoc village ... 160
—, public ... 162
—, real, of individual ... 160, 161
—, real, of richest man in Bontoc village ... 161
—, rent of ... 163
—, sale of, usual causes for ... 162, 163
—, transmission of ... 70
— right ... 159-163
PROSTITUTES ... 78
PROTECTING the growing crops ... 100-103
PUBERTY ... 66
—, age at ... 46
PUBLIC property ... 162
PUEBLO or village, Bontoc ... 48, 49
PUNISHMENT after death, no ... 196

QUARANTINE by Igorot ... 71
QUIANGAN area, bolo scabbard of ... 130
— area, Sapao bolo used in ... 130
— area, stone table in ... 115
—, Igorot referred to ... 34
—, Igorot robberies by ... 138

RAIN, ceremonies for ... 214
— is river water gathered at night by clouds and dropped ... 216, 217
— protector, woman's, made in Ambawan and Barlig ... 122
RAINFALL in Igorot habitat ... 26, 27
"RAKE OFF," no, in Bontoc ... 166
RATS ... 100, 102
—, superstition regarding ... 79
— warn Igorot of pending evil ... 198
REAL PROPERTY of group ... 162
— of individual ... 160-162

	Page
RELIGION	196–215
—, basis of, belief in spirits	205
—, changing faith in	204, 205
RELIGIOUS ceremonials in Bontoc village	48
REMEDIES, absence of therapeutic	73
— for diseases	71–74
RENT, loan, and lease of property	163
RESIN used for glazing pottery	120
RHEUMATISM	72
RHYTHM of gong music	190, 191
— of dance	193
RICE bird, destroys rice crop	100
— granaries in Bontoc village	48
— harvest, ceremony for	212
— harvest, religious character of	103
— how eaten	139, 140
— industry gives name to seasons of year	219, 220
—, methods of threshing	139
—, preparation of, for cooking	139
—, protection of, ceremony for	212
— seed, planting of	97, 98
— sementeras, measure of	218
— sieve, made in Samoki	123
—, staple food	139
—, sweating of	72
— threshing ceremonial	181
—, unthreshed, medium of exchange	155
— used to manufacture a fermented beverage	144
RICHEST man in Bontoc village, wealth of	160, 161
RILEY, Mr., goes to settle disagreement between Igorot and insurrecto officials in Bontoc village, 1901	38
RIO GRANDE DE CAGAYAN	25–26
RIVERS followed by trade routes	156, 157
ROBBERIES by the Igorot of Quiangan area	138
— made in villages Bagabag and Ibung	138
ROCK fight, annual, between men of Bontoc and Samoki	212
— transformed spirit person	197
ROTH, H. LING, quotes Dalrymple on head-hunting in Borneo	173
—, quotes Sir Spencer St. John on head-hunting in Borneo	172
ROUTES, trade	156, 157
RULERS of the pueblo, men are	135
ST. JOHN, Sir SPENCER, quoted by Roth on head-hunting in Borneo	172
SABANGAN VILLAGE girls, short hair of, in Lumawig tradition	201
SADANGA VILLAGE once sought peace of Bontoc, now enemy	176
SAFFORD, WM. EDWARD, cited on Chamorro language of Guam	228, 231
SALCEDO, Governor-General, sent first Spanish expedition to northern Luzon in 1665	85
SALE	153, 154
SALE, development of	153, 154
— of property	162, 163
SALES, coins, not paper, used in	155
SALT	145–147
—, barter of	152
—, consumption of	139–141
—, manufacture of	145–147
—, Mayinit, composition of	147
—, Mayinit, evaporating	117
—, Mayinit, medium of exchange	155
—, Michigan, composition of	147
—, Onondaga, composition of	147
SALUTATIONS	195
SALWIN, bellows used in	Footnote 126
SAMA people, location of	Footnote 20
SAMAL MORO PEOPLE, location of	Footnote 20
—, movements of	19
SAMOKI VILLAGE, agricultural implement used by women of	116
— ancestors of	49
— and Bontoc, baskets made in	121, 122
—, ato of	52
—, breechcloth worn as an apron in	112
—, clay pits near	114
—, clay used in making pottery	117
—, geographic location of	48
— hats worn in	111
—, importance of barter to	152, 153
—, population of	49
—, possible reason for separating from Bontoc village	168
—, pottery of	117
— rice sieve	123
—, tradition of	49
—, winnowing tray made in	123
SAPAO VILLAGE, bolo of, used in Ambawan village	130
—, bolo of, used in Quiangan area	130
—, metal spear blades made at	125
— metal spear blades seen in Quiangan	128
—, steel weapons made in	128
SCABBARD, bolo, of the Quiangan area	130
—, wooden, of Lepanto and Benguet Provinces	130
SCHEERER, OTTO, cited on name of Lumawig in Benguet	201
—, manuscript on Benguet Igorot quoted for suffixes of pronouns	230–233
SEASON, Chakon, first season of year	219
—, Kasip, last season of year	219
SEASONS in year	219, 220
— not wet and dry, but named from rice industry	220
SEED planting	97, 98
SEMENTERA, amount of rice grown on	160
—, average value of	160
—, building the	89, 90
—, irrigated	89–93
—, irrigated, lease of	163
— irrigated, title to	162
—, mountain side	89
— or garden plat	80
—, stone dikes of	134
—, unirrigated	89, 95, 96
— unirrigated, rent of	163

	Page
SEMENTERA, unirrigated, title to	162
—, weeding stone dikes of	114
SHIELD, DESCRIPTION OF, Bagnen village	124
—, Banawi area	124
—, Bontoc area	124
—, Kalinga people	124
—, Lepanto Province	124
—, Tinglayan area	124
SHIELDS, bejuco lacing on	124
—, four patterns of wooden, in Bontoc Province	124
—, Igorot, use of, and how made	124
SHRIKES, snaring of	85
SIAM, bellows used in	Footnote 126
SICK people, ceremonies for	199, 200
SICKNESS	71–74
—, cause of	71
—, disease, and remedies	71–74
SIEVE, rice, made in Samoki village	123
SILIPAN, a dialect group of Igorot	28
SILVER earrings	185
SIPEN, a counterfeit copper coin	155
SIZE, age, and value of carabao, how shown	218
— of hog, how shown	218
SKIN diseases	72
— eruptions among Igorot	47
— tint, causes of	41
SKIRT, woman's woven bark fiber	113
— not worn during the transplanting of palay	113
SKULLS, Bontoc village, kept in	175
— buried by ato Sigichan of Bontoc village	181, 182
— now in ato Sigichan of Bontoc village	180
— of heads taken by head-hunters	172
SLAVE captors, Igorot of Asin district	138
— raid in Lepanto Province	138
SLEEP, hour of retiring for	149
SMALL fruit, scarcity of	81
SMALLPOX	72
SMITH, WM. F., American teacher in Bontoc village	38
—, obligation to	Footnote 92
—, referred to	13
SMITHIES in Baliwang village, description of	125
SMITHS, iron	127
SMOKING, and pipe production	130–133
— in Bontoc	132
SNAKE, friend of Igorot, folk tale	225
—, origin of, folk tale	225
—, transformed spirit person	197
—, superstition regarding	79
— warns Igorot of pending evil	198
SNARES, wild fowl	83, 84
SOCIAL life of married women in Bontoc village	58
SOIL, turning for agriculture	93–96
SOLOMON ISLANDS, ceremonial buildings in	Footnote 53
SOMATOLOGY	39–46
SOMERVILLE, MAXWELL, referred to on Malayan bellows	Footnote 126
SOUL, name and functions of person's	197
SPANISH government buildings in Bontoc village	48, 49
— influence on Bontoc Igorot	35, 37–39, 153, 154, 157
— trail near Bontoc village	48
— treatment of Bontoc Igorot	36
SPANIARDS, arrival of, in Bontoc	49
— driven from Bontoc by insurrectos	36, 37
—, institution of presidente created by	167
—, method of settling property claims of	159
SPEAR BLADE, æsthetic character of certain kind of	128
—, barbless	127
— made in Baliwang village, varieties of	127
—, metal, made in Baliwang	125
—, metal, made in Sapao	125
—, Sapao, seen in Quiangan	128
—, style of, used in warfare	127
SPEAR, Baliwang, steel of	128
— in Bontoc area	125
—, iron	125
— shaft, bejuco ferrule used on	128
— shaft, iron ferrule used on	128
— shaft, made in Mayinit	128
—, Sinalawitan variety, anito frightened at	198
— used to scare away anito	128
SPEECH, human's spirit	196
SPIKES, bamboo	125
SPINNING thread	75
SPIRIT, greatest	200
— of beheaded person, name of	196
— of dead deaf and dumb person, name of	196
— of insane dead person, name of	196
— person, death or transformation of	197
— world, source of belief in	197
SPIRITS, belief in	196–198
—, belief in, basis of Igorot religion	205
—, evil, Igorot's protection from	198
SPOON, wooden	116
—, eating	116
SOMKAD, a wealthy Igorot, death and burial of	74–79
SONGS	192, 193
— of ceremonies	192
—, four classes of	192
—, laborers'	192
—, serious, apparently	192
— sung in parts	192, 193
—, wordless	192
SOOT, used in tattooing	187
SPRINGS, hot, source of salt brine for salt manufacture	145
STAGES of commerce	158, 159
STANDARD of value	156
STARS are men	216
STICK, used by women, camote	116
"STONE AGE" of the Igorot	114
STONE anvils	115, 126

Page

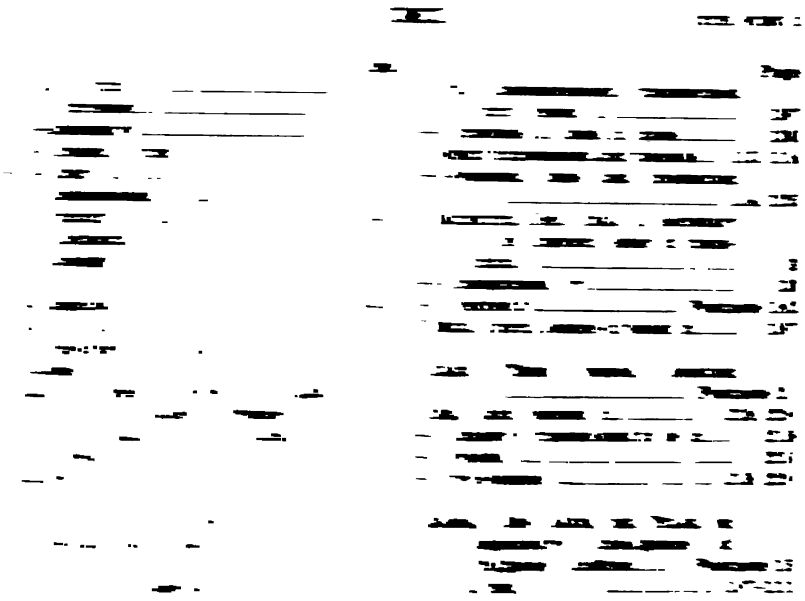
[illegible] 134
[illegible], weeding of.... 114
[illegible] 115, 126, 127
[illegible] area..... 115
[illegible] Igorot of pend- [illegible] 198
[illegible] crops..... 105–107
[illegible] of.... 19, footnote 20
[illegible], how made.... 217
[illegible] 147, 148
[illegible] 147, 148
[illegible] 126
[illegible] 147, 148
[illegible] manufacture a bev- [illegible] 144
[illegible] 74
[illegible] 130
[illegible] of, to Malay, [illegible] Igorot.... 231–233
[illegible] Footnote 20
[illegible] 232, 233
[illegible] Footnote 126
[illegible] 216
[illegible] 221, 222
[illegible] Bontoc man, folk [illegible] 225, 226
[illegible] in religion in [illegible] Bontoc..... 204
[illegible] 204
[illegible] 71
[illegible] of eating.... 148, 149
[illegible] Province, [illegible] 138
[illegible] CLIFFORD Malay [illegible] 232, 233
[illegible] permanent decora- [illegible] 187
[illegible] 73
[illegible] the Tinguian people.. 134

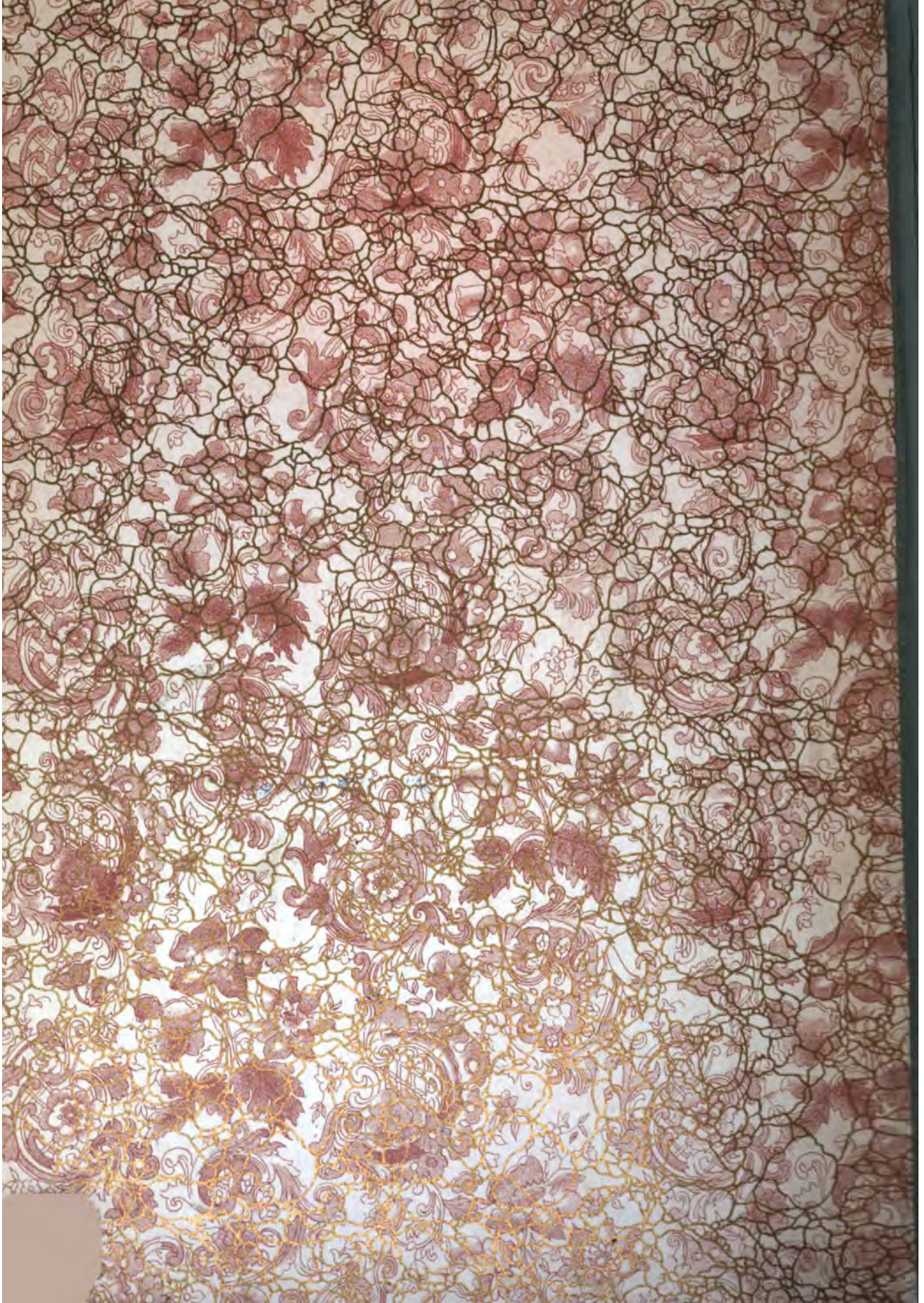
[illegible] function of..... Footnote 20
[illegible] function of..... 18
[illegible] regarding origin..... 18
[illegible] function of.... Footnote 19
[illegible] function of.... Footnote 20
[illegible] 73
[illegible] beverage, pre- [illegible] consumed..... 144, 145
[illegible] 135
[illegible] Lumawig's garden [illegible] 202
[illegible] 187–189
[illegible] 188
[illegible] 187
[illegible] 188
[illegible] decoration of [illegible] 187–189
[illegible] 172, 188, 189
[illegible] importance and [illegible] influence of..... 188
[illegible] meaning of..... 189
[illegible] 188
[illegible] for making 188
[illegible] 189
[illegible] 188, 189
[illegible] arms and on man's [illegible] 188, 189

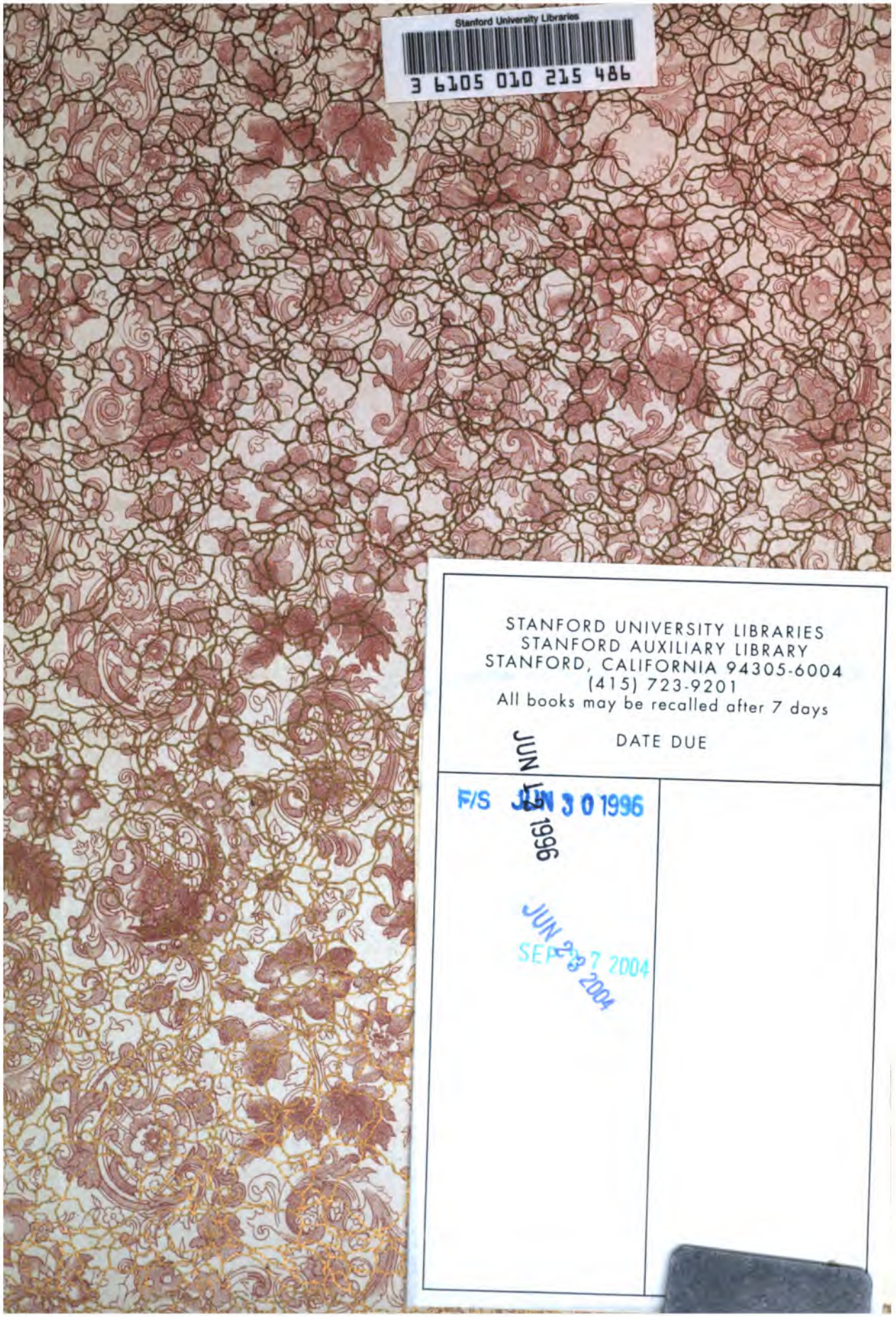
Page

TATTOO, three varieties of..... 188, 189
—, usual age of person when tattooed 188
—, usual first mark of 188
—, when person may receive..... 181, 187
—, woman's 188, 189
TATTOOER, professional 187
TATTOOING done by men..... 134
TATTOOS in Banawi villages..... 189
— in Benguet Province 189
TAVERA, Dr. PARDO DE, quoted on meaning of word "Igorot"..... 27
TAX, a developing..... 165, 166
TEMPERATURE of Igorot habitat..... 26–27
TEMPERING iron..... 127
TERRACE walls of stone..... 90
TERRACES in China 88
—, mountain, probable origin of..... 88–89
THAMISH, F. A., Government analyst, quoted 121
THEFT 137, 138
—, a crime 168
—, practice and repression of..... 137, 138
THREAD, spinning bark fiber..... 137
THRESHING rice, methods of..... 139
THUNDER, the cry of a wild boar..... 216
TIME, no definite record of, longer than year 218, 219
TIN or brass used to decorate ax handle 130
— brought to Manila by early Chinese 190
TINGLAYAN shield, description of..... 124
TINGUIAN, a dialect group of Igorot.... 28
— man said to be responsible for supalado religion 204
— people of Abra employ the bow.... 123
— people, referred to..... 33, 34
TIRURAY people, location of..... Footnote 20
TITIPAN and Antedao villages, ax and bolo of 130
—, flayed tree-bark breechcloth made in 112
TITLE to property, length of time recognized..... 161, 162
TOBACCO, barter of 152
TOIL, method of working off superfluous energy..... 194
TOOLS, sticks as agricultural..... 90
TOOTHACHE, cause of 73
TRADE languages and traders 157, 158
— routes 156, 157
TRAIL, measure of..... 218
—, right to 195
TRANSFORMATION or death of spirit people 197
TRANSPLANTING 98, 99
— palay, skirts not worn during..... 113
TRANSPORTATION 149–151
— basket, bamboo 121
— in Benguet, on backs 149
— by man on shoulder 149–151
—, man's strength in 149
—, methods of 149–151
—, no animal but human used in..... 149
— by woman on head..... 149–151
—, woman's strength in 150

	Page
TRAYS, eating	123
—, winnowing	123
TREE culture, beginning to be conscious	88
TREES, implement used for felling	116
—, sacred, groves of	203
TRIAL marriage	69
TRIBUTE, no, in Bontoc	165
—, tax, and "rake off"	165, 166
TUKUKAN VILLAGE, metal pipes made in	132
—, expert wild-fowl catchers in	83
TULUBIN VILLAGE, basket made in	122
—, flayed tree-bark breechcloth made in	112
— girls affected with goiter, in Lumawig tradition	201
—, implement trade with people near	116
—, trade in woman's clothing between Barlig and	114
TURNING the soil	93-97
TWINS, disposition of	60
—, infanticide connected with	60
TYPHOID fever	71
ULCERS and sores	74
UTENSIL and implement production	114-123
UTENSILS and implements, wooden, manufacture and uses of	115-116
— Bontoc pueblo, making of	51
VALUE, measure of exchange	155, 156
—, size and age of carabao, how shown	218
—, standard of	156
VARICOSE veins	73
VEGETABLES, basket for conveying	122, 123
VEGETAL life, vocabulary of	244, 245
— production	87, 88
VERBAL suffixes, illustrated	230, 231
VERBS	231
—, vocabulary of	246
VILLAGE, Bontoc, government mainly aboriginal	167
—, each, an enemy	176
—, evacuation of, before war attack	178
VILLAGES seeking peace of Bontoc	176
VISAYAN people, location of	Footnote 19
VOCABULARY, adjectives	246
—, adverbs	246
—, animals	242-244
—, Benguet Igorot	232, 233
—, cardinal numerals	247
—, condition of human body	237, 238
—, consanguineal and social relationships	238
—, cosmology	234, 235
—, distributive numerals	248
—, foods and beverages	240
—, home and field	242
—, human body	235-237
—, Malay	232, 233
—, ordinal numerals	247, 248
—, Sulu	232, 233
—, vegetable life	244, 245
VOCABULARY, verbs	246
—, weapons, utensils, etc	240, 241
VOCABULARIES, comparative, of English, Bontoc and Benguet Igorot, Malay, and Sulu	231-233
VOCAL music	192, 193
VOWELS, sound of, inconsistency of	229
WAGER, Dr. E. A., succeeds Hunt as lieutenant-governor	38
WAGES and exchange of labor	136, 137
— of labor	137
— of woman	136
— of wood gatherer	137
WAKU, one class of priests	205
WAR and head-hunting	172-183
— "bluffs"	179
— challenges	176, 177
—, characteristics of	179, 180
— dance, man's	194
— declared	177
—, definition of	170
—, manners of	177-181
—, method of working off superfluous energy	194
— taught by Lumawig	202
—, unexpected attack of	177
WARFARE, style of spear blade used in	127
WARRIOR, how armed	178, 179
—, most favored in death	74
—, the Igorot	123
WATER, drank	143, 144
—, transportation of	150, 151
WAY, right of	195
WEALTH, natural distribution of	137
— of group	160-162
— of individual	159-161
WEAPONS, Igorot	123
—, iron used in the manufacture of	126
—, metal, production and uses of	125-130
—, production and uses of	123-130
—, steel, made in Sapao village	128
—, utensils, etc., vocabulary of	240, 241
—, wooden, uses and production of	124, 125
WERDING stone dikes of sementeras	114
WEEDS, absence of, in rice beds	99
WELDING iron in Baliwang village	127
WHETSTONES of Besao near Sagada village	129
WIDOWED, the	70
—, reasons for remarrying	70
WINNOWING tray made in Samoki and Kanyu villages	123
WIRE, brass, used for making pipes	131
WISDOM, practical, Igorot has	216
WITTI, F., quoted by Roth on head-hunting in Borneo	173, 174
WOMAN	43-45
—, a brachycephal-mesaticephali	43
— decidedly not dolichocephalic	43
—, clothing of, production and use of	113, 114
—, diadem hair dress of	186
— field laborer	59







Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 010 215 486

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-9201
All books may be recalled after 7 days

DATE DUE

F/S JUN 30 1996

JUN 15 1996

JUN 23 7 2004
SEP 2004